

THE LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF
NORTH CAROLINA
AT CHAPEL HILL



THE COLLECTION OF
NORTH CAROLINIANA

ENDOWED BY

JOHN SPRUNT HILL

CLASS OF 1889


C971.79

J86r

v.13-15

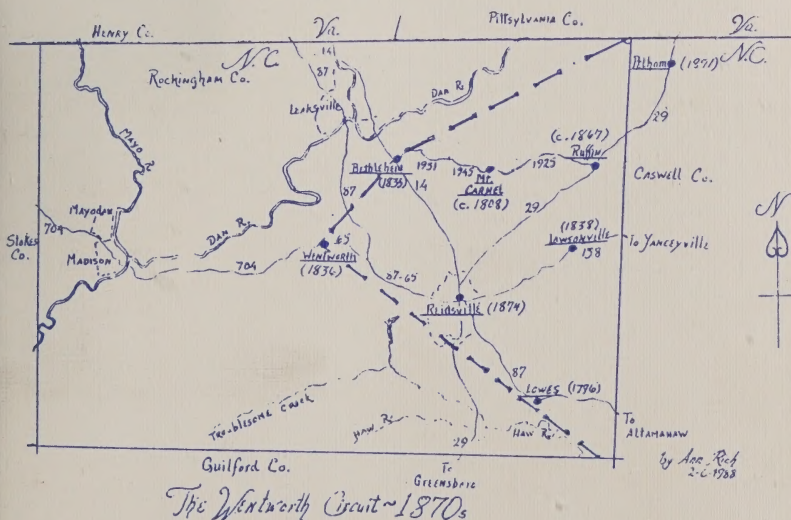
1988-90

FOR USE ONLY IN
THE NORTH CAROLINA COLLECTION



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2023 with funding from
North Carolina Digital Heritage Center

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy



The Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

VOLUME XIII

NUMBER 1

JUNE, 1988

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy

The journal is published semiannually in June and December by the Rockingham County Historical Society, Box 84, Wentworth, N.C. 27375. Members of the society, for which the annual dues are \$8.00 for an individual and \$12.00 for a family membership, receive the journal. Single issues may be purchased for \$3.50 per number plus 50 cents mailing charge.

Editorial Policy

The publication committee is interested in receiving articles on the history and genealogical source materials of Rockingham County and the adjacent area. The historical articles must be well written and thoroughly documented. Genealogical articles should consist of previously unpublished primary source materials pertaining to Rockingham County, such as abstract of local records and edited diaries, letters, or church records. Papers on family history should not be submitted. All copy, including footnotes, should be typed double-space. Articles and correspondence should be sent to the editor: Robert W. Carter, Jr., Route 2, Box 762, Reidsville, N.C. 27320.

Cover Illustration

Map of Rockingham County showing the churches and boundaries of the Wentworth Circuit of the North Carolina Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South as it existed from the 1850s until 1881. Rev. Robah F. Bumpas pastored this circuit in 1876. Map drawn by Ann O. Rich.

**The Journal of
Rockingham County
History and Genealogy**

Spring 1988

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy

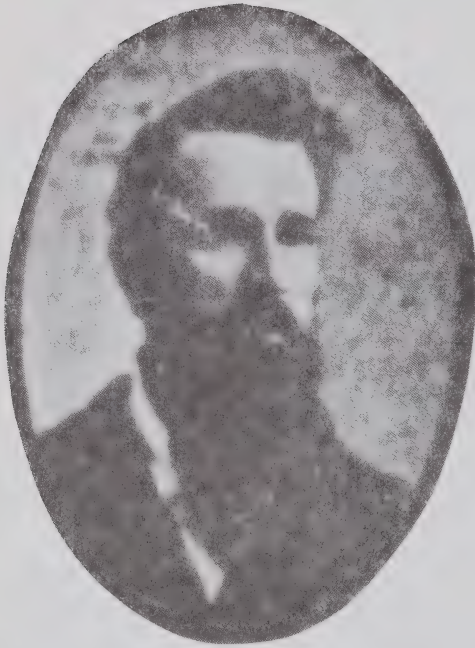
VOLUME XIII

JUNE, 1988

NUMBER 1

CONTENTS

The Diary of Rev. Robah Fidus Bumpas edited by Michael Perdue	1
372 Missing Rockingham County Marriage Bonds compiled by Don Hoover	22
Dr. Joseph H. Simpson's Birth Books transcribed by Robert E. Greene	34



*Rev. Robah Fidus
Bumpas, Pastor of the
Wentworth Circuit in
1876. Photograph
dated 1887. Courtesy
of Michael Perdue*



*The 1859 Wentworth Church sanctuary and educational wing. The
restored building is the last standing church in which Rev. Bumpas preached
on the Wentworth Circuit. Courtesy of Michael Perdue*

C-111A
J 868
V. 13-15
1982-96

THE DIARY OF REV. ROBAH FIDUS BUMPAS

Preface and Notes
by
Michael Perdue

PREFACE

In the late 1800's and during the first decades of the present century one of the most noted Methodist ministers in North Carolina was Rev. Robah Fidus Bumpas (1850-1933) who served in the active ministry of the North Carolina Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South for fifty-three years. (1871-1924).

The son of a Methodist minister, the Rev. Sidney D. Bumpas (died 1851) and his wife, the former Frances Webb, Robah Bumpas was the youngest of four children. He was born April 17, 1850 in Greensboro, North Carolina and spent his childhood and early adulthood there, where his mother published a weekly religious paper and taught school. Young Bumpas was preparing to enter college when he was felled by a crippling malady that made him an invalid. He later wrote, " 'Four years I walked on crutches when I walked at all, for at times I could not turn in bed and was fed with a spoon.' " Consequently, Bumpas was denied a college education, but by being a voracious and absorbing reader he acquired the reputation as being one of the "most truly educated men" in the Methodist ministry.

It was at a prayer meeting at Greensboro's West Market Street Church about 1870 that Bumpas was miraculously healed of his affliction and felt the need to preach the gospel. Following in his father's footsteps, Rev. Robah F. Bumpas was admitted to the N.C. Conference of the M.E. Church, South in 1871. During his fifty-three years in the active ministry Bumpas pastored charges in Davidson and Cumberland counties, Raleigh, Durham, Oxford, New Bern, Laurinburg, Beaufort, and others. Perhaps Rev. Bumpas' crowning achievement was his persuasion upon Durham tobacco tycoon Washington Duke to initiate the movement that resulted in the moving of Trinity College to Durham, which led to the creation of Duke University. Bumpas served in countless positions on various levels within the conference and he traveled extensively, even into the Holy Land.

In December 1874, Rev. Bumpas married a distant cousin, Miss

Selina ("Lina") Baynes, whom he would survive a number of years. Six children were born to this union (four died in infancy, the other two both died at age twenty-one). After his retirement in 1924 he returned to Greensboro where he made his home with his niece Miss Allah Troy, the daughter of his sister Ella and her husband, the Rev. R.P. Troy, who served pastorates in Rockingham County in the 1880s. Rev. Bumpas later moved to Los Angeles, California where he died on August 27, 1933. He was buried in Los Angeles, as he had requested, in the land of his adoption.

In late 1875 Bumpas was assigned to the Wentworth Circuit (which was in the N.C. Conference). The Wentworth Circuit at that time encompassed all M.E. South churches in a triangle extending from Wentworth to the northeastern and southeastern corners of Rockingham County. These churches included: Wentworth (est. 1836), Lowes (est. 1796), Mount Carmel (est. 1808), Bethlehem (est. 1835), Ruffin (est. 1867), Reidsville (later Main Street Church, est. 1874), Pelham (est. 1871 just over the Caswell County line), and Lawsonville (also known as Penile Church, est. 1838). All these churches, except for Lawsonville, remain active today.

A diary of Rev. Bumpas', covering the first six months of his one year pastorate on the Wentworth Circuit, is preserved in the Southern Historical Collection of the University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill. The editor believes this diary to be a significant record of Methodist activities in the eastern half of Rockingham County in the post-war years. People and places in Rockingham County have been identified wherever possible. The diary entries have been edited only slightly, when deemed necessary. Since the edited version of the diary was made from the transcribed copy of the original it is assumed that there were some mistakes made when the transcribing was done due to the inability to read the handwriting. The editor has taken notice of this fact and has tried to correct errors, especially in initials of people. Where doubt existed it is noted accordingly in the notes.

The Southern Historical Collection, University of North Carolina Library, Chapel Hill, North Carolina has granted the Rockingham County Historical Society permission to print the Rockingham County portion of the Bumpas Journal (call number 1031) which appears in Vol. 5. Any person wishing to reprint or use the Bumpas Journal material should secure permission from the Southern Historical Collection as most manuscripts are protected by copyright.

The editor would like to express his thanks to those who provided



The Lowe's Church congregation southeast of Reidsville dates back to 1796. This building was dedicated in 1883 and was used until the early 1950s when the present brick sanctuary was constructed.

Courtesy of Rockingham County Historical Society.

information to supplement and document Rev. Bumpas' diary: Robert W. Carter, Jr., Miss Nancy Withers, Mrs. Maggie Ellington, Mrs. Nancy Spaine, and Dr. J. Elwood Carroll.

The diary begins as Rev. and Mrs. Bumpas travel to Rockingham County, where he assumes charge of the Wentworth Circuit.

The Diary

Saturday, January 1, 1876.

Lina and I left Greensboro Yesterday enroute for Wentworth Circuit, in my buggy driving my iron gray "Charley". Arrived at Reidsville 25 miles in the evening - and stopped at Bro. Q. Allen's.

This morning drove out to Bro. Zachariah Barber's five miles in the neighborhood of Mt. Carmel. Spent the afternoon in the fields

preparing to preach tomorrow.¹ This is the old Edwards homestead, spoken of in Dr. Reid's Life.² Mrs. Barber is Dr. R's own cousin.

Sunday 2

Preached with fine success to a large congregation at 11 at Mt. Carmel. Drove on to Bethlehem. Congregation not as large. Listened very well.

Monday, January 3, 1876

Left Mr. Jas. Moore's this morning. Went over and spent the day with his son Bro. John Moore.³ We had a delightful dinner, a very pleasant day. We found we were among Bro. Norman's (W. C. my predecessor) warmest friends. But they treated us very kindly. Thin we left the odor of a sweet invluence behind.⁴

Tuesday 4

Last night at Bro. Foster's.⁵ This morning we came over to Ruffin to Bro. J. L. Rawley's.⁶ He has four children - several boarders.

Thursday 6

Engaged Board at Bro. Rawley's at \$10.00 a month, for self, wife & horse, each.

Friday, January 7, 1876

L and I left Ruffin, drove Charley to Reidsville, stopped to have box in wheel wedged. Dined at Mrs. Sam Allen's.⁷ Spent the night Bro. Martin Clemens, whom I shall catalogue a chronic grumbler.⁸

Saturday 8

Spent the day at Dr. Winchester's,⁹ thence to Geo. Garrett's.¹⁰ There I was met by Miss Roxie Foster, an old acquaintance.¹¹ Some Richmond drummers came in late and spent the night.

Sunday, January 9, 1876.

This morning at eleven I preached at Lowe's Church to a full house. Had great liberty and the word seemed to fall as good seed in good ground. Dined at Martin Clemens - Onto Reidsville where at 3 P.M. it seemed to me I disgraced myself. We preached in the Baptist Church. I used the Meth. Hymn Book, had to raise the tune. I tried to line it out. Some one to sing on. I stopped. Called the congregation to rise, & I would interline. Became embarrassed. Couldn't preach with power.

Monday 10

Came over to Ruffin this morning. I have been feeling exceedingly badly all day. I never was so mortified over anything, as over yesterday's affair.

Tuesday, January 11, 1876.

Spent day at home today. Wrote to Fulton St. Pr. meeting & to

Moody & Sankey to pray for my success on the Wentworth Ct., and especially at Reidsville.

Wednesday 12

I hope I need not to write "Perdidi Diem." I intended to make visits for several days in Lowe's neighborhood. Drove to Lawsonville, spent the day very pleasantly with Mrs. Sam. Walker. Charlie very lame in left hind foot, so I returned. But can't see anything wrong.

Thursday, January 13, 1876

Spent the day mostly in room. Commenced writing a sermon on "Ye are the salt of the earth, &c." Received and unpacked my books today. Bro. J. L. Rawley made me a book-case.

Friday 14

Wrote four letters this morning and three Postal cards to Ma, H. N. Brownell, the others on business. Walked out to Dr. Courts calling this evening.¹² Saw two Misses Courts and a Miss Lindsey from Reidsville.¹³

Saturday, January 15, 1876

Started this morning to Wentworth. Stopped at Oregon Hill and dined with Bro. Foster. Then drove on to Wentworth. Charlie still lame, drove Bro. Rawleys "Pin-back." Left Lina at Ruffin. Stopped at James Reid's.¹⁴ I have been exceedingly blue all the week. Have had a dark temptations and been sorely tried.

Sunday 16

Clouds frowning. Haven't yet got over my last Sunday's fright. So afraid of failure that I did not attempt anything, preached a plain practical sermon. Congregation not large. A weeping evening, but not heavy rain. No service at night.

Monday, January 17, 1876

Started for Ruffin. Missed the road. Went by Bro. Wash. Mobley's. Wife sick with consumption. Dined here. Think it providential I missed the road. She cheered up by my visit, and I too benefitted.¹⁵ Started home again. Met Bro. Dan Guerrant, stopped, stayed all night with him.¹⁶ I think this all providential. Man proposes, God disposes.

Tuesday 18

Called on Sister John Wyatt Guerrant.¹⁷ Dined with Bro. Sparks.¹⁸ Talked about family prayer. Bro. D. Guerrant promised to have family prayer. Urge it on Bro. Sparks. I then came home. Lina did not look for me till now. My blues are all gone. I know I can preach & am determined to do my duty.

Wednesday, January 19, 1876.

Spent this morning writing for the "Advocate," an incident of early

Methodism - of Phillip Gatch & Thos. Sparks, which I received yesterday from Uncle Dan Guerrant at the house of Bro. Sparks, a grandson of Thos. Sparks. The incident ought to be preserved in history. Sent it off in the mail. This evening continued to write on Sermon, "Ye are the salt &c."

Thursday 20

Today I have written several pages of my sermon on Matt. V. 13. This evening I did not feel like writing. Read Naplay's Ph. Life. Tonight read the "Christian at work."

Saturday, January 22, 1876.

Another week is gone, pleasantly and I hope profitably. I feel in better health, and in better spirits than I did last week. God has been with me, and prospered the work of my hands. Praise to his name for it. I have read an article in *Southern Review* "Moody & Sankey."

Saturday 22

Nearly finished sermon on Matt. V. 13. Rainy evening. Expected to go to Pelham this evening but raining so I put it off. Charley still lame. Borrowed a horse from Bro. Ruffus Raleigh.¹⁹

Sunday, January 23, 1876.

Bright sunshiny day. Drove to Pelham, arrived at 11 A. M. a perfect stranger. Preached with good liberty. Saw many tears shed. The Lord was with me. Stop for dinner at Bro. Bannister Fitzgerald.²⁰ Came on to Ruffin, preached at three. Very tired. Didn't feel like it. Took a nap. Went out at night, held prayermeeting. Gave them my 11 o'ck. sermon.

Monday 24

Rev. P. H. Dalton of the Presbyterian Church preached at Mt. Carmel yesterday.²¹ Called this morning to see me, and dined here.

Tuesday, January 25, 1876.

Lina and I came down on the evening train to Pelham. stopped Bro. J. A. Pierce.

Wednesday 26

Got Bro. P. horse and buggy. Drove to Bro. Swann's and spent the day. Then to Mr. Kesee's to spend the night.²² Quite a pleasant family. The most singular weather I ever knew. Real spring weather, flower blooming. I saw a strawberry blossom the 15th. of this month.

Thursday, January 27, 1876

Spent today with Bro. Bannister Fitzgerald, an uncle of Rev. O. P. Fitzgerald, D. D. of Cal.²³ whose father lives in Ruffin, ... A brother of Rev. O. P. a ... horsetrader ... and another brother, a Bar keeper.

Saturday, January 29, 1876.

It has been warm the most of this month. More like summer or spring than Midwinter. We had weather the middle of last August colder than yesterday. Colder today, and raining. L. & I did not go to Lawsonville as we expected. Charlie lame.

Sunday 30

A clear cold morning. Charlie still quite lame. Mr. Lawson Withers²⁴ carried me to Lawsonville. Preached in the schoolhouse, where we had a fire. Dined at Mr. Watt's.²⁵ Came back late in the afternoon. We had the schoolhouse full of people. Mrs. W. sent L. a large boquit, hyacinths, crocuses, Japancrab, lillies, geranium, &c.

Monday, January 31, 1876.

This morning read Hikok's Moral Science & commenced Mosheim's Church History. Spent this evening recreating.

Tuesday, February 1.

Today I have nearly finished the 1st. Century of Mosheim's Ch. History. It has commenced raining this evening. A cold rain. Spent the day indoors.

Wednesday, February 2, 1876

This morning I spent in reading Moral Science. Received the Advocate & Letter from home. This evening Read Mosheim.

Thursday 3

O Lord open up my way before me, make thy path straight before my face. "Charlie" has been lame nearly ever since I have been here, consequently I have not been able to mingle, as I should have done, with the people, and am dependent on others to get to appointments. But I have had a good time for study & I have improved it.

Friday, February 4, 1876

Read 40 pages in Hikok's Moral Sc. Wrote to Norman, and read 35 pages in Southern Review. Snowed this morning. Sleeted last night. Snow lays from 3 to 4 inches deep.

Saturday 5

Another six days work is done. Did not go to Mt. Carmel today, failed to get horse. Go in morning. I'm afraid I shall loose "Charlie". He's badly sweneyed. I may be able to sell him. Several droves here today, with Kentucky stock.

Sunday, February 6, 1876

Cold, cloudy, mist, rain & sleet. Got a horse from Capt. Miller. Started for Mt. Carmel, Road covered with ice. Could not drive out of a walk. Horse finds it difficult to keep his footing. Turn and come back, and spent the day at home.

Tuesday, February 8, 1876.

This morning I read 17 pages in Watson's Theological Institutes. Wrote to Ma. It has turned warm again. Snow all gone.

Wednesday 9

And when the day of life shall draw to its close, if because of our errors and infirmities, our mistakes and shortcomings, clouds shall gather around our setting sun, may they not be clouds of darkness,

Friday 11

Went up to Reidsville on the cars & spent the night at Mr. Lindsey's.²⁶

Saturday, February 12, 1876

Capt. Paschal kindly sent me to Wentworth in his buggy.²⁷ Stopped with Mr. Wm. Ellington, whose third wife is Martha Thomas, formerly of Greensboro.²⁸

Sunday 13

Morning clouds and threatening. Preached at eleven. Rain all the afternoon.

Monday, February 14, 1876

Strange to say we had thunder & Lightening all night last night. I dined at Bro. Richard Ellington's today.²⁹ Visited merchants at their stores today. Attended the meeting of the I. O. G. Templars tonight.³⁰ Small attendance.

Tuesday 15

This morning I called on Mrs. Albert Ellington³¹ and Mrs. (Ex. Gov.) Reid.³² And Mrs. Mitchell (wife of a Bar keeper) who is a member of our Ch.³³ Afternoon Mrs. M. El. went out with me.³⁴ We called on Mrs. Hall,³⁵ Mrs. Jones³⁶ and Mrs. Sams.

Wednesday, February 16, 1876

Bro. Jas. Reid introduced me to his brother Lamery, Ex. Gov. Reid, W. N. Mebane, & the register Mr. Lewellin.³⁷ Spent some time with each. Dined with Bro. Reid. He loaned me a horse. Drove out to Col. Boyd's 7 miles. An old member of our Ch.³⁸ Spent the night.

Thursday 17

Off to Reidsville this morning. There Jas. Reid met me & took his horse. Took the cars for Ruffin. Lina delighted. Seems very sad and lonely.

Friday, February 18, 1876

This evening I go back to Reidsville. Dr. N.H.D. Wilson there. Bro. Groome has send a buggy for me. Dr. Wilson will remain here tonight with Bro. Jno. Willie Smith. I go out. Reach Bro. G. just before dark, large family of children.³⁹

Saturday 19

Off to James' to the Quarterly Meeting.

Friday 25

Went from Ruffin to Pelham on the cars this afternoon. Stopped with Bro. J.A. Pierce. Went out to the meeting of the I.O.G. Templars. They have a fine Lodge. Called on me for a speech. I read them Talmadge's "Crusade of Demons."

Saturday, February 26, 1876

Spent most of the day preparing a sermon for tomorrow morning. Part of the time with young men at the depot. Called to see Rev. Mr. Walker, Baptist preacher, who is sick.

Sunday 27

Attended Sabbath School. At eleven preached. Very large congregation.

Monday, February 28, 1876

Spent this forenoon in systematising a sketch on Acts XXXV. 25, made Sabbath evening in Wentworth with pencil.

This evening recreating. Took a long walk.

Tuesday 29

I was forcibly impressed yesterday in my morning reading with 1 Sam. VIII, 7, Israel rejecting Jehovah as their King, and today commenced writing a sermon on it. Wrote out a sketch of the whole plan. Then commenced elaborating from the first. In afternoon read 12 p. Mosheim's. Took a long walk morn & eve. Bro. Raleigh sat with me after tea.

Wednesday, March 1, 1876

Continued to write on 1 Sam. VIII, 7, morning and afternoon. Read the "Advocate." Late, called and spent an hour with Bro. Mobley & family, shoemaker.⁴⁰ Retired early.

Thursday 2

Wrote some Queries for the children's Department of the Raleigh Christian Advocate.⁴¹ Spent most of the morning in back room of Dr. Courts store. Wrote more on sermon in evening.

Friday, March 3, 1876

Finished the argument on Free Moral Agency, the 1st. part of my sermon today. I had sketched the last part before. It is now ready for use.

Saturday 4

Went down and doctored Charlie this morning. Mr. Willie Spalding sent me word he would let me have a horse.⁴² Went out there & dined. Rode out horseback to Oregon Hill. Spent the night with Bro.

Wall⁴³

Sunday, March 5, 1876

Large congregation at Carmel. Preached. Rode on horseback to Bethlehem. Preached there at 3½ P.M. Spent the night with Bro. Moore.

Was very sore last night and this morning from horseback riding (being unused to it) but feel it very little today.

Wednesday 8

Left Ruffin on the Express for Reidsville. Spent the night with Bro. John Willie Smith.

Thursday, March 9, 1876

Dined today with Mr. M.J. Allen.⁴⁴ Stewards met this P.M. Allowed \$800.00 for Presiding Elder's & Pastor's salary. Spent the night with Mr. Rainey.

Friday 10

This morning called on Mrs. Oaks, wife of the Major, & Dr. & Mrs. Staples.⁴⁵ Dined at Mrs. Smith's boarding house with D.A. Rawley.⁴⁶ John Willie Smith took me to Capt Paschal. We traded horses on the way. He lets me have his horse at cost \$142.50. Is to take Charlie at what he can get for him, nominally \$100.00, i.e. what I gave for him.

Saturday, March 11, 1876

Go to Camp Springs Caswell, (Yanceyville Ct.) Quarterly meeting. Bro. L. L. Hendren, P. E. give a good sermon. He, Bro. Jenkins P. E. Spend evening at Capt. Paschal. Delightful time. Bro. H. very entertaining. Tells anecdotes on Bishop Early, and gives me several amusing ones on my Uncle Sam. Bumpass House full of company.

Sunday 12

We separate this morning. They to Camp J. I to Lowe's. This morning I changed my text in pulpit. I preached with much greater power & effect than usual. Went on to Reidsville, preached at 3½. Notwithstanding weather the congregation were good. Large at the last place.

Monday, March 13, 1876

Completed my trade today. Mr. D.L. Withers rode my horse home. I came on cars. He is a light bay, 6 years old. Very large neck.

Tuesday 14

Rode "Charlie" to Reidsville. Left him with Capt. L.W. Smith.⁴⁷ "Charlie" has been with Mr. Tom Johnson just 5 weeks. His board will come as barterage. T. Takes Charlie at \$100.00. He is to trade him.

some. Wrote several letters.

Thursday 16

Wrote several Letters & read some.

This afternoon hitched up Romeo, my new horse, and drove Lina out. He is a splendid buggy horse. We went to Bro. Rufus Rawley's and spent the night. Had a very pleasant time. Bro. R. thinks my horse is all right.

Friday, March 17, 1876.

Came home this morning. The drive in wind gave Lina a terrible headache. Suffered all night. I read 54 pages in Moral Science. To-night read Talmadge's paper.

Saturday 18

A very, very cold and windy day.

After dinner drove Romeo to Wentworth, 18 miles in less than three hours. I had a hot brick to my feet & it was hot when I got there. Stopped at Bro. Richard Ellington's.

Sunday, March 19, 1876

A very cold day, sharp, still. Preached at eleven, small attendance. After dinner drove out to Shady Grove, and preached at three.⁴⁸ Good attendance there. Spent the night with Bro. Williams, warden at the County poor house.⁴⁹

Monday 20

Snowing briskly all the morning. Raining and sleeting about noon. Freezing. After it stopped, I drove three miles and spent the night with Mr. Mobley.

Tuesday, March 21, 1876

Came home 12 miles this morning. Thinking it would not be any better soon.

Wednesday 22

Spent most of today in reading Pa's old manuscripts, journal and sermons.

Thursday, March 23, 1876

Took Lina out to Mr. Willie Spaulding's and spent the night. We had quite a pleasant time.

Friday 24

Came on to Bro. Thomas Fitzgerald's this morning and spent the day. Came home in the evening.⁵⁰

Saturday, March 25, 1876

This afternoon drove to Bro. J.F. Jones' and spent the night. Mr. Henry Fitzgerald went with me.⁵¹ There is a *Falls* on this place that is perfectly beautiful. A stream of water rushes over a large rock at an

Wednesday, March 15, 1876

Stayed in my room most of the day. Read Mosbeim and Hickok obtuse angle, twenty feet or more. It is one of the prettiest I ever saw.

Sunday 26

Preached at Pelham & Ruffin. After preaching at the latter place I married my first couple, William L. Wright, a bachelor aged 52, and Miss Martha J. Pruett, aged 29.

(Newspaper clipping pasted in diary)

Married by the Rev. R. F. Bumpass, in the M.E. Church South, at Ruffin, Mr. William L. Wright to Miss Martha J. Pruett, all of Rockingham county, N.C.

Monday, March 27, 1876

Wrote four Postals on business and a letter to Mama. After dinner I took a nap and a horseback ride.

Tuesday 28

Studied and wrote today on a sermon on "The Demonic Healed" Luke, 8, 26-40. The idea of which I took from a page of a Bagster Bible in "Ch. at Work."

Wednesday, March 29, 1876

Wrote this morning on sermon, commenced yesterday. Received a call from Mr. J. R. Webster,⁵² of Reidsville. This afternoon called on Mr. Richard Holderby,⁵³ Mrs. Warriner,⁵⁴ Dr. Courts family & Miss Ada Lane.⁵⁵ Tonight held prayer meeting. The 1st of a series I expect to hold here on Wednesday nights.

Thursday 30

Lina and I left home this morning. Drove out to John Wyatt Guerant's where we spent the day. Leaving here here I went on to Bro. Coble's, where I spent the night.

Friday, March 31, 1876.

Went to old Sister Humphrey's. Spent the day. She has a daughter who is much afflicted, and has been for years. She was troubled about baptism. Gave her Summar's on B. to read. Spent night with Bro. Anderson.⁵⁶ Here I found Miss Pattie Lewis teaching.⁵⁷

Saturday, April 1

Bro. Anderson kept me up until midnight last night talking. Left this morning. Spent the day at Capt. Foster's. His sick boy improving. Slipt (?) Came to Bro. Guerrants, found L. seemingly as well or better than usual.

Sunday, April 2, 1876

Day cold and threatening, nevertheless we go out to Church.

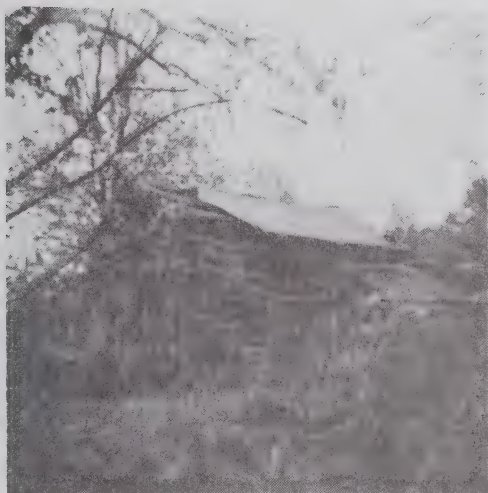


Photo made in the 1970's of the old Calvin Washington Mobley home place. Mobley (1838-1918) was a prominent farmer and merchant of the Berry Community, which is located northeast of Wentworth. Rev. Bumpas visited Mobley several times in 1876. Photograph courtesy Robert W. Carter, Jr.

Thursday, April 6, 1876

Wrote on sermon, Demoniacs healed.

Friday 7

Finished above serson for pulpit. Lina has been complaining all the week. I have been somewhat troubled with rheumatism. So I have remained at home longer than I intended.

Saturday, April 8, 1876.

Rode horseback to Reidsville this morning. Dined with Bro. J. Willie Smith. We confirmed the horse trade. I am to pay him \$10.00 additional for the risk he runs in taking my horse. Gave note for \$52.50. The 1st note I ever made. Visited Dr. Winchester, quite sick, typhoid-pneumonia.

Sunday 9

I spent the night with Bro. Alfred Walker.⁵⁸ This morning

preached at Lowe's. In the afternoon at Reidsville. Gave them at R-my new sermon, the Demoniacs Healed. Had a fine effect apparently. Went out to Sister Meador's and spent the night.⁵⁹

Monday, April 10, 1876.

Called on young Bro. Meador's. Dined at old Sister M's. Spent the night with old Bro. Burton.

Tuesday 11

Came home this morning. Found Lina still unwell.

Sunday 23

Drove to Pelham this morning. Bro. J. S. Rawley accompanied me. Preached with liberty. Dined with Bro. Pearce's. Preached at Ruffin in the afternoon. Good congreteation.

Friday, April 28, 1876.

I saw today a degenerate son of a noble sire. A large, fine looking, portly man, and I am told brilliant, reeling drunk on the streets of Reidsville, a son of P_____, - of one of the most aristocratic families of Va.

Sunday, April 30, 1876.

While in Church at Lawsonville this morning trying to preach, some one stole my whip, a nice new one. There is an "Old Baptist" Union meeting today at "Wolf Island,"⁶⁰ everybody gone there, but few out. Preached to a crowded house this evening in Reidsville.

Monday, May 1

Came home this morning. A cold, calm, cloudy day. The coldest I ever felt on the 1st of May. Rheumatism in hip (left).

Tuesday, May 2, 1876

A rainy day. Spent the day in my room reading "Thoughts on Missions" by Rev. Dr. W. G. E. Cunningham, and finishing "Mission Work" by Rev. Homer J. Thrall, of Texas. Received today by an unexpected present, just the cost of my whip, stolen on Sabbath. (.65).

Wednesday 3

Lina & myself, Mrs. L. & R. Rawley spent today with Willie L. Spaulding - A splendid dinner. We had one of the most pleasant prayer meetings tonight we have ever had.

Thursday, May 4, 1876.

Busy this morning writing a sermon on missions.

Friday 5

Left home this P.M. Spent the night with Bro. Neptha Cobb. A profitable visit.⁶¹

Tuesday 9

Carried L. to Greensboro this evening on the cars to remain a few

months. She will be confined in June. Find Ma well but feeble.

Wednesday, May 10, 1876.

Returned to Ruffin this morning. Held prayer meeting tonight. The largest attendance we have had at all. encouraging. Talked from Job. "There the wicked cease from troubling, and the weary are at rest."

Thursday 11

Drove through Reidsville to see Mrs. McCullum. A lady sick with consumption. Not long for this world. Called this P.M. to see Mrs. Dr. Williams. Seeking forgiveness for sins. Spent night at Bro. George Garrett's. His son married in Jan. Lost his wife lately. Seemed sad.

Friday, May 12, 1876

Had a narrow escape today. Left Romeo at a gate, came unhitched and walked off with the buggy. Went two miles and yet no injury was done to horse or buggy. Praise the Lord! When I have another escape some years since, Rev. Wm. Barringer (of precious memory) said "The Lord certainly has some great work for Robah to do! And so has preserved him." It is all of God!

Saturday 13

This incident turned me to Reidsville. Dined at Mr. Wm. Lindsey's. Spent the night with Bro. Walker. Go out to old Unkle Pearson's (75 years old, yet active) spend the night.⁶²

Sunday, May 14, 1876.

Tonight I received into the M. E. Church, South, at Mr. Wm. Lindsey's, in the presence of a few friends, his wife and daughter.

Monday 15

Today I drove to Greensboro.

Tuesday, June 27, 1876.

This afternoon at 20 minutes past 4 o'clock Lina gave birth to a fine healthy looking girl.

She has had pains every ten minutes since yesterday 6 A. M. & every five minutes last night. She has taken in severe labour 20 minutes past eleven this A.M. Had a very severe labour.

Saturday, July 1, 1876.

Left Greensboro this P. M. for my appointment at Carmel. A storm came up as I was on the road, appearance very threatening. Stopped at a Mr. Hopkins', Baptist, three miles from Reidsville, and spent the night.

Sunday 2

Started this morning for Carmel. Preached at 11 A. M. Went to Bro. Fred Ellington's for dinner, then to Bethlehem, where I

preached. Spent the night with Capt. Jim Moore.

Monday, July 3, 1876.

Started for Greensboro'. Drove about 21 miles, shaft broke. Drove 11 miles to G - with one shaft.

Thursday 6

Left Greensboro' this A. M. for Reidsville, on the cars. Dined at the Harris Hotel with J. R. Webster.⁶³ Walk out to Bro. Wm. Burton's and spent the night.

Friday, July 7. 1876.

Dined with Mr. Dick Wray,⁶⁴ and received his complaint against J_____ R. W_____. He wanted him turned out of the Church, for alledged immorality. Spent the night with him.

Saturday 8

Bro. George Walker carried me out to his house where I spent the night.⁶⁵

End of Diary

NOTES

¹Zachariah Barber married Selina Waters, the daughter of Lloyd and Ann Edwards Waters, in February 1850. Ann Edwards was the daughter of Rev. George R. and Catherine Edwards of the Mount Carmel Church area. Rev. Edwards was a noted Methodist minister and the father of several children. Two of his daughters married Methodist ministers John W. Lewis and James Reid. Rev. Reid was the father of Rev. Dr. Numa F. Reid.

²Numa Fletcher Reid (1825-1873) was the son of the Rev. James Reid and his wife Martha Edwards Reid. A native of Rockingham County, Numa Reid was converted at a revival at Mount Carmel Church in 1843. After teaching for a few years, Reid entered the Methodist ministry in 1847, his first charge being the Wentworth Circuit from 1849-1851. In 1846 Reid married Ann Wright of Wentworth, the daughter of tavernkeeper James Wright. Several children were born to this union, including U.S. Congressman James W. Reid and noted Methodist minister and college president Frank L. Reid. After his wife's death in 1869, Reid married his wife's sister Sallie Lindsey Wright in 1872. To this second union was born a son Numa R. Reid. Rev. Reid is buried in the Methodist cemetery in Wentworth.

³James Madison Moore was a resident of the Bethlehem Church area. He married Mary J. Meador in March 1845. (Rockingham County Marriage Bonds).

⁴William Capers Norman (1849-1902) was a popular Methodist minister of the North Carolina Conference of the M. E. Church, South. The son of Rev. Alfred Norman, who served the Wentworth Circuit from 1857-1859, W. C. Norman returned to pastor the same charge from 1872-1875. He died in Wilmington, North Carolina in 1902. The late William C. Stokes of Reidsville was a nephew of W. C. Norman.

⁵J. W. Foster, who was active in the Mount Carmel Church area, operated a store-post office at Oregon Hill in the mid and late 19th century. The store building still stands today. Foster married Mary A. Fitzgerald in 1845.

⁶Could possibly be the T. L. Rawley who is listed in Branson's Business Directory of 1884 as a fertilizer agent in Ruffin.

⁷Possibly the wife of Mr. W. S. Allen, a prominent leader in the Reidsville Church for many years.

⁸Martin Clemens was a resident of the Lowe's Church area, who married Martha C. Pearson in December 1852. (Rockingham County Marriage Bond Index, p. 46)

⁹Possibly the Dr. Winchester who later lived in the Scalesville area of Guilford County.

¹⁰George Garrett (1803-1892) was the owner of a fine farm in the Lowe's Church area, who owned 20 slaves in 1860. He married Emily Young in 1828.

¹¹George Garrett's sister Mary married S. A. Foster in 1829. Rosie may have been a granddaughter of the Fosters.

¹²Dr. William J. Courts was a physician in the Ruffin Area. The son of Daniel W. Courts, William married Fanny Carter of Caswell County and raised 12 children. He died in 1912 at age 80.

¹³Obviously a daughter of William Lindsey, a prominent businessman, citizen and churchman in Reidsville in the mid and late 19th century.

¹⁴The eldest son of Rev. & Mrs. Numa F. Reid, James Wesley Reid (1849-1902) was a native of Wentworth, where he was a noted attorney, orator, teacher, tavernkeeper and county treasurer. He was a U.S. Congressman from 1884-1886. He died in

Lewiston, Idaho in January 1902. Reid was a trustee in the Wentworth Church.

¹⁵ Calvin Washington Mobley (1838-1918) was a resident of the Berry Community and lived east of Wentworth. He was a member of the Mount Carmel and Bethlehem churches, a Mason, and a sergeant in the 45th NC Regiment during the Civil War. He married Mary Irvin in 1861 and after her death he married Sara Jones in 1877. The ruins of his home are located on old NC Highway 87 (Ashley Road) near Roselawn Cemetery.

¹⁶ Daniel Guerrant (1804-1895) was a noted local Methodist minister in the Mount Carmel Church area. He married Malinda Stubblefield in September 1826. Some of Rev. Guerrant's papers have been recently given to UNC-Chapel Hill.

¹⁷ John Wyatt Guerrant was the son of Daniel Guerrant. He married Lizzie F. Watkins in April 1866 and they lived in the Guerrant Springs area of Rockingham County before moving to Danville, Virginia.

¹⁸ Matthew Sparks was a prominent farmer in the Oregon Hill community in the late 1800's.

¹⁹ Rufus Rawley was the son of David I. Rawley and Catherine Stubblefield, who lived in the Ruffin area.

²⁰ Bannister Fitzgerald was an uncle of noted Methodist bishop O. P. Fitzgerald and lived near Ruffin for many years.

²¹ Rev. Pleasant Hunter Dalton (1821-1896) was a native of Rockingham County and grew up in the Beaver Island community north of Madison. He became a noted Presbyterian minister and was one of the founders of the First Presbyterian Church in High Point, North Carolina, in 1859.

²² The Pierces, Swanns and the Kesees were all prominent families in the Pelham Church area of Caswell County.

²³ Oscar Penn Fitzgerald (1829-1911) was the son of Richard and Martha Hooper Fitzgerald and lived just across the border in Caswell County. O. P. Fitzgerald became a prominent Methodist minister, going to California as a missionary in the 1850s and later becoming a religious newspaper editor. In 1890 he was made a bishop in the M. E. Church, South.

²⁴ David Lawson Withers (1848-1905) was the son of Elijah K. and Nancy Lawson Withers who lived just east of Ruffin in Caswell County. In 1879 he married Elizabeth Susan Ratliffe of Wentworth and they reared four children, the youngest of whom was the late Miss Nancy Withers of Wentworth.

²⁵ Probably Mr. W. P. Watt who owned Edgewood Plantation in the Lawsonville community east of Reidsville.

²⁶ William Lindsey (1829-1889) was one of the founders of Reidsville, living there as early as 1860. He was a merchant and tobacco manufacturer whose stately home on Main Street is now the residence of his granddaughter Mrs. William Stokes. The Methodists in Reidsville formally organized their congregation in 1874. Until the Methodists could complete their sanctuary on South Scales Street in the late 1870s, they were permitted to use the Reidsville Baptist and Presbyterian Church. In 1890 the cornerstone for a larger sanctuary for the Methodists was laid behind the old sanctuary on a lot on Main Street. By 1892 the new building was completed and the congregation became known as Main Street Methodist Church.

²⁷ Ezekiel D. Paschal (1828-1912) was a large landholder in southeastern Rockingham County, who was part owner of the Farmer's Warehouse in Reidsville. He was a long time member of the Camp Springs Methodist Church in southern Caswell County.

²⁸William M. Ellington (1801-1877) was a citizen in Wentworth where he operated Ellington Hotel on Main Street. He was married four times, surviving his first three wives. His fourth wife was Martha Thomas of Greensboro whom he married in 1866. The only descendent of Ellington in Rockingham County today is his great-granddaughter, Mrs. Lucile Reid Fagg of Eden.

²⁹Richard A. Ellington (1818-1884) was a brother of William M. Ellington and a leader in the Methodist Church in Wentworth. Ellington was a tobacconist in Wentworth for many years. His wife was the former Martha Whittemore. The Ellingtons are buried in Wentworth. The site of their home is now occupied by the residence of Mr. S. F. Rakestraw.

³⁰The Independent Order of Good Templars was a fraternal order that was popular in the 1870s and promoted temperance and charity. Chapters of this lodge were organized in Wentworth, Reidsville, Madison and the Ellisboro area, but none lasted more than a few years.

³¹Obviously this is Mrs. Alfred J. Ellington (nee Kate Bonner), the daughter-in-law of Richard A. Ellington.

³²Henrietta Settle Reid was the wife of Gov. David S. Reid. At this time the Reids were living at the Ellington Hotel in Wentworth, where they lived until 1881 at which time the Reids moved to Reidsville to live with their son Thomas S. Reid.

³³Martha Jane Williams (1841-1923) was the wife of John G. Mitchell, a Wentworth merchant, barkeeper, postmaster, county jailor, and justice of the peace. Several of the Mitchell descendants continue to live in Wentworth.

³⁴Obviously a reference to Martha Thomas Ellington, See note 28.

³⁵Martha Pirtle Hall was the wife of James H. Hall, a Wentworth merchant and tavernkeeper. The Halls later moved to Reidsville.

³⁶Probably Mrs. Annie M. Jones (1828-1906) the wife of R. P. Jones (1820-1900), a private schoolteacher. The Joneses lived in the Foulk Hill area near Wentworth. They were members of the Wentworth Church and later joined the Salem Church. They were the grandparents of Rev. J. Elwood Carroll, a noted minister of the Western North Carolina Conference of the United Methodist Church.

³⁷See note 17. Lamery Reid was a brother of James W. Reid and a son of Rev. Numa F. Reid. He lived his adult life in the midwest of United States. David S. Reid was the former North Carolina Governor who was practicing law at Wentworth at the time. W. N. Mebane was a practicing attorney for several years before moving to Madison. R. J. Lewellyn was the county Registrar of Deeds for a number of years.

³⁸George D. Boyd (1797-1886) was a state legislator and planter whose plantation house sill stands in the Sandy Cross Community near Speedwell Church. Boyd lost three of his four sons in the Civil War. The father and those three sons are buried beneath elaborate marble monuments in the Wentworth Methodist Church Cemetery.

³⁹The Groome family lived on the outskirts of Reidsville. John W. Smith operated a hotel and store in Reidsville as early as 1872. Dr. N. H. D. Wilson was a prominent Methodist minister in the state who lived in Greensboro.

⁴⁰This probably is a reference to the Mobley family who lived in the Guerrant Springs area of the county.

⁴¹The Raleigh Christian Advocate was the official organ of the North Carolina Conference.

⁴²Willie Spalding was probably a descendant of Andrew Spalding, a native of Scotland, who is buried at Lickfork Church south of Ruffin. Spalding later moved west.

⁴³ Could be John C. Wall, a farmer in the Oregon Hill community, who married Matilda Sparks in 1848, or Mr. W. D. Wall who was Sunday School Superintendent at Mt. Carmel Church for many years.

⁴⁴ May instead be W. S. Allen of Reidsville.

⁴⁵ Laura Holderby was the daughter of Joseph Holderby, one of Reidsville's founding fathers. She married Major Mortimer Oakes who became Reidsville's first major in 1873. Dr. W. C. Staples was from Patrick County, Virginia and practiced in Reidsville for a number of years. He and his wife Ann Penn Staples had three children, including John Staples who was one of the pillars of the Reidsville Methodist Church.

⁴⁶ Daniel Albert Rawley was the son of David I. and Catherine Stubblefield Rawley. He married Susan Fulton in 1883. He died in Mt. Airy, North Carolina.

⁴⁷ May be J. Willie Smith, a prominent Reidsville Citizen.

⁴⁸ Shady Grove was the site of a schoolhouse, as early as the 1870s, near the campus of Rockingham Community College. The school was used for services conducted by area Methodist ministers for nearly fifty years. Shady Grove Missionary Baptist Church is located at the site.

⁴⁹ William T. Williams (1839-1919) was the superintendent of the Rockingham County Home for several years. A Confederate veteran, Williams was a member of the Wentworth Church and is buried there. The County Home was finally housed in a brick building which is now the county educational building, near Wentworth.

⁵⁰ Obviously a close relative of Bishop O. P. Fitzgerald, but otherwise unknown.

⁵¹ Henry Fitzgerald was a bachelor uncle of Bishop Fitzgerald.

⁵² John R. Webster (1845-1909) was a prominent Republican newspaper publisher in Reidsville (*Webster's Weekly*) and a leader in the Methodist Church there.

⁵³ Richard Holderby was the son of Joseph B. and Martha Stubblefield Holderby who lived in Reidsville, and were among the town's first families. Richard married Virginia Mills in 1853.

⁵⁴ Probably Agnes Nunnally Wariner (1825-1879), the widow of Robert H. Wariner who was a prominent Ruffin resident.

⁵⁵ Miss Ada Lane may have been a distant relative to the Wariner family.

⁵⁶ John Henry Anderson (1826-1901) was the son and grandson of Methodist ministers. He owned a large farm on the south side of the Dan River near Oregon Hill. He served as a local supply pastor for the Wentworth and Ruffin Methodist Circuits. He is buried at Mount Carmel Church Cemetery.

⁵⁷ Could have been a member of the Lewis family who lived in the Ruffin area.

⁵⁸ Alfred Walker (1827-1893) was a trustee at Lowe's Methodist Church and was a prominent farmer and magistrate in that area. He and his wife Elizabeth Hopkins Walker raised a large family, some of which are buried at Lowe's Church.

⁵⁹ Mary H. Simpson married Thomas C. Meador, son of John and Nancy F. Meador, in 1832. They lived west of Reidsville and were members of Lowe's Church.

⁶⁰ Wolf Island Church is one of the county's oldest Primitive Baptist churches just north of Reidsville.

⁶¹ Neptha Cobb resided in the Oregon Hill community and his first recorded deed in Rockingham County is dated 1881.

⁶² Sullivan Pearson (1801-1885) was the son of John Pearson one of the founders of Lowe's Church. He first married Marish Williams (d. 1851) and then Ann Walker in 1853.

⁶³ The old Piedmont Hotel on the west side of the railroad tracks in Reidsville was owned by Elder J. M. Harris. It burned in the great conflagration of 1887. The site is

now occupied by the American Tobacco Company.

⁶⁴Richard H. Wray (1825-1907) was the railroad depot agent at Reidsville. He married Lucy Baurton in 1859. His home on Reidsville's Main Street is now the home of Mr. & Mrs. William E. Felts.

⁶⁵George T. Walker was the son of James and Sarah Walker and was the clerk for the Williamsburg Township in the 1870s. He married Cornelia Walker in 1867.

372 MISSING ROCKINGHAM COUNTY MARRIAGE BONDS

Compiled by

Don Hoover

Marriage in North Carolina between 1785 and 1868 was done by marriage bond or marriage banns (the proclamation read in church on three successive meetings of an intention to be married). The bond was posted to assure the potential bride that there was no legal reason why the prospective groom could not marry her. Once the bond was obtained or the banns read then any preacher or justice of the peace could perform the marriage ceremony.

Most researchers are aware of the marriage bonds that have survived and are in the archives in Raleigh and the index that was done for those bonds in 1944. Few people are aware that the county of Rockingham did its own index around the end of the Nineteenth Century. This index contains approximately 370 names of marriage bonds that had been lost prior to the 1944 index. The following list was derived by making a comparison between the two indexes. The names listed could not be compared back to the 1944 index for either the male, female, or date of marriage. Many more names exist on the earlier index where only the male or females name would be different but the rest of the bond was the same.

The early Rockingham index has no date to indicate when it was prepared. It has been examined for handwriting, paper type, and binding by experts in the archives and is believed to date between mid 1880's and the very early 1900's. This index like its counterpart done much later is not infallible in its translation of the handwritings of the original bonds. Some obvious mistakes in translating the names and dates exist such as Asburn for Osburn. Also several marriages are repeated on this index several times, sometimes with exactly the same name and sometimes with a different interpretation of the same name. Notice in the list Rawley Lybass on the same day married a J.A. Thomas and a J.A. Paschal. Since this bond is missing there is no way to determine who he married so both are listed. A few names from the bonds that have survived were not on this index, meaning either a package of bonds were skipped or some bonds were misplaced during the compiling of the index. The Rock-

ingham County index although in a semichronological order by last name and date, does skip around some by years which indicates it was written after 1868.

What happened to these missing bonds will probably always remain a mystery. They may have been burned in the courthouse fire in 1906, some were probably pilfered by descendants and some may have been accidentally discarded over the years. But the good news is that Rockingham County officials did make this early index which has preserved these lost marriages.

This list contains no marriage prior to February 1790 while the archives does have one bond dated 1787. There is no explanation for what happened to the bonds during the first four years plus of the County's existence. The oldest missing bond for Rockingham County was to William Pursil who intended to marry a Patsee Young in June 1790. In the 1700's most bonds were written by hand, sometime around 1800 forms that needed only the names and dates to be filled in were used. Also after about 1865, although a lot of the marriages are for black couples, few are indicated as such.

Around 1851 a new law required the person performing the marriage to send back a copy of the marriage certificate indicating the place and time that the marriage took place. Those returned were called marriage certificates and were then logged in a book which has survived and is in the archives. The missing bonds after that date may be recorded in this marriage log book. For the marriages recorded in this book we have for the first time proof that the marriage did take place and the date for the marriage.

The bonds in this list indicates the date the bond was obtained and not the date of the marriage nor is it proof that the marriage ever took place. The early index does not give the name of the bondsmen or witnesses. Those names were lost with the bond.

Interestingly about 85 percent of the missing bonds date prior to the 1850 census and are therefore the key to determining who some people listed in the census married. About 200 of the missing bonds date between 1836 and 1844. Almost all the bonds between August 1837 and August 1838 are missing which probably indicates a whole bundle has been lost. Spelling as listed in the index has been preserved and a underline following the word indicates the word was hard to read and could be interpreted differently.

Index of Missing Rockingham County Marriage Bonds

	Groom	Bride	Bond Date
1	Adams, Samuel F.....	Reid, Frances.....	10-Oct 1837
2	Allen, Charles.....	Mann, Sarah.....	20-Apr 1842
3	Allen, Valentine.....	Martin, Elizabeth.....	16-Apr 1836
4	Amos, John B.....	Vaden, Mary A.....	08-Sep 1842
5	Apple, John H.....	Donnell, Missouri F....	05-Apr 1842
6	Asburn, D. D.....	Geurrant, Mary P.....	20-Apr 1853
7	Balck, James C.....	Nocross_, Sophria.....	14-Jul 1842
8	Barham, John I.....	Irvin, Sarah.....	20-Jul 1866
9	Barnes, Allen.....	Rhodes, Martha.....	11-Oct 1837
10	Barnes, John.....	Carter, Ginnett.....	10-Nov 1842
11	Barris, David.....	Mann, Mary.....	03-May 1838
12	Bateman, James.....	Newel, Rebecca.....	20-Feb 1839
13	Baughn, John W.....	Mustire—, Martha.....	25-Apr 1838
14	Berton, Thomas.....	Tolloct, Frances.....	22-Jan 1942
15	Blessed, William.....	Moore, Eliza.....	27-Mar 1841
16	Boling, Jarat.....	Carter, Elizabeth.....	10-Jan 1838
17	Bonds, Joshua.....	Ricks, Nancy.....	15-Nov 1837
18	Bouldin, Benjamine F...	Bouldin, Elizabeth....	26-Dec 1857
19	Bowe, James H.....	Nance, Kitty J.....	03-Nov 1842
20	Bowman, Richard.....	Collins, Mary.....	26-Dec 1868
21	Brown, W. R.....	Smith, Shilly—.....	10-Aug 1838
22	Caffey, Daniel.....	Gipson, Nancy.....	17-Jan 1839
23	Cardwell, Richard P....	Dalton, Elizabeth M...	07-May 1832
24	Carson, William F.....	Morgan, Sarah H.....	16-Jul 1832
25	Carter, Henry.....	Lemons, Elizabeth.....	22-Jan 1838
26	Carter, John.....	Shreve, Elizabeth.....	19-Mar 1839
27	Carter, M. S.....	Lemons, Lucy Jane....	03-May 1838
28	Cayton, Martin.....	Jones, Litha Ann.....	09-Dec 1850
29	Chambers, John.....	Smith, Sarah.....	11-Nov 1837
30	Christmas, William.....	Keenbrough, Elizabeth.	23-Sep 1809
31	Churchell, James S.....	Hall, Sarah.....	16-Apr 1838
31	Churchell, Owen—.....	Reed, Salley.....	09-Dec 1839
33	Cobb, Pleasant.....	Burton, Ann.....	08-Feb 1838
34	Coe, Jesse.....	Plummer, Ellen.....	10-Apr 1838
35	Cole, Daneil.....	Blair, Salley.....	10-Feb 1838
36	Coleman, George.....	Wright, Nancy.....	18-Jul 1838

37	Coleman, George.....	Young, Martha.....	25-Mar 1839
38	Coleman, William.....	Hudson, Mary.....	24-Dec 1837
39	Commer, Henry C.....	Godsey, Martha F.....	16-Feb 1842
40	Coram, Pinckney J.....	Ellington, Sarah C.....	27-Sep 1841
41	Cox, T. B.....	Cobler, Louisa.....	30-Dec 1840
42	Coyle, Thomas F. M.	Cardwell, L.....	16-May 1838
43	Craig, John.....	Miner, Malinda.....	07-Apr 1836
44	Crawford, Elisha.....	Knight, Elizabeth.....	01-Sep 1847
45	Creans, James.....	Evans, Elizabeth C.....	17-Jan 1842
46	Crowder, Anderson.....	Mann, Elizabeth.....	22-Mar 1838
47	Dalton, Henry.....	Roseborough, Amanda.....	29-Dec 1867
48	Daniel, Alvis.....	Watt, Jane Z.....	16-Aug 1838
49	Denton, William H.....	Barnes, Patsey.....	27-Oct 1837
50	Dilworth, William.....	Williamson, Mary.....	28-Nov 1837
51	Doak, Robert.....	Watt, Jane.....	28-Jan 1831
52	Dodson, Pleasant W.....	Terry, Mary Ann M....	12-May 1842
53	Dougherty, Charles.....	Winchester, Tabitha...	20-Nov 1837
54	Dreshill, Loton.....	Currie, Eliza.....	05-Jan 1842
55	Ellington, Farrow.....	Wells, Sarah W.....	19-May 1842
56	Ellington, James T.....	Ellington, Sarah M....	30-May 1837
57	Evans, James.....	Harp, Elizabeth.....	17-Jan. 1842
58	Fagg, Joel.....	Sharp, Jane.....	18-Oct 1815
59	Farmer, Mereith.....	Sercey—, Sarah C.....	23-Aug 1837
60	Feathers, Henry P.....	Adams, Ann E.....	12-Feb 1851
61	Fergin, Dabney Z.....	Mills, Elizabeth.....	19-Apr 1839
62	Fergis, William C.....	Jones, Margaret.....	08-Apr 1839
63	Fitts, Hardy.....	Wall, Elizabeth.....	27-Nov 1834
64	Flack, David G.....	Martin, Elizabeth.....	26-Sep 1850
65	Ford, Samuel.....	Boatwright, Rebecca...	24-Jan 1838
66	Foy, Pleasant.....	Bason, Martha W.....	28-Mar 1838
67	Fulcher—, Harden.....	Griffin, Luvena.....	21-Apr 1850
68	Galloway, William D....	Choice, Elizabeth.....	10-Nov 1837
69	Garner, John.....	Hall, Lucinda.....	25-Sep 1837
70	Gentry, Joel A.....	Vaughn, Suaan.....	03-Jul 1839
71	Gilliam, James.....	Berk, Martha.....	29-Sep 1840
72	Godsey, Henry.....	Jones, Ruth.....	14-Oct 1937
73	Gowins, George W.....	Partin, Elizabeth.....	13-Sep1838
74	Grayer, Thomas.....	Nichols,	20-Oct 1806
75	Griffin, John.....	Griffin, M.....	04-Jan 1820
76	Hand, Ulysses.....	Dalton, Mary.....	29-Feb 1836
77	Hand, William H.....	Black, Emiley.....	26-Mar 1836

78	Holt, Isaac.....	Iron, Ruth	28-Jul 1841
79	Hood, Hubbard	Baughn, Sarah S.....	10-Nov 1842
80	Hopper, William O.....	Watkins, Henrietta	25-Jan 1842
81	Hudson, William	Suits, Mary	06-Dec 1837
82	Irelan, William S.....	Hardy, Elizabeth	04-Apr 1840
83	Jackson, John Jr.....	Joyce, Harriet.....	26-Feb 1839
84	James, Joseph D.....	Pitcher, Nancy	30-Aug 1837
85	James, Thomas S.....	Kear, Gilley C.....	15-Nov 1837
86	Jarrell, Zachariah.....	Boatwright, Jane.....	16-Aug 1838
87	Jarrett, Nicholas.....	Heather, Martha	21-Mar 1836
88	Johnson, William.....	Smothers, Adline.....	28-Dec 1864
89	Johnston, Moses	Holderby, Lucy A M	21-Dec 1866
90	Joiner, Lewis W.....	Shepperd, Elizabeth...	01-Aug 1840
91	Jones, Edward.....	England, Elizabeth S...	10-May 1841
92	Jones, Hardey	Maderson—, Ann	01-Feb 1842
93	Jones, John.....	Laggett—, Elizabeth...	25-Aug 1842
94	Joyce, Alexander M....	Vernon, Matilda	19-Jan 1826
95	Joyce, Thomas H.....	Price, Sarah.....	20-Aug 1842
96	Juge, John.....	Hobson, Harriet E.....	17-Dec 1825
97	Jumper, Stephen.....	Martin, Mary	22-Jun 1839
98	Kennon, Asa	Loveless, Jane	25-Aug 1853
99	Kern, William D.....	Robertson, Margaret B..	08-Mar 1862
100	King William.....	Thomas, Martha.....	23-Apr 1842
101	Knight, James M.....	Coleman, Martha A. E..	03-Aug 1836
102	Knight, John C.....	Roberts, Elizabeth....	17-Feb 1844
103	Knight, Thomas.....	King, Elizabeth.....	30-Apr 1836
104	Kyle, Joseph.....	Kyle, Elizabeth	12-Sept 1837
105	Lane, Joseph.....	Hopper, Lucy.....	01-Jun 1838
106	Lanier, Andrew J	Smith, Jane H.....	05-Jan 1839
107	Lanson, R.W.	Aiden, Bettie W.....	15-Apr 1861
108	Lawson, John W	Jordan, Polly	28-Jul 1854
109	Lee, James.....	Murphey, Barbra.....	28-Mar 1836
110	Lenall, Nicholas.....	Lemons, Maja.....	30-Aug 1821
111	Leo, William	Lee—, Nicey.....	11-Dec 1837
112	Lewis, James M.....	Terry, Agness.....	05-Oct 1841
113	Lewis, John.....	Barnes, Ann.....	27-Feb 1839
114	Lewis, John.....	Edwards, Eveline T....	08-Dec 1840
115	Lewis, William.....	Robertson, Sarah.....	17-Jan 1842
116	Lowe, Gilbert	Nappier, Betsey	21-Dec 1807
117	Lumpkin, Moore	Desy—, Elizabeth.....	21-May 1838
118	Lunly—, John.....	Hambleton, Elizabeth F.	18-Feb 1859

119	Lutherd, Buckner	Baker, Nancy.....	09-Apr 1842
120	Lybass, Rawley	Paschal, Julia Ann	12-Dec 1864
121	Lybass, Rawley	Thomas, Julia Ann	12-Dec 1864
122	Macorkel, Richard	Martin, Elizabeth.....	28-Feb 1836
123	Man, Pascael	Loy, Elizabeth	29-Jul 1853
124	Martin, Alexander.....	Smothers, Frances.....	- - 1842
125	Martin, Richard.....	Smith, Elizabeth.....	27-Jan 1838
126	Matkins, John	Grogan, Elizabeth	12-Jan 1824
127	May, James H	Ellington, Frances E....	05-Nov 1839
128	Mcclain, John.....	Nelson, Elly	26-Jan 1794
129	Mckey, Isaac.....	Davis, Mary C.....	21-Aug 1838
130	Mckinney, Peter	Sanders, Elizabeth	19-Jan 1841
131	Miller, G. W.	Shreve, Rachael	30-Apr 1839
132	Miller, Martin.....	Carrell, Sarah	15-Oct 1839
133	Miner, Levin.....	Walker, Priscilla	04-Mar 1841
134	Montgomery, James L....	Walker, Mary T.....	27-May 1839
135	Moore, B. D.	Grogan, Elizabeth J...	11-Dec 1840
136	Moore, John	Tucker, Nancy G	29-Nov 1842
137	Moore, Thomas Jr	Kinght, Eliza Z	10-Jan 1842
138	Morton, Henry H.....	Martin, Elizabeth.....	16-Sep 1847
139	Morton, Warren.....	Taylor, Martha	01-Feb 1838
140	Murphey, John.....	London, Mary	04-Apr 1839
141	Napier, Moses C	Martin, Sally	05-Dec 1810
142	Nash, William J.....	Bethell, Ann C.....	17-Feb 1821
143	Neal, Thomas	Chinanlt, Judith.....	06-Feb 1799
144	Newnam, Francis	Harper, Patsy	04-Dec 1810
145	Newnam, Sylvester.....	Nowles, Martha	03-Feb 1838
146	Nichols, James.....	Pruett, Elizabeth	05-Jun 1816
147	Nicks, Dock.....	Lomax, Margret.....	03-June 1800
248	Night, Stephen.....	Hall, Poley	28-Dec 1816
149	Noblin, William	Court, Susan N.....	24-Dec 1811
150	Noles, William	Allen, Salley	06-Nov 1825
151	Normas, William.....	Oakes, Hanah	18-Nov 1823
152	Norris, Joel.....	Stringer, Sarah	22-Aug 1801
153	North, John.....	Harris, Elizabeth.....	19-Nov 1824
154	Nowles, John	Grady, Rachael.....	10-Aug 1814
155	Nuel, Landy.....	Nichols, Margaret	10-Sep 1810
156	Nwin, C. D.	Shann, Martha	10-May 1866
157	Oakley, Alexander	Martin, Haney E.....	04-Jan 1839
158	Ore, John.....	Stephens, Elizabeth...	14-Mar 1838
159	Overby, Henry W	Norman, T.....	25-Sept 1839

160	Paschall, Lewis	Newman, Eliza	27-Dec 1841
161	Patterson, William	Willson, Dolly	17-Feb 1851
162	Payne, John	Oakley, Jincey	25-Feb 1839
163	Pearson, Isaac J	Clemmons, Mary L	04-Dec 1857
165	Pea—, Thomas	Smith, Nancy	? ? 1823
166	Persell, George W	Brown, Rebecca	04-Nov 1842
167	Pilkinton, Denney	Peoples, Charlotte	01-Feb 1842
168	Pirkle, Nathaniel	Mcnealy, Jean	11-Nov 1800
169	Plummer, Benjamin H ..	Estus, Phoebe	25-Oct 1837
170	Plummer, John	Wilson, Elizabeth	13-Dec 1826
171	Plummer, William	Plummer, Mary Ann ..	18-Mar 1836
172	Potts, Abraham M	Wall, Susan	11-Aug 1832
173	Pratt, Steven	Dickerson, Mary	15-Aug 1842
174	Price, Allen G	Roberts, Martha M	27-Apr 1860
175	Price, Isham A	Hummins, Elizabeth ...	01-Apr 1842
176	Price, S. H.	Pratt, Lucy	07-Sep 1836
177	Prim, Rawley	Nance, Martha	18-Mar 1836
178	Pruitt, John E	Nunnally, Martha J ...	11-Mar 1867
179	Pursil, William	Young, Patsee	23-Jun 1790
180	Reed, Anselom	Winchester, Martha T ...	12-Mar 1839
181	Rice, William H	Bowman, Elizabeth ...	15-Jan 1838
182	Richardson, Robert	Wright, Elizabeth	27-Jun 1842
183	Roach, Richard A	Robin, Delila	25-Aug 1841
184	Roberts, James M	Combs, Ann W	19-Feb 1840
185	Roberts, Samuel	Rawley, Nancy	28-Sep 1837
186	Roberts, Thomas	Hopper, Arreny	30-Apr 1835
187	Roberts, Thomas	Pursell, Susan	24-May 1838
188	Roseberry, Thomas	Thomason, Elizabeth ...	30-Nov 1841
189	Ross, Andrew D	Jones, Delila—	15-Jan 1838
190	Sanders, James	Glenn, Elizabeth	23-Dec 1845
191	Sanders, Lewis C	Barrett, Martha	24-Mar 1848
192	Sandridge, Thomas I	Fewell, Louisa M	15-Jan 1848
193	Sapp, Robert J	Cummings, Mary	07-Feb 1843
194	Sarten, Christopher	Burtian, Mary J	14-Jun 1843
195	Sartin, Jesse	Butler, Sarah	27-Aug 1846
196	Satterfield, Kinchen	Malcom, Susan	06-Feb 1845
197	Scales, Jackson	Black, Mariah A	12-Jan 1846
198	Scales, James	Dalton, Charlotte	16-Nov 1837
199	Scales, James M	Lapar, Elizabeth A. N ..	09-Nov 1825
200	Scales, Noah	Cardwell, Elizabeth A ...	14-Aug 1827
201	Scales, Pleasant	Numan—, Mary Ann ...	21-Apr 1849

202	Scales, Rawley A.....	Spencer, Martha Ann....	10-Dec 1844
203	Scales, Robert	Smith, Ann	20-Apr 1844
204	Scarlett, Robert E.....	Smith, Martha C.....	31-Oct 1850
205	Scott, Pinckney	Thompson, Elizabeth Ann.....	18-Aug 1840
206	Scruggs, Edwardaie.....	Pratt, Sarah.....	23-Nov 1848
207	Searcy, Alexander	Dalton, Susan D	09-May 1839
208	Seargeant, William W...	Henderson, Minerva A	13-May 1850
209	Semons, Andrew	Buress, Rebecca.....	10-Sep 1850
210	Setliffe, Abram.....	Jones, Nancy.....	06-Sep 1849
211	Settle, Benjamin	Campbell, Sarah P	17-Dec 1845
212	Sharp, A. H.....	Moseley, Massey.....	29-Jul 1841
213	Sharp, Absalom S.....	Godsey, Susanna N....	25-Sep 1842
214	Sharp, Hubbard.....	Wesson, Mary.....	25-Aug 1841
215	Sharp, John.....	Cardwell, Minerva.....	15-May 1848
216	Sharp, Joseph A	Joyce, Nancy.....	07-May 1827
217	Sharp, Richard.....	Oakley, Elizabeth.....	13-Jan 1840
218	Shepherd, John.....	Hays, Margaret.....	16-Apr 1838
219	Shom, R. G.....	Miner, Mary Ann.....	13-Dec 1838
220	Shomaston, Myers	Newnam, Julia	15-Jan 1839
221	Shopshire, William.....	Shopshire, Sarah.....	31-Mar 1851
222	Shrieves, A. J.....	Comer, Mary Ann.....	07-Mar 1855
223	Shrieves, John.....	Boatwright, Marth.....	05-Oct 1843
224	Shrieves, Robert.....	Carter, Elizabeth.....	03-Jan 1845
225	Shrieves, Thomas.....	Ratliffe, Eliza Ann.....	10-Jan 1843
226	Shropshire, Henry	Cobson, Susan.....	11-Oct 1839
227	Shropshire, James	Pratt, Maryon	18-Dec 1843
228	Simpson, Absalom	Williams, Sarah	15-Jan 1827
229	Simpson, C. R. S.....	Miles, Elizabeth J.....	13-Dec 1848
230	Simpson, James M.....	Lybass, Jane	16-Jan 1842
231	Simpson, James T	Taylor, Delila.....	13-Jan 1838
232	Simpson, John H.....	Robertson, Martha A....	11-Feb 1843
233	Sims, John.....	Ray, Usley—	23-Oct 1840
234	Sisk, Henderson	Burnes, Sarah.....	13-Dec 1852
235	Small, A. A.	Smothers, Harriet M...	08-Sep 1853
236	Small, Bryson.....	Dulin, Sarah.....	23-Feb 1841
237	Small, Nathaniel	Brincefield, Martha J...	09-Apr 185
238	Smallwood, Onestus....	Gaulden, Sarah.....	07-Oct 1851
239	Smith, A. P.....	May, Frances E	24-Aug 1848
240	Smith, Andres J.....	Morris, Tabitha	08-Dec 1846
241	Smith, Calender S.....	Shrieves, Martha.....	12-Aug 1845

242	Smith, Calvin G.....	Henderson, Priscilla M...	15-Oct 1849
243	Smith, Daniel.....	Rhoads, Joanna.....	21-Jan 1843
244	Smith, Drury.....	Thomas, Ann.....	22-Dec 1847
245	Smith, Eldred H.....	Black, Matilda M.....	21-Aug 1839
246	Smith, James.....	Smith, Mary Jane.....	11-Mar 1850
247	Smith, James C.....	Kellam, Anny.....	11-Apr 1842
248	Smith, John.....	Ellington, Jane A.....	31-Oct 1837
249	Smith, John.....	Rakestraw, Elizabeth..	05-Feb 1842
250	Smith, John R.....	Hutcherson, M. P.....	10-Oct 1848
251	Smith, Joseph.....	Floyd, Tenpey Jane...	18-Dec 1846
252	Smith, Joseph H.....	Bernom, Eliza.....	29-Sep 1845
253	Smith, Joshua T.....	Lindsay, Elizabeth....	29-Aug 1837
254	Smith, Nathaniel H.....	Brincefield, Eliza.....	11-Feb 1840
255	Smith, Stephen.....	Martin, Charity Ann...	23-Apr 1842
256	Smith, Thomas.....	Mccollister, Sarah.....	03-Nov 1839
257	Smith, Walker.....	Dalton, Jane.....	18-Sep 1846
258	Smith, William D.....	Henderson, Mary.....	26-Oct 1848
259	Smith, William H.....	Jones, Nancy.....	17-Dec 1843
260	Smithy, John.....	Loveless, Elizabeth....	Feb 1853
261	Sneed, Noten.....	Vaughn, Emeline.....	13-Dec 1841
262	Sneed, Richard.....	Simpson, Sarah.....	16-Jun 1852
263	Sneed, Z. P.....	Glean_, Sarah.....	27-Feb 1845
264	Snets_, Jonathan.....	Coleman, Nancy.....	03-Apr 1839
265	Snuggs, Thos B.....	Strong, Sarah P.....	08-Oct 1840
266	Solomon, Anderson.....	Barker, Sarah.....	05-Oct 1850
267	Solomon, Joseph.....	Crowder, Martha.....	03-Mar 1846
268	Solomon, Reuben.....	Clemmons, Henrietta...	20-Jun 1839
269	Solomon, William.....	Holt, Elizabeth.....	07-Mar 1849
270	Sparke, Ww H.....	Chance, C M.....	04-Oct 1845
271	Sparks, Mathew T.....	Weeden, Manerva.....	06-Sep 1850
272	Spencer_, Calvin.....	Odel_, Elizabeth.....	25-Aug 1831
273	Springs, J. D. M.....	Walker, Lerah.....	23-Feb 1845
274	Stacey, I.....	Mullins, Eliza.....	30-Oct 1849
275	Stacey, John.....	Jones, Rosanah J.....	08-Jul 1844
276	Stadley, William.....	Pearman, Katharine....	20-Aug 1849
277	Stallings, Martin.....	McKinney, Minerva.....	15-Jun 1841
278	Staples, James E.....	Scales, Ruth M.....	27-Apr 1839
279	Steward, John H.....	Procton_, Susan.....	04-Nov 1850
280	Stier, William.....	Baker, Manerry_.....	20-Apr 1848
281	Stiers, Allen B.....	Ratliffe, Mackey.....	14-Sep 1837
282	Still, John.....	Johnson, Martha J....	12-Aug 1844

283	Stires, Bedford.....	Currie, Martha	29-Jan 1842
284	Stockton, John B	Mcgehee, Martha M....	28-Jul 1841
285	Stone, James E	Woollen, Ann.....	10-Mar 1836
286	Stone, John D.....	Hardie, Nancy J	24-Apr 1846
287	Stone, Orinton B.....	Robertson, Emily.....	21-Nov 1840
288	Stone, Salathiel.....	Kearn, Elizabeth	21-Nov 1840
289	Strader, Henry.....	Moles, Salley.....	07-Sep 1844
290	Strader, James	Johnson, Emila.....	04-Apr 1846
291	Strader, James M.....	Ratliffe, Sarah T.....	16-Jan 1843
292	Strader, Morres.....	Heath, Margret.....	06-Jan 1843
293	Strat, William.....	Lindsay, Mary.....	01-Mar 1842
294	Stricklen, Peter.....	Mckinry, Druzilla.....	25-Sept 1845
295	Strong, John.....	Adams, Sarah A. E....	01-Dec 1841
296	Strong, William R.....	Hopper, Caroline M....	20-June 1848
297	Stubblefield, R. J. T.	Waters, Mary S.....	02-Dec 1848
298	Stubblefield, Tilman I...	Moore, Mary J	30-Nov 1843
299	Stubblefield, Wesley	Angel, Julia	02-Oct 1848
300	Suthard, Jesse.....	Scrugs, Mary	04-Jan 1851
301	Suthard, Michael.....	Barlow_, Mary Ann M.	03-Aug 1853
302	Sutherd, Henry	Wilson, Emily	12-Dec 1845
303	Suthorlin, George A....	Robertson, Ann C	07-May 1843
304	Talley, John B	Patterson, Lucinda T...	20-Jul 1843
305	Talley, William W.....	Wilson_, Sarah J	21-Jan 1845
306	Tate, Caleb	Turner, Ann E	- - 1851
307	Taylor, H. G.....	Fuguay, Mary S	23-Dec 1853
308	Taylor, James B	Williams, Nancy	19-nov 1839
309	Taylor, John W	Moore, Molley.....	22-Dec 1866
310	Terrell, James M.....	Thomas, Martha J....	08-June 1849
311	Terrell, John.....	Brinsfield, Catherine..	08-Nov 1854
312	Terry, C. T.....	Moore, Martha.....	02-May 1848
313	Thacker, Camel.....	Cobler, Sarah	02-Aug 1852
314	Thacker, Camel.....	Coblar, Sarah	02-Aug 1852
315	Thacker, Eli A	Grogan, Unity	03-Jan 1848
316	Thacker, Fredrick.....	Crodock, Elizabeth	30-Sep 1850
317	Thacker, Isaac G.....	Butler, Mary Ann.....	10-Jan 1843
318	Thacker, Joseph	Boman, Eliza.....	11-Sep 1849
319	Thaker, Abner	Stanley, Elizabeth	29-May 1839
320	Thomas, James F	Ratliff, Eliza Ann.....	07-Feb 1853
321	Thomas, Michael H	Roberts, Martha Jane..	25-Feb 1845
322	Thomas, Nathaniel.....	Sharp, Charlotte	20-Jul 1849
323	Thomas, Robert.....	Bateman, Nancy.....	03-Nov 1842

324	Thomas, Robert E.....	Hall, Permealy.....	02-Oct 1854
325	Thomas, William J M ...	Patterson, Frances J....	04-Feb 1850
326	Thomas, William Y.....	Ratliffe, Matha E.....	21-Mar 1846
327	Thomilson, George.....	Tulloch, Lucy.....	05-Sep 1849
328	Thompson, Alexander...	Hopper, Nancy.....	05-Dec 1837
329	Thompson, Garland.....	Watkins, Arena.....	21-Aug 1840
330	Tily, Hiram.....	Stallions, Rebecca....	30-Dec 1835
331	Todd, Pleasant.....	Fagg, Charity.....	30-Oct 1814
332	Tollerch_, William.....	Thomas, Martha.....	22-Oct 1850
333	Tucker, Pascal G.....	Hutcherson, Rebecca..	14-Jan 1840
334	Tucker, Paul.....	Hodges, Mary.....	29-Nov 1837
335	Tucker, Theodine.....	Carter, Mary.....	09-Nov 1843
336	Tucker, Thomas J.....	Landreth, Mary Ann...	24-Apr 1848
337	Turner, Harden.....	Thomas, Nancy.....	06-Sep 1845
338	Turner, James P.....	York, Alpha S.....	29-Jun 1848
339	Turner, Tyre.....	Glenn, Mary.....	27-Dec 1849
340	Turner, William J.....	Webster, Elizabeth....	03-Nov 1842
341	Tyler, John.....	Field, Rebecca.....	26-Feb 1839
342	Tyler, John.....	Walters, Catherine E...	15-Aug 1849
343	Vaughn, Fheaderick_ C..	Perry, Nancy.....	05-Nov 1837
344	Wade, William B.....	Smith, Elizabeth.....	14-Dec 1837
345	Walker, John.....	Pearson, Mary C.....	07-Jan 1841
346	Wall, John.....	Wall, Jane.....	12-May 1842
347	Wall, Loyd W.....	Heather, Leana.....	08-Aug 1839
348	Ward, A. W.....	Adams, Wilmith W....	24-Dec 1840
349	Ward, George W.....	Collins, Minerva.....	17-Mar 1838
350	Ware, Jason.....	Chambers, Lucinda....	17-Jan 1842
351	Warters, Ned.....	Waters, Polly.....	28-Dec 1866
352	Washburn, Joseph.....	Mckleroy, Mary.....	17-Oct 1839
353	Watkins, Hiram.....	Loven, Mary.....	14-Jun 1834
354	Watson, Joseph D.....	Mateer, Margaret S...	22-Dec 1837
355	Watt, Robert B.....	Bailey, Nancy B.....	30-Nov 1840
356	Webster, Abner.....	Webster, Nancy.....	17-Jan 1832
357	Webster, Charles.....	Martin, Sarah.....	06-Feb 1838
358	Webster, George W.....	Foy, Elizabeth.....	27-Oct 1842
359	Whittemore, William M...	Henderson, Elizabeth S.	03-Jul 1856
360	Williams, Mannaduke...	Woodson, Martha.....	03-Nov 1825
361	Williams, William.....	Knight, Charlotte.....	08-Mar 1832
362	Wilson, Corindon.....	Browder, Wliza.....	13-Oct 1837
363	Wilson, Urias.....	Saunders_, Lucy.....	24-May 1842
364	Wilson, William.....	Allen, Elizabeth.....	25-Aug 1842

365	Winchester, J. E.	Bennett, Martha H.	20-Oct 1865
366	Windson, John.	Cole, Edy.	05-Nov 1821
367	Woodburn, Tabitha R ...	Shelly, Jesse.	19-Aug 1834
368	Wray, Grant A.	Roberts, Martha.	29-Sep 1837
368	Wray, Grant A.	Price, Octavia.	18-Jul 1856
370	Wright, William.	Holt, Betsy.	30-oct 1810
371	Yancy, Lewis B.	Hoson, Harriet A.	29-Jan 1839
372	York, John B.	Robertson, P B.	25-Sep 1849

DR. JOSEPH H. SIMPSON'S BIRTH BOOKS

Transcribed and Preface

by

Robert E. Greene

Preface

Dr. Joseph Hawkins Simpson was born in Northeast Guilford County, North Carolina on Sunday February 4, 1838, the last child of Gen. Francis Lucas Simpson and Priscilla Simpson Simpson. His grandparents, both born in Fairfax County, Virginia, were Moses and Mary Lucas Garrett Simpson and Aaron and Charlotte Wiseheart Simpson.

He graduated from Jefferson Medical College in Philadelphia (his descendants still have the sheepskin sealed in a metal case) in 1861. Arriving home only a few days before the Civil War began he delivered his first baby (twins) on April 27, 1861. In one of his two "Birth Books" he entered a statement that he was a Captain in the 45th Regiment, Co. H. However he has never been given official recognition of any military service.

At the end of the war he married Margarette Faucette Brannock the widow of Tom Brannock who was killed at Gettysburg. For awhile the couple lived with her parents, George and Catherine Summers Faucette near the Shiloh Methodist Church area of Alamance County. A year or so later they moved to his Father's property in Rockingham County and Hawkins built his own home down the road from the High Rock Mansion. There they raised the children: Francis "Frank" Lee Simpson, Joseph Turner Simpson, Lula Ida Simpson, George Merimon Simpson, Zebby Vance Simpson and John Kerr Simpson. All but George and Zebby Vance lived to adulthood.

Dr. Simpson rode horseback in the adjoining counties of Guilford, Rockingham, Caswell and Alamance to attend to the medical problems of his patients. He knew herbs well enough to make and dispense his own medicine. He also made use of the drug stores in Reidsville. During the years of practice he averaged delivering a baby each month for 32 years, a total of 436 children. Often rain-soaked Dr. Simpson continued his rounds until the early 1890's when he was quite often ill. He wouldn't take care of his health and by 1893 was taken to bed in High Rock Mansion (the dining room of

the present residence). He died there on his birthday, exactly 55 years to the day, Feb 4, 1893. His son-in-law, Fletcher Ware Paschal helped carry the body out the side door of High Rock for burial at the old Simpson Graveyard in Guilford County.

Two small books were kept by Dr. Simpson (one apparently carried with him on his rounds; the other kept at home), recording each birth at which he attended. He gives the woman's name, date of birth, and whether a boy or girl. There are also occasional notes refering to birth difficulties.

Book #1 - A small blue bound diary entitled PHYSICIANS VISITING LIST, 1861. The title page: The Physician's visiting List, Diary, and Book of Engagements for 1861, Philadelphia: Lindsay & Blakiston, 25 South Sixth St., above Chestnut.

His signature in ink - J. Hawkins Simpson, Philadelphia, March 5, 1861

On contents page he writes in pencil: Capt. J. Hawkins Simpson, Co. H, 45th Regiment, N.C.T.

On Almanac page he signs: J. Hawkins Simpson, High Rock, N. C., June 15, 1861.

On another page again signed: J. Hawkins Simpson's Book, April 3rd. 1861.

Book #2 - A slightly larger brown lined note book having no title: again the same entries as book #1.

The Birth Books

Year	Name	Mo. & Day	Sex
1861	Mrs. Nancy Coleman	April 17	2 Boys
	Mary Matkins C (Colored)	" 28	Boy
	Mrs. Jane Watlington	July 9	Girl
	Amanda Simpson C	July 22	Boy
	Martha Simpson C	" 29	Boy
	Mrs. Eliza Paschal	Sept. 11	Girl
	Mrs. Martha Moore	" 15	Girl
	Mrs. Elizabeth Sutton	25	Girl

1862	Mrs. Rebecca Younger		Feb. 1	Boy (died in delivery by turning)
	Mrs. Catherine Apple		" 17	Girl
	Zina Chrismon	C	" 28	Boy
	Sena Simpson	C	March 11	Girl
	Leonna Walker	C	" 12	Boy
	Jane Watlington	C	" 13	Boy
	Mrs. Angeline Mateer		April 9	Boy
	Mrs. Mag. Brannock		June 29	Boy
	Mrs. Millie Hughes Sutton		July 2	Boy (abortion)
	Mrs. Nancy Cannady		" 24	Boy & Girl
	Mrs. Lizzie Cannady		August 12	Girl
	Mrs. Lienticia Terrell		Nov 11	Boy
	Mrs. Parthina Paschal		Nov 14	Boy
	Margaret Garrett	C	Dec 25	Boy
	Easter Herbin	C	" 26	Girl
1863	Mary Herbin	C	Jan 17	Boy
	Martha Simpson	C	Feb 20	Boy
	Mary Watlington	C	March 3	Girl
	Eliza Saunders	C	March 6	Boy
	Mrs. Thersa Bowmon		April 14	Girl (abortion)
	Tamsey Lewis	C	May 9	Boy
	Mary Matkins	C	" 10	Boy
	Mrs. Henrietta Underwood		June 20	Boy
	Mrs. Rebecca Swift		July 4	Boy
	Mrs. Sarah Matkins		July 11	Girl (abortion 3 mo.)
	Mrs. Sallie Foster		Sept 9	Girl
	Mrs. Margaret J. Jones		Sept 23	Girl
	Easter Herbin		Nov. 25	Boy
	Mrs. Nancy Underwood		Decr 1	Boy
	Mrs. Nancy Smithy		" 17	Boy
1864	Mrs. Nancey Wilson		Feb 13	Boy
	Mrs. Fannie Hooper		" 14	Girl
	Mrs. Sallie Clapp		" 17	Boy
	Gena Simpson		April 13	Girl
	Mrs. Jane Brincefield		" 17	Girl
	Mary Simpson		" 25	Girl
	Edith Watlington		" 27	Girl

Dr. Joseph H. Simpson's Birth Books

1864	Mrs. Thersia Bowmon		May 14	Boy
	Mrs. Minerva Summers		" 23	Boy
	Martha Foster		" 26	Boy
	Mrs. Fannie Summers		June 11	Boy
	Martha Simpson	C	June 27	Boy
	Mrs. Jane Watlington		July 31	Boy
	Mrs. Eliza Paschal		August 1	Girl
	Mrs. Hester Ann Brann		Sept 4	
				2 Boys & 1 Girl
	Betsy Brannock	C	Nov 12	Girl
1865	Mifs Mary Chatham		" 22	Girl
	Mrs. Rosa A. Brannock		" 28	Girl
	Lou Simpson	C	Jan 4	Boy
	Mrs. Smithey		Feb 14	Boy
	Mrs. Judia Custice	C	July 15	Girl
	Mary Watlington	C	Nov. 5	Girl
1866	Mrs. Mary Busick		Jan 8	Girl
	" Sarah Matkins		" 18	Boy
	" Jane Watlington		" 31	Girl
	" Susan Matkins		Feb 1	Girl (2d book says Boy)
	" Jane Brincefield		" 7	Boy
	Henrietta Underwood		Sept 13	Girl
	" Lizzie Guynn		Feb 10	Boy
	" Bell Watlington		May 26	Boy
	" Mary Lewis		June 18	Boy
	Martha Foster	C	July 10	Girl
1867	Adaline Simpson	C	Jan 24	Girl
	Mrs. Mag. Simpson		Feb 9	Boy
	" Lizzie Tate		March 5	Girl
	Mrs. Mary Lewis		Sept 4	Boy
	Mrs. Margarette Maynard		Sept 4	Boy
	" Nancy Roscow		Sept 5	Girl
	" Sarah Lewis		Sept 10	Girl
	" Lizzie Guynn		(blank)	Girl
	" Jane Watlington		Now 14	Girl
	" Susan Matkins		Nov 19	Boy
	" Sarah Matkins		Dec 16	Boy

1867	" Rosa Ann Chatham	Dec 19	Girl
1868	" Emily Massey	Feb 12	Boy
	" Missouriia Busick	Feb 16	Girl
	" Mary J. Matkins	Feb 18	Boy
	" Jane Brincefield	Jan 27	Boy
	" Sallie Clapp	May 16	Girl
1869	Susan Walker	April 11	Boy
	Mrs. Sallie Foster	May 6	Boy
	Francis Guynn	Aug 8	Boy
	Jinnie Simpson	Aug 11,	Girl
	Nannie Page	Aug 20	Girl
	Mrs. Mag. Simpson	Oct 30	Boy
	" Jane Hutchingson	Jan 6	Boy
	" Sallie Jones	Jan 31	Boy
	" Rosa Brannock	Feb 5	Girl
	Easter Simpson Col	Feb 18	Girl
	Martha Allen	March 27	Boy
	Mary J. Matkins	Aug 19	Boy
	Mrs. McKinney	April 2	Boy
	Nancy Underwood	May 31	Boy
	Hannah Staddler	June 6	Boy
	Z. A. McDowell	Aug 20	Boy
	Lizzie Gwyn	Sept 19	Boy
	Mag Waynick	Oct 12	Girl
	Jane Watlington	Oct 18	Girl
	Mag Kernoddle	Oct 21	Girl
	Missouriia Busick	Nov 22	Girl
	Cornilia Terrell	Dec 23	Girl
1870	Mrs. Meridy Woods	May 1	Girl
	Mag Hopkins	Aug 1	Boy (2d says Aug 13)
	Mag Simpson	Sept 24	Girl
	Adalada Madren	Decr 3	Boy
	Nannie Brannock	Oct 18	Boy
1871	Sarah Matkins	Jan 26	Boy
	Susan Walker	Jan 31	Boy
	Annie Chatham	June 16	Boy

1871	Rosa A. Brannock	July 7	Boy
	Jane Brincefield	Oct 26	Girl
	Nannie Page	Decr 1	Girl
	Josephine Walker	Decr 11	Boy
1872	Martha Allen C	May 19	Boy
	Mrs. Merady Woods	June 26	Girl
	" Letitia Terrell	Aug 3	Girl
	Mrs. Jane Watlington	June 28	Girl
	Manerva Lambeth	July 10	Girl (abortion, 6 mo.)
	Mrs. Mary Jane Guynn	Sept 17	Girl
	" McKinney	Sept 26	Boy
	" Mag. Simpson	Oct 29	Boy
1873	Mrs. Sarah Keck	Jan 5	Girl
	" Nannie Page	Jan 27	Girl
	" Z. A. McDowell	July 19	Girl
	" Nannie Brannock	July 20	Girl
	" Missouriia Busick	July 30	Boy
	" Duella Lewis	April 13	Girl
	" Mary Jane Matkins	October 13	Boy
	" Julia Watlington C	Nov 24	Boy
	" Rosa Ann Brannock	Nov 27	Boy
	" Sarah Matkins	October 22	Boy
	" Susan Walker	Decr 3	Boy
	Martha Allen C	May 1	Girl
	Mrs. Nannie Terrell	Sept 22	Girl
	" Mag. Simpson	Decr 29	Boy
1874	Sallie Herbin C	Feb 27	Boy
	Mrs. Letitia Underwood	June 17	Girl
	" Sallie Keck	Sept 11	Girl
	" Merady Woods	Nov 3	Boy
1875	Mrs. Frances Garrison	Jan 28	Boy
	" Jane Brincefield	June 6	Girl
	" Missouriia Busick	June 21	Boy
	" Margaret Herbin	June 27	Boy
	" Sallie Maynard	June 30	2 Girls
	" Lizzie Apple	Aug 11	Boy

1875	" Amanda Graves	Sept 3	Girl
	" Nannie Brannock	Sept 10	Girl
	" Nannie Page	Oct 6	Girl
	" Alice Summers	Oct 7	Boy
	" Susan Sunners	Oct 25	Girl (Cranistory)
	" Duella Lesis	Oct 31	Boy
	" Jane Watlington	Dec 1	Girl
	" Susan Matkins	Dec 23	Girl
	" Alice Moore Col	Dec 29	Boy
1876	Mrs. Rosa Ann Chatham	Jan 14	Boy
	" Lizzie Gynn	Jan 18	Girl
	" Sallie Lewis	Jan 25	Boy
	" Ella Swift	Feb 26	Girl
	Mifs Frances Brincefield	July 10	Boy
	Mrs. Nerry Inggold	July 27	Boy
	Mrs. Bertie Boon	Oct 13	Boy (cr by 5.00)
	Mrs. Mag. Simpson	Oct 25	Boy
	Ruth Simpson	Nov 24	Boy
	Martha Allen C	Decr 14	Girl
1877	Mrs. Nannie Matkins	Feb 14	Boy
	" Susan Summers	Feb 27	Boy
	" Nannie Page	March 29	Boy
	" Allis Summers	Mar 31	Boy
	" Lydia Kernodle	April 7	Boy
	" Sarah Matkins	April 8	Boy
	" Fannie Matlock	May 10	Boy
	" Nannie Totton	June 19	Girl
	" Bettie Pettigrew	June 30	Boy
	Eliza Jane Apple	July 23	Boy
	" Susan Matkins	Aug 1	Girl
	" Annie Waynick	Aug 26	Boy
	" Lizzie Gynn	Sept 19	Boy
	" Nannie Brannock	Oct 21	Girl
	" Barbary Noah	Decr 1	Boy
	" Meridy Woods	Decr 15	Boy
	" Duella Lewis	Decr 23	Boy
1878	" Mildred Ward	Jan 9	Girl
	" Martha Moore	Feb 1	Girl

1878	Mrs. Louisa Brown	March 20	Boy
	" Ella Swift	March 29	Boy
	" Eliza Brincefield	April 10	Boy
	(2d book says Woods)		
	" Rosa Brannock	May 14	Boy
	" Margaret Brown	June 25	Boy
	" Bettie Pettigrew	Sept 22	Boy
	" Emma E. Carrell	Oct 1	Girl
	" Bettie Boon	Oct 9	Boy
	" Alice Underwood	Oct 18	Girl
1879	Mrs. Sarah Vinson	Feb 2	Boy
	" Ellen Brown	May 8	Boy
	" Fannie Totten	May 30	Boy
	" Louisa Brown	June 6	Girl
	" Eliza Oakley	June 12	Girl
	" Nerry Ingold	July 25	Girl
	" Missouri Busick	July 10	Boy
	" Hannah Staddler	July 21	Girl
	" Nannie Brannock	Aug 7	Girl
	" Mag. Waynick	March 6	Girl
	" Mary Cox	Sept 3	Girl
	" Eliza Sartin	Sept 12	Girl
	" Bell Hooper	Sept 30	Boy
	" Huldy Apple	Nov 20	Boy
	" Basley Tate	Decr 19	Girl
	" Nannie Page	Decr26	Girl
1880	Mrs. Mary Jane Matkins	Jan 15	Boy
	" Bettie Pettigrew	Jan 19	Boy
	" Sallie Smith	Jan 22	Girl
	" Barbary Noah	Jan 29	Boy
	" Elizabeth Pennix	Jan 29	Girl
	" Sarah Matkins	March 10	Boy
	" Martha Moore	March 29	Boy
	Mrs. Alice Underwood	April 3	Girl
	Lou Harden	April 24	Girl
	" Julia Allen	May 1	Boy
	" Rosa A. Brannock	May 24	Boy
	" Manerva Summers	May 27	Girl
	" Fannie King	July 2	Boy

1880	" Julia Ann Dawson	July 30	Boy
	" Nannie Simpson	Aug 13	Boy (entry blocked out in 2d bk.)
	" Lizzie Guynn	Aug 18	Boy
	" Bettie Boon	Oct 9	Girl
	" Eliza Paschal	Oct 28	Boy
	" Annie McKinney	Nov 26	Girl
1881	Jennie Johnson	Jan 13	Girl
	Mrs. Nannie Page	Jan 28	Girl (2nd book says 18 Jan)
	" Emma E. Carroll	Jan 31	Girl
	Mifs Dona Canady	March 10	Girl
	Mrs. Martha Terrell	March 17	Boy
	" Caleb Smith	May 5	Boy
	" Mag Waynick	June 24	Boy
	" Mag Faucett	July 9	Boy
	" Eliza Woods	July 17	Boy
	" Emma Hubbard	Aug 12	Boy
	" Julia Waynick	Aug 13	Boy
	" Missouri Busick	Aug 20	Girl
	" Emma Poe C	Sept 1	Girl
	" Alice Underwood	Sept 24	Girl
	" Lydia Kernodle	Sept 27	Girl
	" Nannie Brannock	Oct 8	Girl
	" Mariah Brown	Oct 17	Boy
	" Martha Moore	Oct 27	Girl
	" Merry Ingold	Decr 14	Boy
1882	Mrs. Elizabeth Pinnix	Feb 21	Boy
	" Duella Lewis	March 5	Boy
	" Ella Swift	March 13	Girl
	" Nancy Allen C	March 24	Boy
	Mrs. Sarah Jordan	April 9	Girl
	" Sallie B. Maynard	June 10 - 11	2 Girls
	" Martha Brown	July 15	Girl
	" Martha Terrell	Aug 7	Boy (2d Book says Girl)
	" Nannie Page	Aug 13	Boy
	" Bosly Tate	Aug 14	Boy
	" Ann McKinney	Sept 10	Boy

Dr. Joseph H. Simpson's Birth Books

1882	Mrs. Fannie McKinney	Nov 10	Girl
	" Celia Bouldin	Nov 20	Boy
1883	Mrs. Mag. Faucette	Jan 22	Boy
	Mrs. Lizzie Guynn	Jan 23	Boy
	Mrs. Mary Jane Watkins	Jan 23	Girl
	Mrs. Frances E. Matkins	Feb 5	Boy (Craniatory)
	" Sarah Vinson	Feb 17	Boy
	" Eliza Woods	May 5	Girl
	" Emma E. Carroll	June 27	Boy
	" Cora Kernodle	June 29	Girl
	" Eliza Jane Stallings	Aug 19	Girl
	" Nannie Matkins	Aug 28	Girl
	Mrs. Julia Waynick	Oct 13	Boy
	Annie McKinnie	Nov 14	Boy
	Sarah Matkins	Decr 29	Girl
1884	Martha Moore	Jan 5	Girl
	Mrs. Nannie Page	Jan 15	Boy
	" Bell Hatchett	Feb 7	Girl (2d Book says Jan)
	" Jim Whitt	April 8	Boy
	" Priscilla Page	May 3	Boy
	" Mag Herbin	June 12	Boy
	" Susan Matkins	Aug 26	Girl
	" Mary Y. Gilliam	Nov 27	Girl
1885	Mrs. Mag Waynick	Jan 22	Girl
	" Alice Summers	March 1	Girl
	Mrs. Mag Kernodle	March 11	Boy
	Mrs. Missouri Busick	March 17	Boy
	" Eliza Boulds	April 12	Girl
	" Julia Vinson	April 19	Boy
	" Emma Saunders	May 5	Boy
	" Mag Faucette	May 13	Girl
	" Emma E. Carrell	May 19	Girl
	" Julia A. Dawson	July 10	Girl
	" Laura E. Gwyn	Aug 23	Girl
	" Eliza Woods	Aug 25	Boy
	" Timisia Delass	Aug 30	Boy

1885	" Annie McKinney	Sept 1	Girl
	" Sarah Jordan	Oct 19	Boy
	" Dora Watlington	Oct 23	Boy
	" Mag Brown	Nov 9	Girl
	" Misouria Jordan	Dec 7	Girl (Craniatory)
	" Julia Waynick	Dec 17	Boy
	Ellen Brown C	Nov 19	Boy (2d Book says Dec)

1886	Rachel Wynick	Feb 1	Boy
	Ellis Sartin	Feb 1	Boy

Note: Blue Book #1 ends here - Brown Book #2 Continues; only one entry after this date.

1886	Mrs. Roberts	March 17	1 Boy, 2 Girls
	" Emma Hubbard	March 19	Boy
	" Nannie Brannock	April 5	Girl
	" Ann Kelly	April 8	Girl
	" Mary Pritchett	April 14	Girl
	" Jennie Kernodle	April 27	Boy
	" Duella Lewis	May 23	Boy
	" Mag Herbin	July 12	Girl
	" Lizzie Gwynn	July 21	Boy
	" Lucy A. Cobb	Oct 25	Boy
	" Missouri Jordan	Decr 15	Boy

1887	Mrs. Eliza Woods	April 25	Boy
	Sallie McCollum	Jan 25	Boy
	Mrs. Elizabeth Pinnix Col	Mar 8	Boy
	Mrs. Millie Brown Col	Mar 9	Girl
	Dora Wheeler	June 21	Boy
	Mrs. Alice Summers	July 16	Boy
	" Susan Matkins	July 30	Girl
	" Mary E. Matkins	Aug 28	Girl
	" Mollie Kernodle	Sept 28	Boy (Still Born)
	" Bell Watkins	Oct 2	Boy
	" Timisia Delass	Oct 15	Boy
	" Dora Watlington	Oct 21	Girl
	" Anna Lambeth	Oct 25	Boy
	Emma Whitt Col	Feb ____	Girl

1887	Mrs. Julia Dawson	Oct 26	Boy
	" Bettie Roberts	Nov 7	Girl
	" Sallie Mitchell	Nov 9	Girl
	" Annie Walters	Nov 13	Boy
	" Eliza Jane Stallings	Nov 27	Girl
	" Rosa Boswell	Decr 3	Girl
1888	Mrs. Rebecca Graves	Feb 21	Girl
	" Ellen Brown	March 5	Boy
	" Sarah Matkins	March 9	Girl
	" Julia Waynick	March 10	Girl
	" Alice Kernodle	Mar 20	Girl
	" Dora Scott	March 28	Girl
	" Hock Watkins	April 12	Boy
	Mrs. Susan Smith	May 12	Girl
	Mrs. Missouri Jordan	May 16	Girl
	Mrs. Emma E. Carrell	May 25	Boy
	Duella Lewis	July 30	Boy
	Mag Waynick	Aug 1	Girl
	Hunter L. Garrison	Aug 3	Girl (Craniatory)
	Mollie Gwynn	Aug 16	Boy
	Mrs. Ben McKinney	Aug 20	Boy
	" Ellen Henderson	Aug 22	Boy (by turning)
	" Millie Brown C	Aug 27	Boy
	" Bettie Hunter Faucette	Sept 16	Girl
	" Mag Faucette	Sept 26	Girl
	" Farevah Walker	Oct 2	Boy
	" Ella Allen	Nov 6	Boy
	" Lucy Garrett	Nov 11	Boy
	" Ann Kelly	Nov 15	Boy
	" Dora Williams	Nov 20	Boy
	" Nannie Walker	Decr 15	Boy
1889	Alice Page	March 28	Girl
	Mrs. Summers	April 26	Boy
	Mrs. Bettie Roberts	April 27	Boy
	" Mary E. Matkins	May 29	Boy
	" Sarah Hubbard	May 21	Boy
	" Ellis Sartin	May 27	Boy
	Mrs. Philemon Walker	June 29	Boy
	Mrs. Eliza Woods	June 29	Boy

1889	Mrs. Hunter L. Garrison	Aug 2	Boy
	Jennie Howard C	Oct 12	Girl
	Mrs. Bell Hooper	Nov 26	Boy
1890	Mrs. Mag Faucette	Feb 19	Girl
	Mrs. Julia A. Dawson	April 9	girl
	" Emma Saunders	May 12	Boy
	Miss Nancy Cole	May 25	Girl
	Mrs. Ella E. Carrell	June 23	Boy
	" Bettie Chambers	July 17	Girl (Cranistory)
	Jane Slade C	Sept 3	Boy
	Mrs. Louisa Pritchett	Oct 7	Boy
	" Bettie Bouldin	Oct 22	Boy (Forceps)
	" Ellen Henderson C	Nov 7	Girl (Turning)
	" Mariah Brown C	Deer 7	Boy (Turning)
1891	Mrs. Julia Waynick	Jan 3	Girl
	" Lena Herbin	Jan 15	Giral
	" Jane Cook	Jan 21	Boy
	" Manerva Simpson C	Jan 22	Boy (Still Born)
	" Martha Terrell	Feb 5	Boy
	" Jennie Howard Colord	Feb 10	Boy
	" Bettie Gwyn	March 2	Girl
	" Sarah Hubbard	March 7	Girl (abortion, 6mo)
	" Jennie Hughes	April 30	Boy
	" Jennie Hall	May 17	Girl
	" Alice Summers	June 14	Boy
	" Timisia Delap	July 2	Girl
	" Mary Cox	July 5	Girl
	" Duella Lewis	Aug 29	Girl
	" Lola Brannock C	Sept 2	Boy
	" Ellen Brown C	Sept 2	Girl
	Ann Eliza Staddler	Oct 2	Boy
	Mrs. Winnie Underwood	Oct 9	Boy
	" Dean Ware	Oct 26	Boy
	" Bettie Roberts	Oct 29	Girl
	" Lula Combs	Nov 6	Boy
	" Alice Page	Nov 30	Boy

Dr. Joseph H. Simpson's Birth Books

1892	Mrs. Nannie Martin	Jan 17	Girl
	" Julia Ann Gilliam	Feb 3	Girl
	Mrs. Eliza Woods	March 3	Boy
	Mrs. Charles Marble	March 4	Twins(Boy Mar 2 Girl Mar 4)
	Mrs. Mag Faucette	March 14	Boy
	Mrs. Walters	April 9	Girl
	" Mary E. Matkins	April 11	Girl
	" Suarah Hubbard	May 8	Girl
	" Sallie Lewis	May 16	Girl
	" Missouri Jordan	May 20	Boy
	" Julia A. Dawson	May 25	Girl
	" Jane Cook	June 16	Girl
	" Manerva Simpson C	June 20	Boy
	" Bell Jones	July 24	Boy
	" Sarah Matkins	July 28	Girl
	" Louisa Pritchett	Oct 28	Girl
	" Lena Herbin	Nov 2	Boy

TOTAL 436

Certified by me a Notary Public of Guilford County to be a true and exact copy of births as recorded by Dr. J. Hawkins Simpson.

N. E. Greene, Notary Public 3-2-74

My Comm. Expires: Feb. 25, 1976

The Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

Officers

President.....	Hassel B. Gann, Mayodan
Vice-President.....	Jamie Smith, Stoneville
Recording Secretary.....	Mrs. Cora Ann Turner, Eden
Corresponding Secretary.....	Michael Perdue, Wentworth
Treasurer.....	Wayne Parleir, Eden

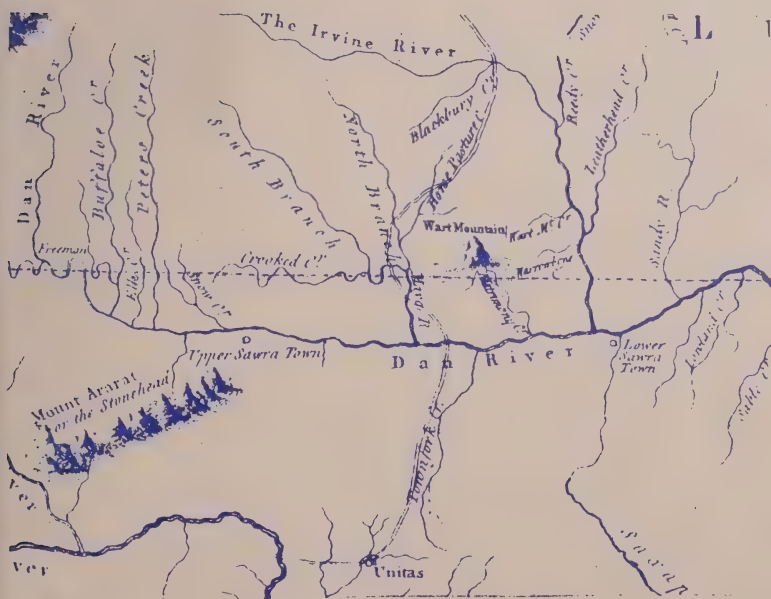
Directors

George A. Atkins	Eden
Robert W. Carter, Jr.....	Reidsville
Mrs. Robbin G. Dodson	Stoneville
Don Hoover.....	High Point
James R. Meador.....	Wentworth
Mrs. Lib Meador	Wentworth
Mrs. Peggy Osborne.....	Eden
Mrs. Zelma Scott.....	Stoneville
Rich Seybert	Ruffin
Mrs. Linda C. Vernon.....	Stoneville

Honorary Directors

Lindley S. Butler	Wentworth
Mrs. Lillian Coleman.....	Reidsville
Mrs. Lucy M. Rankin.....	Reidsville
Charles D. Rodenbough	Madison
V. Siler Rothrock	Reidsville

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy



The Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

VOLUME XIII

NUMBER 2

DECEMBER, 1988

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy

The journal is published semiannually in June and December by the Rockingham County Historical Society, Box 84, Wentworth, N.C. 27375. Members of the society, for which the annual dues are \$8.00 for an individual and \$12.00 for a family membership, receive the journal. Single issues may be purchased for \$3.50 per number plus 50 cents mailing charge.

Editorial Policy

The publication committee is interested in receiving articles on the history and genealogical source materials of Rockingham County and the adjacent area. The historical articles must be well written and thoroughly documented. Genealogical articles should consist of previously unpublished primary source materials pertaining to Rockingham County, such as abstract of local records and edited diaries, letters, or church records. Papers on family history should not be submitted. All copy, including footnotes, should be typed double-space. Articles and correspondence should be sent to the editor: Robert W. Carter, Jr., Route 2, Box 762, Reidsville, N.C. 27320.

Cover Illustration

The Fry-Jefferson Map of Virginia and a portion of North Carolina was completed in 1751 and revised in 1755. The map lists the location of both Upper and Lower Saura Town in the northern Piedmont. From William P. Cumming's, *The Southeast in Early Maps* (Chapel Hill: The University of North Carolina Press, 1962), plate 58.

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy

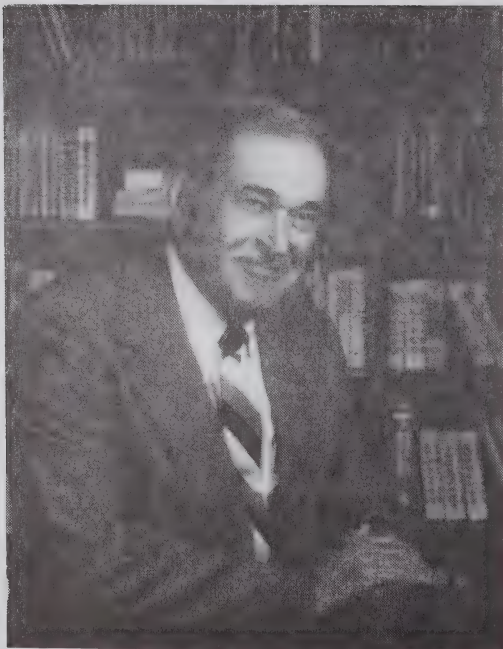
VOLUME XIII

DECEMBER, 1988

NUMBER 2

CONTENTS

A History Unwritten: The Colonial Period Sara Indians of The Carolina Piedmont by Richard A. Seybert.....	51
Death and Marriage Abstracts From The Raleigh Christian Advocate abstracted by Michael Perdue	63
North Carolina Legislative Papers transcribed by Betty J. Baker.....	72
Index for June and December 1988 Journals compied by Don Hoover.....	77



HASSEL BABER GANN

1918 - 1988

President Rockingham County Historical Society

1985 - 1988

A HISTORY UNWRITTEN:

THE COLONIAL PERIOD SARA INDIANS OF THE CAROLINA PIEDMONT

by

Richard A. Seybert

PREFACE

This essay is the initial portion of a two part study of the historic period Sara Indians who inhabited the Dan River Valley. The first article explores historical references to the Sara. The second article will present the results of archaeological investigations of Sara village sites along the Dan River in Stokes and Rockingham counties and discuss Sara culture in relation to ethnographic references to other Siouan Piedmont tribes.

The impetus for the publication of these articles is the resumption of archaeological fieldwork in Rockingham County by the Research Laboratories of Anthropology at the University of North Carolina. The work conducted in 1988, under the guidance of H. Trawick Ward and R. P. Stephen Davis, Jr., represents a "Golden Anniversary" for archaeological study in our county. In the fall of 1938 Dr. Joffre Coe, a pioneer of North Carolina archaeology, excavated a site outside of Eden. Initially thought to be the Lower Saratown site referred to in historical writings, the site is now dated to the prehistoric period on the basis of further analysis of the artifacts. The dig stimulated a prolonged interest in the Siouan tribes of the Piedmont.

Archaeological fieldwork in the Dan River Valley resumed in 1972 at the site of historic Upper Saratown near Walnut Cove in Stokes County and continued for 10 consecutive seasons. Unfortunately, these excavations were initiated to mitigate the effect of "looters" or "pothunters" who were indiscriminately digging into, and destroying the scientific value of, the Upper Saratown villages.

The current excavations are part of a three year study of Indian tribes in the Haw, Eno and Dan River drainages known as the

Siouan Project. By examining late prehistoric and historic period sites, the archaeologists hope to elucidate cultural changes among the native tribes resulting from contact with European traders and colonists. Members of the Historical Society have been active in this learning process through their volunteer efforts. Hopefully, the information presented in these articles will encourage more Society members to participate in future excavations by becoming “hands-on historians.”

Note: The varied spellings of the Sara tribal name have been retained in their original form to acquaint the reader with the complexities encountered while attempting historical research of Indian tribes.

THE HISTORICAL RECORD

A world that vanished in the space of two centuries is easier to mourn than to study. Few American Indian groups have left as little trace of themselves in the historical record as the peoples of the Carolina-Virginia Piedmont. Distant from initial European settlements, overshadowed by more prominent neighbors like the Powhatan and Cherokee, the upcountry Indian attracted little attention from observers willing and able to put their impressions down on paper for the benefit of posterity.

-James H. Merrell, 1987¹

The Sara Indians were one of several dozen small tribes inhabiting the Piedmont region of Virginia and the Carolinas immediately prior to and during the European colonization of eastern North America. On the basis of limited linguistic evidence and cultural similarities, these tribes are grouped together and classified as Siouan Indians.² It is believed that several centuries after the time of Christ, the ancestors of these hill tribes separated from a larger population to the north and west, traversed the Appalachians, and occupied the region between the ancestral Cherokee of the mountains and Algonquian speaking tribes of the Coastal Plain.³

In 1540 Spanish explorer Hernando de Soto left Florida in search of the Indian nation of Cofitachique and fabled “gold-bearing mountains” said to exist to the north. On Friday, May 21, as they moved westward through the Carolina foothills, the de Soto expedition entered an Indian village they identified as Xualla. This meeting is be-

lieved by most researchers to mark the initiation of cultural and biological exchange between European colonists and the Sara Indians.⁴ This interaction would culminate in tribal dissolution of the Sara in little more than two centuries.

The Spanish again contacted the Sara in 1566 when Juan Pardo travelled the same general area de Soto had 26 years earlier. Pardo constructed a garrison in what he indentified as Joara [Sara] Country. Recent research suggests the location of Xualla/Joara may have been on the upper Catawba River near present Marion, North Carolina.⁵ Pardo journeyed to the Spanish settlement of Santa Elena on the South Carolina coast, leaving Lt. Hernando Boyano in charge. When Pardo returned the following year, the garrison had been destroyed by the Indians and Boyano and his troops had vacated. Such hostility on the part of the Indians is not surprising in view of the fact that the Spanish routinely raided Indian villages to seize slaves, guides and food supplies and indiscriminately murder those Indians who resisted.⁶ The Spanish soon abandoned the settlements in the Carolina interior. Several late 16th century maps such as Ortelius (1584) and Wytfliet (1597) continue to show the Sara village in the area of present far western South Carolina or southwestern North Carolina.⁷

For unknown reasons, perhaps the Spanish incursions, devastation of European diseases or movement of other Indian tribes, the Sara moved northward through the Carolina Piedmont to the Dan River Valley. Archaeological evidence from sites in Stokes County indicates their presence on the Dan during or prior to the 1620's.⁸

Through intermediary tribes such as the Occaneechi, Virginia traders had established indirect commercial ties with most of the Siouan tribes of Piedmont Virginia and North Carolina by the 1650's.⁹ Despite the existence of this trade network, no references are made to the Sara Indians during the mid 17th century.

The establishment of the South Carolina settlement at Charles Town in 1670 prompted an interest by Colonial Virginia in more extensive development of frontier trade. A series of westward expeditions soon began: John Lederer, 1669-1670; Thomas Batts and Robert Fallam, 1671; and James Needham and Gabriel Arthur, 1673-1674. Several of these journeys produced recorded contacts with the Sara.

During his second trip in 1670, the German explorer John Lederer claimed to have visited the Sara.¹⁰ He noted their village on the map he made of his journey through Virginia and North Carolina. Distortions and inaccuracies in the map make it of little value in

locating the Sara or other Indian villages. During his supposed stay at the Sara village, some children were chastised by Lederer after using his horse for target practice. The incident resulted in his hasty departure.¹¹

In April of 1673, the Virginia trader Abraham Wood sent two of his employees, James Needham and Gabriel Arthur, westward through Carolina in search of riches to be gained in trade with frontier Indians. They encountered Tomahittan [Cherokee] Indians who led them to their village in the Carolina mountains. After the two had separated, Needham was murdered by an Occaneechi Indian guide named John/Hascoll while they encamped near the "Yattken" Town. The murder was the result of an argument between Needham and John after Needham had chastised another Indian for losing his burden in the "Sarrah" River near the "Sarrah" village. Arthur was forced to remain with the Tomahittan Indians at their village and accompany them on numerous adventures. After gaining his freedom, Arthur returned to the same Sara village in 1674 and was sought by Occaneechi Indians who had been awaiting his arrival. He escaped detection and the following day hired four Sara to carry packs. The Sara accompanied him as far as Eno Town but would go no further for fear of the Occaneechi who controlled much of the trade with the remoter tribes of the Piedmont.¹²

These accounts of the Sara Indians have been interpreted by most researchers to locate the Sara villages along the Occaneechi Trading Path near Trader's Ford on the Yadkin River. One recent study argues convincingly for a Dan River location of the Sara villages, suggesting that Needham & Arthur took a path leading due west from Eno Town rather than following the Great Trading Path. It is noted that none of the larger tribes known to have lived along the Great Trading Path west of Eno Town (e.g., Essaw, Ushery, Catawba, Keyauwee, Wateree) are mentioned in the preceding accounts upon leaving the Sara villages. Additionally, no Sara type artifacts have been found at archaeological sites along the Yadkin River. An abundance of Sara artifacts dated to the late 1600's have been recovered from the Dan River sites.¹³

Further evidence for Sara occupation of the Dan River during the 1670's is provided in the works of William Byrd II. Byrd journeyed through present Rockingham County both during and following his 1728 survey of the North Carolina-Virginia boundary. Writing in his "Journey to the Land of Eden" in 1733, he states:

A mile after that we forded another stream which we called Hatcher Creek, from two Indian traders of that

name who used formerly to carry goods to the Sauro Indians. Near the banks of this creek I found a large beech tree with the following inscription cut upon the bark of it, "JH, HH, BB lay here the 24th of May, 1673." It was not difficult to fill up these initials with the following names, Joseph Hatcher, Henry Hatcher, and Benjamin Bullington, three Indian traders who had lodged near that place sixty years before in their way to the Sauro town.¹⁴

In 1701 English explorer John Lawson extensively chronicled Indian lifestyles in the Carolinas. Unfortunately, he failed to contact the Sara, indicating that they were one of the few tribes which had not moved near to the Great Trading Path and likely still remained in the Dan Valley. Extensive use of Lawson's ethnographic data has been made by archaeologists and his accounts will be discussed in detail in the second article.

The Sara departure from the Dan Valley, like their arrival, cannot be precisely determined from the historical record. Byrd offers some insight on the general period of withdrawal. On October 1, 1733, he wrote:

But then on a sudden the scene changed, and we were surprised with an opening of large extent where the Sauro Indians once lived, who had been a considerable nation. But the frequent inroads of the Senecas annoyed them incessantly and obliged them to remove from this fine situation about thirty years ago.¹⁵

This passage indicates that the primary cause of Sara withdrawal from the Dan Valley was repeated hostilities inflicted by northerly Iroquoian raiding parties. Other significant pressures were impacting the Sara at the same time and may have played an important role in their decision to move. The first decade of the 18th century was a period of widespread cultural and political upheaval which resulted in the movement of many tribes on the Coastal Plain and Piedmont.

While there are no direct historical references to the effect of European diseases upon the Sara, the devastation wrought among other Indian tribes is well documented.¹⁶ Archaeological evidence from burials at the Upper Saratown villages indicate the Sara population was likewise drastically reduced by alien microbes.¹⁷

During the first decade of the 18th century, trade with the Indians of the Carolina and Virginia Piedmont became increasingly exploitative. The Occaneechi were destroyed by colonial forces during Bacon's Rebellion in 1676. Removal of the Occaneechi as middlemen opened the way to direct trade between Euramericans and fron-

tier tribes. The remote tribes sought more utilitarian trade goods, such as metal tools and firearms, and unscrupulous traders demanded larger quantities of deerskins in payment. The harvest of deerskins for export became massive. South Carolina exported in excess of 50,000 skins annually during the first 15 years of the century with a peak of 121,355 in 1707. Many Indians became hopelessly indebted.¹⁸ European colonists on the Coastal Plain began to encroach upon Indian lands and diminish hunting territories.¹⁹ These abuses prompted the movement of some tribes into unfamiliar territory, the coalescence of some smaller tribes, and culminated in the Indian wars of the second decade of the 18th century.

Whatever the reason(s) the Sara moved south and united with the Keyauwee inhabiting the Yadkin-Pee Dee River Valley.²⁰ Several notable mid 18th century maps document the major movements of the Sara. John Collet (1770) indicates colonial settlements in the vicinity of the abandoned Dan River Sara villages.²¹ "Upper Sawra Town" is located on the west bank of the Dan immediately north of Town Fork Creek. "Lower Sawra Town" is located on the south bank of the Dan downstream from the confluence of "Irvine" [Smith] River. Edward Moseley's map of 1733 places the "Saraus and Keeauwees" in a settlement on the east bank of the lower Yadkin-Pee Dee River.²² The "Saraw Old Town" is shown to the southeast of the Catawba nation on the east bank of the Pee Dee in John Mitchell's 1755 map.²³

During the winter of 1711-1712, Sara Warriors were recruited by Col. John Barnwell of South Carolina on a trip through the Pee Dee Valley. The Sara were to join Captain Barnaby Bull's company fighting the Tuscarora Indians of North Carolina who had reacted to European abuses with a series of massacres against the colonists. The Sara and most other Indians, with the exception of the Yamassee, abandoned the South Carolina forces before reaching Tuscarora territory.²⁴

A South Carolina Indian census of 1715 indicated "510 Sarows" living in a single village "170 miles N. of Charles Town."²⁵ This location corresponds with that of the Town Creek Indian Mound. Town Creek is a ceremonial center of the intrusive Pee Dee culture located near the confluence of the Little and Pee Dee Rivers in present Montgomery County, North Carolina. This site and the surrounding domestic villages were reclaimed by the smaller Siouan tribes driven from the area sometime between 1300-1400.²⁶ Recent archaeological investigations confirm the presence of Sara type ceramics and burials at Town Creek.²⁷

With the onset of the Yamassee War the Sara became involved in hostilities with the South Carolina government. A letter written in the spring of 1715 indicated "the Sarraws have ammunition from Virginia and that it is those who have done us the Mischief this Warr on the other side of Santee River."²⁸ When questioned about their source of ammunition, Waccamaw Indians who had concluded a peace treaty "answered that what little they had they got from the Sarraws who constantly used to carry Slaves, Skins and other goods taken from us (of which they had a large share) to Virginia in lieu of which they returned home with Ammunition and what else they wanted...."²⁹ From a North Carolina Executive Council meeting comes the following account:

The Honorable the Governor having laid before this Board a Letter from Collonell Wm. Brice Importing that a partie of Indians supposed to be Sawras have lately fallen upon them and Killed one White man and an Indian Slave of the Said Brices and that said Indians Appeare to be Extreamly well Armed and Provided with Ammunition and other Necessaryes by which we are induct to believe that they are a party of those Indians who have been lately Treating with the Government of Virginia and have been there Supply'd with those Armes Ammunition etc. Wherefore this board do humbly request that the Governor will be pleased to write to the Governor of Virginia and desire him that he will not Suffer any persons to trade with the Said Sawra Indians or any other of the Southward Indians untill they shall conclude a perfect peace with the Inhabittants as well of South Carolina as of this Government.³⁰

The Governor of South Carolina asked the North Carolina Council if "Indians and white men may be sent out to annoy the Sawraws and other of ye Northward Indians and Enemies" to his government. Governor Eden and the Council obliged by declaring war against the Sara and appointing "Tenn or Twelve voluntiers with such a number of Indians as he shall think fitt to goe out upon that Expedition...."³¹ During July, 1715 Governor Craven assembled a militia to march north, join with the forces of Maurice Moore from North Carolina, and subdue the Sara. Indian uprisings along the Edisto River diverted these troops and the anticipated battle with the Sara never occurred.

In fact, Governor Spotswood of Virginia had acted on several occasions to prevent trading violations among the Sara. Following en-

actment of the Indian Trading Act of 1714 he soon exercised his embargo powers. In July of 1715 a Cheraw headman, two Virginia traders and Indians with 6 horseloads of skins came to Fort Christanna in Southern Virginia. Spotswood ordered the goods impounded and the Indians and traders taken to Williamsburg under guard.³² Spotswood attempted to "Settle the Enoe, Sawra and Keeawawes Indians at Enoe Town...." but was denied permission to do so by the North Carolina Executive Council.³³ On repeated occasions the Sara sought resumption of trade with Virginia. There was evidently a desire to return near their 17th century home in the Dan Valley for in 1717 the Council of Colonial Virginia received "divers applications ...by the Saraw Indians and others incorporated with them for Liberty to Seat themselves on the head of the Roanoke River...."³⁴ The Council finally granted permission with the stipulation that the Indians educate their children at Fort Christanna. The Sara refused this conditional offer and remained on the upper Pee Dee River.

By 1718 the Sara had come to peace with South Carolina. The Catawba had become valuable allies of the colonial South Carolina government and many unfriendly remnant tribes, including the Sara, were encouraged to join them. Strained relations with both Carolinas, inability to return to their former territory near Virginia and continued attacks by northern Iroquois led many Sara to accept residence with the Catawba. Others waited until the 1720's to merge with the Catawba and some united with the Pee Dee (a Siouan tribe not to be confused with the prehistoric Pee Dee at Town Creek Indian Mound). The Sara and Pee Dee were, once again, attacked by a Seneca war party in 1723.³⁵ In 1732 the Saponi and Sara Indians were granted permission to settle on uninhabited land along the Roanoke or Appomattox Rivers. The Sara never exercised their option to move northward.

On August 4, 1737, John Thompson purchased the Pee Dee River lands belonging to the "Charrow" and "Peede" Indians for "300 heavy Buck Skins." The following year the South Carolina Assembly received a complaint that Catawba Indians had murdered colonists near present day Camden, South Carolina. Further investigation indicated that the murders were committed "...by the Charrows who live under their Protection..."³⁶

Despite their inclusion within the Catawba sphere of influence the Sara held tenaciously to their tribal identity. A Catawba headman told the President of the South Carolina Council "The Waccamaw's and Sarraws does not live along with me [i.e., they are not under my authority] and some are one way and some another [i.e., some

are peaceful toward the colony and some are not]....”³⁷

The Cheraw and Pee Dee remained with the Catawba until 1746 when they “prospered now to withdraw themselves from them [Catawbas], and to retire to some place of greater safety, where they might have fewer enemies....”³⁸ Anxious to maintain a strong Catawba buffer along the frontier, Governor Glen of South Carolina intervened at a meeting of the Catawba, Cheraw and Pee Dee.

The Governor took all the pistol rammers accompanying Pistols he had given the Indians & said that separated, the Indians could be broke as easy as he could break one of the Rammers, which he did. But if they continued together, they would be almost impossible to break as it is impossible for him to break a handfull of Rammers, which he picked up.

After this they all promised to continue together.³⁹

During the following decade Cheraw independence persisted. The onset of the French and Indian War prompted Governor Glen to send John Evans on a mission to

...learn the exact number of Warriours or Men able to go to War upon any Occasion. Do it in the most distinct Manner you can distinguishing how many Catawbaws, Cherraws and Pedees. At least be exact how many Warriours are in each town.⁴⁰

This effort resulted in the identification of five separate towns including a “Charraw Town” which could provide 56 warriors of the total 204 available from the Catawba nation.

Three years later, during a failed attempt to establish schools and missionize the Cheraw, Presbyterian minister William Richardson noted them living apart from the Catawba in Cheraw Town under the leadership of Cheraw George.⁴¹ In 1759 King Johnny led the Cheraw to war against the French and joined settlers in protesting Catawba hostilities along the frontier.⁴²

By the mid 18th century the fate of most small Siouan tribes, as well as some other refugee Indians, was linked to the fate of the Catawba who served as guardians of their mosaic nation. Smallpox epidemics in 1738, 1759, and shortly after the American Revolution devastated the Catawba nation. Accounts indicate Indian population may have been reduced by as much as one-half in these epidemics. In the 1750’s the first settlers began to encroach upon Catawba hunting ranges. This westward expansion of Euramerican population is well represented on the Mouzon map of 1775.⁴³ Deer population had been severely reduced. Iroquois war parties still plagued the Catawba. In the wake of these pressures came another

fatal blow, a prolonged period of drought during the 1750's. The Catawba corn-based agriculture failed and they were forced to rely on the mercy of South Carolina colonists' donations of food to avert massive starvation.¹⁴ Certainly the Cheraw living in the Catawba villages were similarly effected. The individuals and families who comprised the remnants of the Cheraw tribe passed silently from the historical record during the late 18th and 19th centuries. Although most Cheraw were probably amalgamated into Catawba culture, it has been suggested that some descendants of the Cheraw may be represented among the present day Lumbee Indians of Robeson and adjoining counties.¹⁵ Their tribal name survives in the town of Cheraw, South Carolina which is located on lands along the Pee Dee River where they once lived.

EPILOGUE

These historical glimpses of the Sara offer only the simplest outline of their passage through the 16th to 18th centuries. One general pattern of change observed from archaeological and historical evidence is the periodic decrease of population followed by coalescence. Population decreases were caused primarily by European diseases and to a lesser degree by warfare and slave trading. Coalescence initially took the form of small villages of the same tribe collapsing into larger villages along major water courses (i.e., Upper and Lower Saratown). As the cycle of contraction and coalescence repeated, the similarities between uniting populations became fewer. Different tribes sharing common language stocks, such as the Sara and Keyauwee, united during the early 1700's. Eventually tribes of different linguistic affiliations (Sara/Siouan - Saxapahaw/Iroquoian) were united. The final stage of this process of coalescence was marked by the inclusion of tribes into larger populations and the loss of tribal identity. For the Sara, this stage was reached in 1761 with the establishment of reservation status for the Indians of the Catawba nation.

Most historical references are political and/or military in nature. Thus, little is known about the daily conduct of domestic, ceremonial or spiritual affairs. These gaps in our knowledge may be filled partially through the assistance of archaeologists. Two decades of controlled excavation, analysis and interpretation of artifacts from Sara villages along the Dan River have begun to yield a significant amount of information about the processes of change in their culture. This changing world of the 17th century Sara Indians of the Dan Valley will be the focus of the next essay.

Notes

¹James H. Merrell, "This Western World: The Evolution of the Piedmont, 1525-1725," in *The Siouan Project: Seasons I and II*, eds. Roy S. Dickens, Jr., H. Trawick Ward and R. P. Stephen Davis, Jr., Research Laboratories of Anthropology, University of North Carolina, Monograph Series No. 1 (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina, 1987), p. 20.

²For an analysis of this linguistic classification see Charles M. Hudson, *The Catawba Nation*, University of Georgia Monographs, No. 18 (Athens, Ga.: University of Georgia Press, 1970).

³James H. Merrell, "Natives In A New World: The Catawba Indians of Carolina, 1650-1800" (Ph.D. Dissertation, The Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, 1982), pp. 29-30. Hereinafter cited as Merrell, "Natives."

⁴See for example John R. Swanton, *The Indians of the Southeastern United States*, Smithsonian Institution Bureau of American Ethnology, Bulletin No. 237 (Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution, 1946), p. 46. Identification of the Xualla/Joara as the Sara rests on linguistic transformations from Spanish to English. The possibility also exists that these Indians were not the Sara, and the Sara may have been on the Dan River at this early date. Archaeological investigations of the Spanish garrison sites and earlier Dan River sites could do much to clarify this situation.

⁵Jack H. Wilson, Jr., "A Study of the Late Prehistoric, Protohistoric, and Historic Indians of the Carolina and Virginia Piedmont: Structure, Process, and Ecology" (Ph.D. Dissertation, The University of North Carolina, Chapel Hill, 1983), p. 59. Hereinafter cited as Wilson, "Indians of Carolina and Virginia Piedmont."

⁶Merrell, "Natives," pp. 39-40.

⁷William P. Cumming, *The Southeast in Early Maps* (Chapel Hill, N. C.: University of North Carolina Press, 1962), plates 9 and 17.

⁸Jack H. Wilson, Jr., "Feature Fill, Plant Utilization and Disposal Among the Historic Sara Indians" (M.A. Thesis, The University of North Carolina, Chapel Hill, 1977), p. xiv. Hereinafter cited as Wilson, "Feature Fill."

⁹Merrell, "Natives," pp. 64-65.

¹⁰The validity of Lederer's accounts has been widely debated. For a discussion of his journeys see Wilson, "Indians of Carolina and Virginia Piedmont," pp. 83-86.

¹¹Douglas L. Rights, *The American Indian in North Carolina* (Winston-Salem: John F. Blair, 1957), p. 64.

¹²For a more detailed description of the journeys of Needham and Arthur see Clarence W. Alvord and Lee Bidgood, *The First Explorations of the Trans-Allegheny Region by the Virginians* (Cleveland: Arthur H. Clark Co., 1912) pp. 210-266.

¹³Wilson, "Indians of the Carolina and Virginia Piedmont," p. 385.

¹⁴William Byrd, "A Journey to the Land of Eden Anno 1733," in *The Prose Works of William Byrd of Westover*, ed. Louis B. Wright (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1966), p. 400.

¹⁵*Ibid.*, p. 398.

¹⁶See for example Henry F. Dobyn, *Their Number Become Thinned* (Knoxville: The University of Tennessee Press, 1983), pp. 8-26.

¹⁷Liane Navey, "An Introduction to the Mortuary Practices of the Historic Sara" (M.A. Thesis, The University of North Carolina, Chapel Hill, 1982), pp. 83-84.

¹⁸ Charles Hudson, *The Southeastern Indians* (Knoxville: The University of Tennessee Press, 1984), pp. 436-439.

¹⁹ *Ibid.*, pp. 434-439.

²⁰ Chapman J. Milling, *Red Carolinians* (Columbia: University of South Carolina Press, 1969), p. 219.

²¹ Cumming, *The Southeast in Early Maps*, plate 63.

²² *Ibid.*, plate 52.

²³ *Ibid.*, plate 59.

²⁴ For a detailed discussion of the Tuscarora War, see Merrell, "Natives," chapter III.

²⁵ Milling, *Red Carolinians*, p. 222.

²⁶ Hudson, *The Southeastern Indians*, p. 83.

²⁷ Wilson, "Feature Fill," p. xiii.

²⁸ William L. Saunders, ed., *Colonial Records of North Carolina* (New York: AMS Press, Inc., 1968), vol. 2, p. 252. Hereinafter cited as NCCR.

²⁹ NCCR, vol. 2, p. 252.

³⁰ *Ibid.*, pp. 246-247.

³¹ *Ibid.*, p. 243.

³² H. R. McIlwaine et. al., eds., *Executive Journals of the Council of Colonial Virginia* (Richmond: Virginia State Library, 1925-1966), vol. 3, pp. 405-406. Hereinafter cited as EJCCV.

³³ NCCR, vol. 2, pp. 242-243.

³⁴ EJCCV, vol. 3, p. 440.

³⁵ E. B. O'Callaghan, ed., *Documents Relative to the Colonial History of the State of New York* (Albany: Weed, Parsons & Co., 1853-1858), vol. 5, p. 793.

³⁶ J. H. Easterly, ed., *The Journal of the Common House of Assembly, November 10, 1736-June 7, 1739. The Colonial Records of South Carolina* (Columbia: The Historical Commission of South Carolina, 1951), p. 482, quoted in Wilson, "Indians of Carolina and Virginia Piedmont," p. 167.

³⁷ *South Carolina Upper House Journals*, 9 Sept. 1727, as quoted in Merrell, "Natives," p. 312.

³⁸ William Noel Sainsbury, compiler, *Records in the British Public Record Office Relating to South Carolina* (Columbia: South Carolina Archives Department, 1955), vol. 24, pp. 414-415.

³⁹ *South Carolina Gazette*, June 2, 1746, Number 636, page 1, quoted in Wilson, "Indians of Carolina and Virginia Piedmont," p. 170.

⁴⁰ William L. McDowell, ed., *Documents Relating to Indian Affairs, 1754-1765. The Colonial Records of South Carolina* (Columbia: South Carolina Archives Department, 1958), pp. 95-96, quoted in Wilson, "Indians of Carolina and Virginia Piedmont," p. 172.

⁴¹ J. Ralph Randolph, *British Travelers Among the Southern Indians, 1660-1763* (Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1973), p. 132.

⁴² Merrell, "Natives," p. 401.

⁴³ Cumming, *The Southeast in Early Maps*, pp. 59-61.

⁴⁴ Merrell, "Natives," pp. 358-362.

⁴⁵ Rights, *The American Indian in North Carolina*, p. 146.

DEATH AND MARRIAGE ABSTRACTS FROM THE RALEIGH CHRISTIAN ADVOCATE 1858-1893

Abstracted by
Michael Perdue

Introduction

The Raleigh Christian Advocate was the official organ of the North Carolina Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. The newspaper began publication in 1855 in Raleigh and except for a few years following the Civil War has remained in existence to the present in the form of the *North Carolina Christian Advocate*, which serves all United Methodists in the state. The paper has been printed under its present title in Greensboro since 1894 and is, at present, a weekly publication.

The *Advocate*, especially the early issues, is an excellent resource tool for historians and genealogists alike. The paper carried marriage and death notices from all over the state. More importantly local Methodist Church news was reported on a regular basis. Those who are researching early Methodist churches in the state will find the *Advocate* a source of historical data not likely to be found elsewhere.

The *Advocate* for the years 1855-1894 is on microfilm and available on interlibrary loan. Issues for the years after 1894 are in bound volumes at Duke University. The following are marriage and death notices relative to Rockingham County from 1858-1893. The date beside each item is the date of issue in which that particular item appeared.

At the end of the Civil War the *Advocate* was forced to cease operation temporarily. It was succeeded by another paper, *The Episcopal Methodist*. Rockingham County items have also been abstracted from that paper for the few years it was in publication.

The Society wishes to thank Rebecca Barnard who typed this article.

THE RALEIGH CHRISTIAN ADVOCATE

August 5, 1858

George A. Courts died July 12, son of D. W. Courts, Public Treasurer, student of UNC,

	attended Princeton.
June 9, 1859	Nannie Stephens, wife of Walter, born July 31, 1840, died May, 1859 near Wentworth.
October 23, 1860	John S. Blackwell, of Caswell County, married Eliza J. Jarrell (of Rockingham County) near Wentworth, October 2, Rev. D. R. Bruton presiding.
November 13, 1860	Capt. W. M. Ellington, Clerk of Rockingham County Court, married Mrs. Isabella Moore (widow of Pearson Moore and daughter of the late David Scott, of Rockingham County) on October 23, 1860, Rev. D. R. Bruton officiating.
July 8, 1863	Rowland T. Harris, of Richmond, VA, married Susan J. Haller, of Rockingham County, on June 30, 1863 at Eagle Falls, by Rev. N. F. Reid.
October 28, 1863	David S. Patrick married Alice Cardwell, daughter of Josh H. Cardwell, October 13, 1863, Rev. D. R. Bruton.
October 28, 1863	Calvin Sharp married Mary S. Pratt October 20, 1863, by Rev. D. R. Bruton.
May 7, 1864	Edwin S. Hern, of Pittsylvania County, VA, married Lucy E. Keen, by Rev. W. C. Gannon.
September 9, 1864	T. J. Foster, of Alamance County married Eliza Ann Haygood, of Rockingham County, August 30, 1864, Rev. W. C. Gannon.

THE EPISCOPAL METHODIST

April 3, 1867	John E. Pruitt, of Virginia, married Martha J. Nunnally, of Rockingham County, March 14, 1867 - Rev. W. C. Gannon.
May 1, 1867	John S. Carter married Nannie D. Nunnally April 10, 1867, by Rev. W. C. Gannon.
January 8, 1868	Joel Richard Cardwell died October 9, 1867, age 26, was married.
March 11, 1868	Decatur Barnes married Lucie A. Holderby, daughter of Joseph Holderby, 25 February 1868 (afternoon or evening) in Reidsville by Rev. N. F. Reid.
May 13, 1868	James M. Irvin married Mary Ratliff, 14

April 1868, Rev. R. G. Barrett.

November 11, 1868 Mortimer Oaks married Fannie Holderby, daughter of Maj. Joseph Holderby, former Representative of Rockingham County, on 21 October in Reidsville, by Rev. N. F. Reid.

THE RALEIGH EPISCOPAL METHODIST

September 29, 1869 Miss Lucy Griffith, aged about 70 years, died at home in Rockingham County several weeks ago.

October 20, 1869 Mary T. Thomas, widow of William Jones Thomas, died October 2, 1869 at home of daughter, Mrs. Allen, in Rockingham County.

October 26, 1869 Mrs. Martha V. Dandridge died July 3, 1869, aged 18 yrs., 1 mo., 17 ds., in Rockingham County, probably in the Madison area.

November 24, 1869 Mrs. Matilda M. Smith, daughter of Pleasant Black, and wife of Harrell Smith, died October 24, 1869. Born in Rockingham County in 1818, moved to Madison County, TN in 1856.

December 15, 1869 Marcus Carter Holderby, son of Joseph Holderby, of Rockingham County, died at home 26 October 1869, born in Milton, NC October 5, 1829.

June 1, 1870 T. F. Simpson married Nannie J. Watkins 17 May 1870, by Rev. J. W. Lewis.

August 24, 1870 T. J. McKinney married Arametah S. Lanier, both of Rockingham County, at Mayfield, by Rev. John W. Lewis, date not given.

August 31, 1870 J. R. Raine married Lucy A. Allen at Wentworth on August 15, 1870, by Rev. N. F. Reid.

September 17, 1870 Francis J. Meador, of Rockingham County (near Reidsville), died 25 August 1870, aged 62 yrs., 1 mo. and 23 ds.

November 16, 1870 W. A. Horney married Jennie Johnston at home of bride's mother in Rockingham County, by Rev. N. F. Reid. Date not given.

THE RALEIGH CHRISTIAN ADVOCATE

February 22, 1871 James S. L. Jones married Minnie S. Watkins,

- both of Rockingham County, on February 9, 1871 at home of Col. Watkins, by Rev. J. W. Lewis.
- June 21, 1871 William Joseph Holderby died April 28, 1871, at Reidsville, aged 24 yrs. and 18 ds.
- September 27, 1871 P. T. Barrow, of Henry County, VA married Dora E. Guerrant, of Leaksville, on September 5, 1871 at M.E. Church at Leaksville, by Rev. Daniel E. Field.
- September 27, 1871 Benton Field, of Leaksville, died September 15, 1871, age 73 - 62 years member of M.E. Church and 50 years a preacher of that church. *(See correction in January 31, 1872 issue.)
- November 1, 1871 Robert A. Gatewood died in Rockingham County October 5, 1871, age 53, leaving wife and children.
- November 22, 1871 At Greensboro on November 16, W. M. Edwards married Mary C. Hancock, both of Wentworth, by Rev. N. F. Reid.
- * January 31, 1872 Benton Field died September 15, 1871, age 74 - 60 years a minister of the M.E. Church.
- February 11, 1872 Nannie V. Russell, wife of Moses H. Russell, died in Rockingham County January 16 - buried in family cemetery at Thomasville.
- February 21, 1872 Samuel Wall married Sallie V. Dandridge, all of Stokes County, at Stoneville on 16 January 1872, by Rev. F. L. Reid.
- February 21, 1872 Charles Brooks Withers died near Madison February 6, 1872, age 22 yrs., 2 mos. and 1 day, a Methodist.
- April 3, 1872 Died near Leaksville on March 19, 1872, Ruth Cavanah, age 26, wife of Frank Cavanah, member of M.E. Church, South, at Greensboro.
- April 3, 1872 Wm. T. Thomas, of TN, married Ruth Thomas, of Rockingham County, at the home of B. Wade on March 5, 1872, by Rev. Daniel E. Field.
- April 3, 1872 Willis Truitt married Margaret White, both of Rockingham County, on March 21, 1872 at the home of bride's father, by Rev. F. L. Reid.

- May 29, 1872 Samuel J. Meador, of Rockingham County, married Jane E. Woodson, of Henry County, VA, at the home of bride's father, by Rev. John W. Lewis - date not given. Bride's parents: Robert H. and Jane E. Woodson.
- June 26, 1872 W. A. Webster, of Rockingham County, married J. A. McRae, of Richmond County, NC, at home of Col. McRae on June 10, 1872, by Rev. F. L. Reid.
- July 17, 1872 Capt. John D. Watkins married Bertie M. Robertson at the home of bride in Rockingham County on _____ 3, 1872, by Rev. J. W. Lewis.
- November 6, 1872 Robert P. Wall married Hessie V. Webster, both of Rockingham County, at home of bride's father on 24 October 1872, by Rev. F. L. Reid.
- November 6, 1872 Margaret Field, wife of Dr. B. J. Field (Leaksville), died September 27, 1872 - born January, 1837.
- December 4, 1872 W. A. Houck married Mollie L. Robertson, both of Rockingham County, 21 November 1872 at bride's father's home near Madison, by Rev. F. L. Reid.
- December 25, 1872 James W. Reid married Mary Frances Ellington, both of Wentworth, by Rev. John W. Lewis. James W. Reid, eldest son of Rev. Numa F. Reid - marriage date not given.
- March 19, 1873 Lizzie Ratliff, daughter of John A. and Mary E. K. Ratliff, died in Rockingham County 22 February 1873 of typhoid, aged 14 yrs., 6 mos.
- April 16, 1873 Dr. R. G. Wharton married E. A. Courts, all of Rockingham County, at home of Dr. W. J. Courts, by Rev. W. C. Norman - date not given.
- April 16, 1873 John J. Mitchell married Dora E. Hancock, all of Rockingham County, at home of bride's father (Wheeler Hancock) near Wentworth, by Rev. W. C. Norman.
- May 14, 1873 W. S. Lindsay married Mittie W. Anderson, both of Madison, on April 29, 1873, at Madison M.E. Church, by Revs. F. L. Reid and C. M. Payne.

June 13, 1873	Rev. N. F. Reid died at Wentworth on June 6, 1873.
August 13, 1873	Rev. Dan E. Field married Martha A. Lane, both of Rockingham County near Leaksville, on 29 July 1873, by Rev. F. L. Reid.
August 13, 1873	Frank M. Burns, of Clarksville, AK, married Kate E., the daughter of E. K. Withers, at home of bride's parents on 24 July 1873, by Rev. T. S. Dameron.
May 20, 1874	Wm. L. Spaulding, of Ruffin, married Jennie K. Lauder, of Harnettsville, KY, at Mt. Carmel M.E. Church on May 3, 1874, by Rev. W. C. Norman.
September 16, 1874	Rev. Charles M. Payne, Pastor of 2nd Presbyterian Church of Wilmington, married Carrie V. Watkins, daughter of J. D. Watkins, of Madison, on August 26, 1874 at home of bride's father, by Rev. F. H. Johnston.
December 23, 1874	John A. Ratliffe, of Rockingham County, died at home on 20 November 1874 at 3:30 a.m. after lingering illness, age 52.
February 24, 1875	James Walter Price, eldest son of Lou and Robert P. Price, died October 12, 1874 near Price's Store, Rockingham County, of croup, age 6.
March 3, 1875	George W. Martin married Amanda Webster on 26 January 1875 at home of bride's father at Madison, NC, by Rev. W. C. Norman.
May 26, 1875	Col. Francis Watkins died at home in Rockingham County March 29, 1875 - born October 13, 1812 - member of Methodist Church 40 years.
April 5, 1876	William L. Wright married Martha J. Praett (sic) at Ruffin M.E. Church, South, by Rev. R. F. Bumpass. No date given.
April 12, 1876	Dr. B. F. Foy, M.D., died 25 March 1876 at home in Madison, age 42.
June 21, 1876	Johnnie, son of W. W. Wharton, of Reidsville, drowned "on Monday last" in attempting to swim across Irvin's mill pond. Colored boy was drowned in attempting to save Wharton.
September 6, 1876	Mrs. Priscillia Cook died at son's home in

October 25, 1876	Rockingham County on 19 July 1876, age 81. Mrs. N. F. Rankin, wife of Wm. S. Rankin, died at home in Rockingham County - 20 years a Methodist.
November 21, 1877	Eliza J. Apple, wife of D. A. Apple, died 30 July 1877 in Rockingham County, age 31, 17 years a Methodist.
April 24, 1878	Franklin Harris died in Rockingham County April 7, 1878 - born July 23, 1796, reared in Montgomery County, NC. Married first Martha B. Moss (died November 1, 1825) March 5, 1818; married second Mrs. Jane W. _____ November 8, 1834. Harris, a Whig, joined the Methodist Church in 1825.
July 3, 1878	John F. Robertson died at his home near Ruffin December 15, 1877 - born in VA December 17, 1826. Converted some eight or ten years ago.
January 29, 1879	Benjamin H. Carter died near Ruffin at the home of son-in-law, Dr. W. J. Courts, on 27 December 1878, age 73.
October 29, 1879	George A. Wilson, of Yanceyville, married Bettie N. Harris, of Madison, on 16 October 1879 at Madison, by Rev. J.W. Lewis.
July 28, 1880	Pattie T. Lindsey died June 23, 1880 - born April 18, 1857, married R.M.B. Ellington November 7, 1878, joined Methodist Church at Reidsville in 1876.
August 11, 1880	Mrs. Matilda Dalton, wife of Lee Dalton and daughter of Maj. B. Stovall, of Patrick County, VA, died at husband's home in Rockingham County July 18, 1880, age 75.
August 11, 1880	Mrs. Margaret Sharpe Martin, wife of the late Alexander Martin, of Mississippi, died June 17, 1880 at home of son-in-law, Vall Allen, in Rockingham County.
December 15, 1880	C. H. Ellington, of Rockingham County, died on November 18, 1880 at father's home, of typhoid, age 34.
January 5, 1881	James H. Waddell, of Wentworth, married Miss Pattie W. Ellington, of Reidsville, on December 5, 1880, by Rev. V. A. Sharpe.

- April 27, 1881** Hessie Wall, wife of Robert P. Wall and daughter of B. R. Webster, died in Danville, VA, March 8, 1881, age 28.
- April 27, 1881** Capt. John Guerrant Watkins died at home in Rockingham County March 14, 1881 at age 67.
- July 13, 1881** Thomas M. Johnston died at Reidsville May 12, 1881 - born near Ruffin February 16, 1838, eldest son of Richard B. and Susan H. Johnston, married A. W. Wright, of Wentworth, November 8, 1859. Educated in Yanceyville and by Messrs. Smith and Gallaway at Wentworth, Joined M. E. Church at Fall 1860 Camp Meeting at Mt. Carmel, led by Revs. D. R. Bruton and N. F. Reid.
- March 2, 1887** Mr. A. J. Wall married Cora A. Ratliffe at the home of bride's father, T. A. Ratliffe, at Wentworth, 24 February 1887, by Rev. R. P. Troy.
- March 16, 1887** Col. E. W. Hancock died at home in Wentworth 12 February 1887 - born 2 February 1817, married M. M. Allen 15 February 1848, converted January 1883 at Wentworth, buried in the Methodist Cemetery at Wentworth.
- January 2, 1889** Wm. Young married Virginia L. Smith December 26, 1888, at Reidsville, by Rev. A. McCullen.
- May 1, 1889** Fannie J. Bobbitt, wife of Luther A. Bobbitt, of Franklin County, NC, and daughter of Thos. A. Ratliffe, died suddenly at home near Cedar Rock on Sunday p.m. April 14, age 22 yrs. and 5 mos. Married February 27, 1884.
- June 22, 1892** Johnnie Ware, son of W. P. Ware, drowned in Jennings' pond in the Reidsville area recently.
- August 17, 1892** Mrs. Emily Nance, of Lowes' Church (member since 1854) died Thursday, July 21, 1892, age 64.
- March 1, 1893** Mary Eliza Ratliff died February 12, 1893, a member of Bethlehem ME Church for about 50 years. Five daughters and a son survive.
- March 15, 1893** Mary Eliza Ratliff born June 26, 1828 to Barnett Moore, married in 1846 to J.A. Rat-

May 24, 1893

liffe who died 18 years ago.

James W. Lillard died May 13, 1893 at age 84 yrs. Member of Wentworth ME Circuit. Confined to bed for three or four years.

NORTH CAROLINA LEGISLATIVE PAPERS— NUMBER TWO

*Transcribed
by
Betty J. Baker*

Editor' note: This is the second in a series of North Carolina Legislative records transcribed for the Society by Betty J. Baker of Knightdale, North Carolina. The legislative papers are in the State Archives in Raleigh, North Carolina.

This second record is a petition circulated during 1785 in what became Rockingham County, requesting that northern Guilford be formed into a separate county. The petition contains 318 names, some of which do not appear in other records. The reader should be aware that the names listed in the petition are by no means a complete record of persons living in the area that would become Rockingham County on December 29, 1785.

Petition From Sundry The Inhabitants of Guilford County Praying a Division Thereof

To the Honorable the General Assembly
of the State of North Carolina now sitting

The Petition of the inhabitants of
Guilford County humbly sheweth

That many of your petitioners labour
under great disadvantages by reason of the
great distance we live from the Court house
and so many difficult waters to cross renders
it impossible for us to give due attendance
either at Court Election or General Muster
as we would wish to do or as the Law requires
many having to travel thirty or forty miles
before they get to the Court house by reason
of its standing so near Randolph Line
We your petitioners humbly request that
you would grant an equal division of said
County by running an East and West line
and your Petitioners as in duty bound
will ever pray

PERSONS WHO SIGNED THE PETITION

	John Hardeman	
	Miles Murphey	
	John Briscoe	
	William Atkins	Wm Mooney
	James Atkins	Wm Wallace
	William Stapleton	William Spiers
	Thad ^s Owen	John McCarell
	James Powell	John Taylor
	Job Loftis	Thomas Loyde
	David Settle	John Edmondson
	Josiah Settle	Edward Richardson
	Benja ^a Settle	Edward Witherly
	William Gordon	Aaron Lord
	Isaac Lowe	John Waford
	Wm Talor	William Mceleroy
	George Brock	Isaac Lowe Jun ^r
	Thomas Lomax	Thomas Caffey
	Micheal Finney	Andrew Lord
	John Bankson	Aaron Lord Jun ^r
	Solomon Webster	Benjm ^m Vickers
	Wm Talor	John Hulluck
	Suliven Peirson	William Jones
	Samuel Young	Ely Curre
	Edward Taylor	Joal Walker
	James McCarrell	David Walker
	John A Harris	

_____naday

Benjamin megeson

Robert Galbreath

William Russell

Thomas Galbreath

Richard Dodson

John Kilbreath

William Calhoun

William Russell

John margeson

Jeremiah Rardon

Olipher mederes

John Johnston

Hamilton Reid

James Reid

James Hays

James Treson(?)

James Leak

Joseph McClain

Rich d Bethell

Isham Hancock

Jn^o Handcock

Isaiah Hancock

Vachel Handcock

Isaac Burten

William Brown

Jn^o Jones Sen^r

Timothy Ragin

John Hood

John Odell

John Walker

William Mount

Notley Jordan

Thos (his mark) Nance

Abraham (his mark) Benton

John mount

James Horsford

Joel Benson

Rubin (his mark) Tylor

John Horsford	Tho ^s Mount
Matthew Mills Jun ^r	Rich ^d Ellis
Ed Stubblefield (his mark)	Tho ^s Ellis
Willis (his mark) Powell	Wm Ellis
Samul Powell	Abraham Cantrell
Zack ^h Thacker	Manlove Tarrant
Ben Parrott Sen ^r	Abner Raley
Ab ^m Parrott	Samuel Bethell
Benjamon Parott Jun ^r	Thomas (his mark) Pickard
Hugh Shannon	Thomas Allen Sen
William Shannon	Daniel Allen
Rich ^d (his mark) Stubblefield Sen ^r	Moses Allen

William Bethell	Walter _____	Francis Hodge
Jn Odeneal	Wm Clark	John Martin
Isaac White	Joseph Clark	Walter Martin
Larkin Peirpoint	William Clark Jun	Andrew Martin Ju
Peter Oneal	Isaac Clark	William Williams
James appleton	William sutel (Settle)	William Williams
Samuel Watt	Gorge lane (?)	ben allen
nely Davis	John Mattck	Thomas allen
John Baker	John Dilworth	John Allen
Robert Williams	James Adams	Joseph allen
Wm (his mark) Wooten	John hurbin	Daniel alen
William Robinson	Wilson hurbin	hary harden
John Robinson	Johnthein Mason	Thomas harden
Jas Corry	James Adams	John tayler
Andrew Martin	Hugh Gwyn	Wili taylr
William Martin	James Williams	George Adams
John Hai _____	Wm Baker	Thomas Addems
_____	James Willson	John Peter
_____	John Makey	Wiliam Wilsen
	Stephen (his mark)	
	Chandler	

Reuben Curtis	John Tackit	Wm Pound
John Cinkton	Wm Tackit	Richerd Pound
Richard Crunk	Thomas Cobbler	Richens Brim
John Limon	Harvey Cobbler	John Owen
Richard Auston	Fradrick Cobbler	Devid Owen
James Strong	Sherred Brock	Moses Lilerd
Alexand ^r Limon Sen ^r	Jesse Brock	John Lechman
George Cimble	John Davison	Wm Stephens
John Limon	Richerd Davison	Aquile Willson
James Ross	Wm Davison	George Johnson
Geo. Peay	Drure Yomens	John Hill
Elias Peay	Shadrich Yomon	Wm Hill
George Peay Jun ^r	John Price	Joseph Gibson
Nicholes Peay	Rece Price	John Gibson
Wm Thomson	Eliche Gunn	Wm Gibson
Richard Thomson	John Hubbard	James Fitzgareld
Joshua Hoppe	John Pullon	Robert Saunders
Wm Hopper	Thomas Covington	Sires Roberts
Darbey Hopper	George Cimble Sen	Naman Roberts
Thomas Hopper	John Jones Senoir	Rich ^d Vanlandingham
Darbey Callaham	John Jones	Geo Vanlandingham
Ezekell Callaham	Stephen Lefew	Mitchell Thomas
Nath Harris	John Hendrickson	Lewes Thomas
John Murphey		Joell Thomas
Jacob James		
Abraham James		

Tho ^s Owen Sen ^r	Charles Gilly	Thomas (his mark) Larkins
Thomas Owen Jun ^r	William Young	Thomas (his mark) King
James Brim	Sutton Mccoloter	William Walker
Sherwood Toney	Robert Carson	Robert (his mark) Walker
John Mount	Archer Norris	David (his mark) Morris
John Walker	John Harrison	Elijah Cornwell
Isaac Cantrel	Jesse Harrison	John (his mark) Young
Aaron Cantrell	James Wardlow Sen ^r	Benj ⁿ Haggard
David Poyner	William Pirkle	Aaron Allen
Robert Cantrell	George Pirkle	

And ^w Robison	James McCubbin	Jerremiha Norres
James Long	Isaac Thrasher	W ^m Gipson
John Potter	Jhn (X) Brown	Joseph William
William Lovil	William (X) Trnum	Joel Barnet
David Lovil Seanor	Ruben (X) Tilar	John McKinney
David Murray	Edward (X) brient	Thos ^s Barnet
Zeakel Calleham	David Bryan	Abnor Norres
William neeley	Thomas (X) fargasson	allen Williams
David Williams	John (X) forbush	David Owen
Thomas Young	Robert (X) forbush	Abner Parrot
John pottor	James Willson	David Lovel Juner
hennere Chndiller	William (X) Large	Abraham Benton
John Young	John Pile	Joel Benton
Moses Lilard	Robert forbush	W ^m Mount
	henry dunlap	Joseph Patterson
		William Patterson
		W ^m Hopper
		John Homes

_____ence of the Subscribers and to you Gentlemen we
look to as the Guardians of this State to whome we appeal to Answer
this our Reasonable request. And your Petitioners as in duty bound
shall ever pray

Total Names = 318

**From: General Assembly Session Records
Nov.-Dec. 1785, Box 3
Nov. 25 House Bill**

INDEX FOR 1988 June and December Issues by Don Hoover

—A—

Adams, Ann E.....	25
Adams, George	74
Adams, James	74
Adams, Samuel F.	24
Adams, Sarah A. E.....	31
Adams, Wilmith W.	32
Addems, Thomas	74
Aiden, Bettie W.....	26
Alen, Daniel	74
Allan, Aaron	75
Allen, ben	74
Allen, Charles	24
Allen, Daniel	74
Allen, Elizabeth	32
Allen, Ella	45
Allen, John	74
Allen, Joseph	74
Allen, Julia	41
Allen, Lucy A.	65
Allen, M. J.....	10
Allen, M. M.	70
Allen, Martha	38, 40
Allen, Moses	74
Allen, Mrs.	65
Allen, Nancy	42
Allen, Q.	3
Allen, Salley	27
Allen, Sam, Mrs.....	4
Allen, Thomas	74
Allen, Thomas, Sen.	74
Allen, Valentine	24
Allen, Vall	69
Allen, W. S.....	17, 20
Alvord, Clarence W.	61
Amos, John B.....	24
Anderson,	12
Anderson, John Henry	20
Anderson, Mittie W.	67
Angel, Julia	31
Apple, Catherine	36
Apple, D. A.	69

Apple, Eliza J.....	69
Apple, Eliza Jane	40
Apple, Huldy	41
Apple, John H.	24
Apple, Lizzie	39
Appleton, James	74
Arthur,	61
Arthur, Gabriel	53, 54
Atkins, James	73
Atkins, William	73
Ausburn, D. M.	24
Auston, Richard	75

—B—

Bacon,	55
Bailey, Nancy B.	32
Baker, John	74
Baker, Manerry	30
Baker, Nancy	27
Baker, Wm.	74
Balck, James C.	24
Bankson, John	73
Barber, Mrs.	4
Barber, Zachariah	3, 17
Barham, John I.	24
Barker, Sarah	30
Barlow, Mary Ann M.	31
Barnard, Rebecca	63
Barnes, Allen	24
Barnes, Ann	26
Barnes, Decatur	64
Barnes, John	24
Barnes, Patsey	25
Barnet, Joel	76
Barnet, Thos.	76
Barnwell, John, Col.	56
Barrett, Martha	28
Barrett, R. G., Rev.	65
Barris, David	24
Barringer, Wm., Rev.	15
Barris, David	24

Barrow, P. T.	66	Bowmon, Thersia	37
Bason, Martha W.	25	Boyano, Hernando, Lt.	53
Bateman, James	24	Boyd, Col.	8
Bateman, Nancy	31	Boyd, George D.	19
Batts, Thomas	53	Brann, Hester Ann	37
Baughn, John W.	24	Brannock, Betsy	37
Baughn, Sarah S.	26	Brannock, Lola	46
Baurton, Lucy	21	Brannock, Mag.	36
Baynes, Selina "Lina"	2	Brannock, Margarette Faucette	34
Bennett, Martha H.	33	Brannock, Nannie	38, 42, 44
Benson, Joel	73	Brannock, Rosa	37, 38, 39, 41
Benton, Abraham	73, 76	Brannock, Tom	34
Benton, Joel	76	Brice, Wm., Collonell	57
Berk, Martha	25	Brient, Edward	76
Bernom, Eliza	30	Brim, James	75
Berton, Thomas	24	Brim, Richens	75
Bethell, Ann C.	27	Brincefield, Eliza	41
Bethell, Richd.	73	Brincefield, Frances	40
Bethell, Samuel	74	Brincefield, Jane	36, 39
Bethell, William	74	Brincefield, Martha J.	29
Betty J. Baker	72	Brincfield, Eliza	30
Bidgood, Lee	61	Brinsfield, Catharine	31
Black, Emiley	25	Briscoe, John	73
Black, Mariah A.	28	Brock, George	73
Black, Matilda M.	30	Brock, Jesse	75
Black, Pleasant	65	Brock, Sherred	75
Blackwell, John S.	64	Browder, Wliza	32
Blair, Salley	24	Brown, Ellen	41, 44, 46
Blessed, William	24	Brown, Jhn.	76
Boatwright, Jane	26	Brown, Louisa	41
Boatwright, Martha	29	Brown, Mag	44
Boatwright, Rebecca	25	Brown, Margaret	41
Bobbitt, Fannie J.	70	Brown, Mariah	42, 46
Bobbitt, Luther A.	70	Brown, Martha	42
Boling, Jarat	24	Brown, Millie	44, 45
Boman, Eliza	31	Brown, Rebecca	28
Bonds, Joshua	24	Brown, W. R.	24
Bonner, Kate	19	Brown, William	73
Boon, Bertie	40	Brownell, H. N.	5
Boon, Bettie	41, 42	Bruton, D. R., Rev.	64, 70
Boswell, Rosa	45	Bryan, David	76
Bouldin, Benjamin F.	24	Bull, Barnaby, Captain	56
Bouldin, Bettie	46	Bullington, Benjamin	55
Bouldin, Celia	43	Bumpas, Ella	2
Bouldin, Elizabeth	24	Bumpas, Lina	3, 5, 6, 7, 8, 11, 13, 15
Boulds, Eliza	43	Bumpas, Ma	5, 8, 12, 15
Bowe, James H.	24	Bumpas, Robah Fidus, Rev.	1, 3, 12, 13, 68
Bowman, Elizabeth	28	Bumpas, Sidney D., Rev.	1
Bowman, Richard	24	Bumpass, Sam	10
Bowmon, Thersa	36		

Buress, Rebecca	29
Burnes, Sarah	29
Burnes, Frank M.	68
Burten, Isaac	73
Burtian, Mary J.	28
Burton,	14
Burton, Ann	24
Burton, Wm.	16
Busick, Mary	37
Busick, Missouriia ...	37, 38, 39, 41, 43
Butler, Mary Ann	31
Butler, Sarah	28
Byrd, Willilam	61
Byrd, William, II	54

—C—

Caffey, Daniel	24
Caffey, Thomas	73
Callaham, Darbey	75
Callaham, Ezekell	75
Callemham, Zeakel	76
Campbell, Sarah P.	29
Canady, Dona	42
Cannady, Lizzie	36
Cannady, Nancy	36
Cantrel, Isaac	75
Cantrell, Aaron	75
Cantrell, Abraham	74
Cantrell, Robert	75
Cardwell, Alice	64
Cardwell, Elizabeth A.	28
Cardwell, Joel Richard	64
Cardwell, Josh H.	64
Cardwell, L.	25
Cardwell, Minerva	29
Cardwell, Richard P.	24
Carrell, Ella E.	46
Carrell, Emma E.	41, 43, 45
Carrell, Sarah	27
Carroll, Emma E.	42, 43
Carroll, J. Elwood, Dr.	3, 19
Carson, Robert	75
Carson, William F.	24
Carter, Benjamin H.	69
Carter, Elizabeth	24, 29
Carter, Fanny	17
Carter, Ginnett	24
Carter, Henry	24
Carter, John	24

Carter, John S.	64
Carter, M. S.	24
Carter, Mary	32
Carter, Robert W., Jr.	3, 13
Cavanah, Frank	66
Cavanah, Ruth	66
Cayton, Martin	24
Chambers, Bettie	46
Chambers, John	24
Chambers, Lucinda	32
Chance, C. M.	30
Chandler, Stephen	74
Chatham, Annie	38
Chatham, Mary	37
Chatham, Rosa Ann	38, 40
Chinanlt, Judith	27
Chndiller, hennere	76
Choice, Elizabeth	25
Chrismon, Zina	36
Christmas, William	24
Churchell, James S.	24
Churchell, Owen	24
Cimble, George	75
Cimble, George, Sen.	75
Cinkton, John	75
Clapp, Sallie	36, 38
Clark, Isaac	74
Clark, Joseph	74
Clark, William, Jun.	74
Clark, Wm.	74
Clemens, Martin	4, 17
Clemmons, Henrietta	30
Clemmons, Mary L.	28
Cobb, Lucy A.	44
Cobb, Neptha	14, 20
Cobb, Pleasant	24
Cobbler, Fradrick	75
Cobbler, Harvey	75
Cobbler, Thomas	75
Coblar, Sarah	31
Coble,	12
Cobler, Louisa	25
Cobler, Sarah	31
Cobson, Susan	29
Coe, Jesse	24
Coe, Joffre, Dr.	51
Cole, Daniel	24
Cole, Edy	33
Cole, Nancy	46
Coleman, George	24, 25

Coleman, Martha A. E.	26
Coleman, Nancy	30, 35
Coleman, William	25
Collet, John	56
Collins, Mary	24
Collins, Minerva	32
Combs, Ann W.	28
Combs, Lula	46
Comer, Mary Ann	29
Comer, Henry C.	25
Cook, Jane	46, 47
Cook, Priscillia	68
Coram, Pinckney J.	25
Cornwell, Elijah	75
Corry, Jas.	74
Court, Susan N.	27
Courts, Daniel W.	17, 63
Courts, Dr.	5, 9, 12
Courts, E. A.	67
Courts, George A.	63
Courts, Misses	5
Courts, William J., Dr.	17, 67, 69
Covington, Thomas	75
Cox, Mary	41, 46
Cox, T. B.	25
Coyle, Thomas F. M.	25
Craig, John	25
Craven, Governor	57
Crawford, Elisha	25
Creans, James	25
Cradock, Elizabeth	31
Crowder, Anderson	25
Crowder, Martha	30
Crunk, Richard	75
Cumming,	62
Cumming, William P.	61
Cummings, Mary	28
Cunningham, W. G. E., Rev. Dr.	14
Curre, Ely	73
Currie, Eliza	25
Currie, Martha	31
Curtis, Reuben	75
Custice, Judia	37

—D—

Dalton, Charlotte	28
Dalton, Elizabeth M.	24
Dalton, Henry	25
Dalton, Jane	30

Dalton, Lee	69
Dalton, Mary	25
Dalton, Matilda	69
Dalton, Pleasant Hunter, Rev. ...	6, 18
Dalton, Susan D.	29
Dameron, T. S., Rev.	68
Dandridge, Martha V.	65
Dandridge, Sallie V.	66
Daniel, Alvis	25
Davi, R. P. Stephen	51
Davis, Mary C.	27
Davis, nely	74
Davis, R. P. Stephen, Jr.	61
Davison, John	75
Davison, Richerd	75
Davison, Wm.	75
Dawson, Julia	45
Dawson, Julia A.	43, 46, 47
Dawson, Julia Ann	42
De Soto	52, 53
Delap, Timisia	46
Delass, Timisia	43, 44
Denton, William H.	25
Desy, Elizabeth	26
Dickens, Roy S., Jr.	61
Dickerson, Mary	28
Dilworth, John	74
Dilworth, William	25
Doak, Robert	25
Dobyn, Henry F.	61
Dodson, Pleasant W.	25
Donnell, Missouri F.	24
Doughtery, Charles	25
Dreshill, Loton	25
Duke, Washington	1
Dulin, Sarah	29
Dunlap, henry	76

—E—

Easterly, J. H.	62
Eden, Governor	57
Edmondson, John	73
Edwards,	4
Edwards, Ann	17
Edwards, Catherine	17
Edwards, Eveline, T.	26
Edwards, Geroge R., Rev.	17
Edwards, W. M.	66
Ellington, Albert	8

Index for 1988

Ellington, Alfred J., Mrs.	19
Ellington, C. H.	69
Ellington, Farrow	25
Ellington, Frances E.	27
Ellington, Fred	15
Ellington, James T.	25
Ellington, Jane A.	30
Ellington, Maggie	3
Ellington, Martha Thomas	8, 19
Ellington, Mary Frances	67
Ellington, Pattie W.	69
Ellington, R. M. B.	69
Ellington, Richard	8, 11, 19
Ellington, Sarah C.	25
Ellington, Sarah M.	25
Ellington, W. M., Capt.	64
Ellington, William M.	19
Ellington, Wm.	8
Ellis, Richd.	74
Ellis, Thos.	74
Ellis, Wm.	74
England, Elizabeth S.	26
Estus, Phoebe	28
Evans, Elizabeth C.	25
Evans, James	25
Evans, John	59

—F—

Fagg, Charity	32
Fagg, Joel	25
Fagg, Lucile Reid	19
Fallam, Robert	53
Fargasson Thomas	76
Farmer, Meredith	25
Faucett, Mag	42
Faucette, Bettie Hunter	45
Faucette, Catherine Summers	34
Faucette, Geroge	34
Faucette, Mag	43, 45, 47
Feathers, Henry P.	25
Felts, William E.	21
Felts, William E., Mrs.	21
Fergis, Dabney Z.	25
Fergis, William C.	25
Fewell, Louisa M.	28
Field, B. J., Dr.	67
Field, Benton	66
Field, Daniel E., Rev.	66, 68
Field, Margaret	67

Field, Rebecca	32
Finney, Michael	73
Firzgerald, Henry	11
Fitts, Hardy	25
Fitzgareld, James	75
Fitzgerald, Bannister	6, 18
Fitzgerald, Henry	20
Fitzgerald, Martha Hooper	18
Fitzgerald, Mary A.	17
Fitzgerald, O. P., Bishop	6, 18, 20
Fitzgerald, Richard	18
Fitzgerald, Thomas	11
Flack, David G.	25
Floyd, Tenpey Jane.	30
Forbush, John	76
Forbush, Robert	76
Ford, Samuel	25
Foster,	4, 5
Foster, Capt.	12
Foster, J. W.	17
Foster, Martha	37
Foster, Mary	17
Foster, Rosie	17
Foster, Roxie	4
Foster, S. A.	17
Foster, Sallie	36, 38
Foster, T. J.	64
Foy, B. F., Dr.	68
Foy, Elizabeth	32
Foy, Pleasant	25
Fulcher, Harden	25
Fulton, Susan	20
Fuquay, Mary S.	31

—G—

Galbreath, Robert	73
Galbreath, Thomas	73
Galloway, Messrs.	70
Galloway, William D.	25
Gannon, W. C., Rev.	64
Garner, John	25
Garrett, Geo.	4
Garrett, George	15, 17
Garrett, Lucy	45
Garrett, Margaret	36
Garrett, Mary	17
Garrison, Frances	39
Garrison, Hunter L.	45
Garrison, Hunter L., Mrs.	48

Gatch, Phillip	6	Gwynn, Mollie	45
Gatewood, Robert A.	66		
Gaulden, Sarah	29	—H—	
Gentry, Joel A.	25		
Cheraw, George	59	Haggard, Benjn.	75
Gibson, John	75	Hai_, John	74
Gibson, Joseph	75	Hall, James H.	19
Gibson, Wm.	75	Hall, Jennie	46
Gilliam, James	25	Hall, Lucinda	25
Gilliam, Julia Ann	47	Hall, Martha Pirtle	19
Gilliam, Mary Y.	43	Hall, Mrs.	8
Gilly, Charles	75	Hall, Permealy	32
Gipson, Nancy	24	Hall, Poley	27
Gipson, Wm.	76	Hall, Sarah	24
Glean, Sarah	30	Haller, Susan J.	64
Glen, Governor	59	Hambleton, Elizabeth F.	26
Glenn, Elizabeth	28	Hancock, Dora E.	67
Glenn, Mary	32	Hancock, E. W., Col.	70
Godsey, Henry	25	Hancock, Isham	73
Godsey, Martha F.	25	Hancock, Mary C.	66
Godsey, Susanna N.	29	Hand, Ulysses	25
Gordon, William	73	Hand, William H.	25
Gowins, George W.	25	Handcock, Isaiah	73
Grady, Rachael	27	Handcock, Jno.	73
Graves, Amanda	40	Handcock, Vachel	73
Graves, Rebecca	45	Hardeman, John	73
Grayer, Thomas	25	Harden, hary	74
Greene, N. E.	47	Harden Lou	41
Greene, Robert E.	34	Harden, Thoms	74
Griffin, John	25	Hardie, Nancy J.	31
Griffin, Luvena	25	Hardy, Elizabeth	26
Griffin, M.	25	Harp, Elizabeth	25
Griffith, Lucy	65	Harper, Patsy	27
Grogan, Elizabeth	27	Harris, Bettie N.	69
Grogan, Unity	31	Harris, Elizabeth	27
Groome,	8, 19	Harris, Franklin	69
Guerrant,	12	Harris, J. M.	20
Guerrant, Dainel	5, 6, 18	Harris, John A.	73
Guerrant, Dora E.	66	Harris, Nath	75
Geurrant, John Wyatt	12, 18	Harris, Rowland T.	64
Guerrant, John Wyatt, sister	5	Harrison, Jesse	75
Guerrant, Mary P.	24	Harrison, John	75
Gunn, Eliche	75	Hatcher, Henry	55
Guynn, Francis	38	Hatcher, Joseph	55
Guynn, Lizzie	37, 40, 42, 43	Hatchett, Bell	43
Guynn, Mary Jane	39	Haygood, Eliza Ann	64
Gwyn, Luara E.	43	Hays, James	73
Gwyn, Bettie	46	Hays, Margaret	29
Gwyn, Hugh	74	Heath, Margret	31
Gwynn, Lizzie	38, 44	Heather, Leana	32

Heather, Martha	26	Hopper, William O.	26
Henderson, Elizabeth S.	32	Hopper, Wm.	75, 76
Henderson, Ellen	45, 46	Horney, W. A.	65
Henderson, Mary	30	Horsford, James	73
Henderson, Minerva A.	29	Horsford, John	74
Henderson, Priscilla M.	30	Houck, W. A.	67
Hendren, L. L.	10	Howard, Jennie	46
Hendrickson, John	75	Hubbard, Emma	42, 44
Herbin, Easter	36	Hubbard, John	75
Herbin, Lena	46, 47	Hubbard, Sarah	45, 46, 47
Herbin, Mag	43, 44	Hudson, Charles	62
Herbin, Margaret	39	Hudson, Charles M.	61
Herbin, Mary	36	Hudson, Mary	25
Herbin, Sallie	39	Hudson, William	26
Hern, Edwin S.	64	Hughes, Jennie	46
Hill, John	75	Hulluck, John	73
Hill, Wm.	75	Hummins, Elizabeth	28
Hobson, Harriet A.	33	Humphrey,	12
Hobson, Harriet E.	26	Hurbin, John	74
Hodge, Francis	74	Hurbin, Wilson	74
Hodges, Mary	32	Hutcherson, M. P.	30
Holderby, Fannie	65	Hutcherson, Rebecca	32
Holderby, Joseph	20, 64, 65	Hutchingson, Jane	38
Holderby, Joseph B.	20		
Holderby, Laura	20	—I—	
Holderby, Lucie A.	64		
Holderby, Lucy A. M.	26	Ingold, Nerry	40, 41, 42
Holderby, Marcus Carter	65	Irelan, William S.	26
Holderby, Martha Stubblefield	20	Iron, Ruth	26
Holderby, Richard	12, 20	Irvin, James M.	64
Holderby, William Joseph	66	Irvin, Mary	18
Holt, Betsy	33	Irvin, Sarah	24
Holt, Elizabeth	30		
Holt, Isaac	26	—J—	
Homes, John	76		
Hood, Hubbard	26	Jackson, John, Jr.	26
Hood, John	73	James, Abraham	75
Hooper, Bell	41, 46	James, Jacob	75
Hooper, Fannie	36	James, Joseph D.	26
Hooper, Martha	18	James, Thomas S.	26
Hoover, Don	22, 77	Jarrell, Eliza J.	64
Hopkins,	15	Jarrell, Zachariah	26
Hopkins, Mag	38	Jarrett, Nicholas	26
Hoppe, Joshua	75	Jenkins, P. E.	10
Hopper, Arreny	28	Johnny, King	59
Hopper, Caroline M.	31	Johnson, Emila	31
Hopper, Darbey	75	Johnson, George	75
Hopper, Lucy	26	Johnson, Jennie	42
Hopper, Nancy	32	Johnson, Martha J.	30
Hopper, Thomas	75	Johnson, Tom	10

Johnson, William	26
Johnston, F. H., Rev.	68
Johnston, Jennie	65
Johnston, John	73
Johnston, Moses	26
Johnston, Richard B.	70
Johnston, Susan H.	70
Johnston, Thomas M.	70
Joiner, Lewis W.	26
Jones, Annie M.	19
Jones, Bell	47
Jones, Delila	28
Jones, Edward	26
Jones, Hardey	26
Jones, J. F.	11
Jones, James S. L.	65
Jones, John	26, 75
Jones, John, Senior	73, 75
Jones, Litha Ann	24
Jones, Margaret	25, 36
Jones, Mrs.	8
Jones, Nancy	29, 30
Jones, R. P.	19
Jones, Rosanah J.	30
Jones, Ruth	25
Jones Sallie	38
Jones, Sara	18
Jones, William	73
Jordan, Missouriia	44, 45, 47
Jordan, Notley	73
Jordan, Polly	26
Jordan, Sarah	42, 44
Joyce, Alexander M.	26
Joyce, Harriet	26
Joyce, Nancy	29
Joyce, Thomas H.	26
Juge, John	26
Jumper, Stephen	26

—K—

Keam, Gilley C.	26
Kearn, Elizabeth	31
Keck, Sarah	39
Keen, Lucy E.	64
Keenbrough, Elizabeth	24
Kellam, Anny	30
Kelly, Ann	44, 45
Kennon, Asa	26
Kern, William D.	26

Kernodde, Mag	38
Kernodde, Alice	45
Kernodde, Cora	43
Kernodde, Jennie	44
Kernodde, Lydia	40, 42
Kernodde, Mag	43
Kernodde, Mollie	44
Kesee,	6, 18
King, Elizabeth	26
King, Fannie	41
King, Thomas	75
King, William	26
Knight, Charlotte	32
Knight, Eliza Z.	27
Knight, Elizabeth	25
Knight, James M.	26
Knight, John C.	26
Knigh, Thomas	26
Kyle, Elizabeth	26
Kyle, Joseph	26

—L—

Laggett, Elizabeth	26
Lambeth, Anna	44
Lambeth, Manerva	39
Landreth, Mary Ann	32
Lane, Ada	12, 20
Lane, George	74
Lane, Joseph	26
Lane, Martha A.	68
Lanier, Andrew J.	26
Lanier, Arametah S.	65
Lanson, R. W.	26
Lapar, Elizabeth A. N.	28
Large, William	76
Larkins, Thomas	75
Lauder, Jennie K.	68
Lawson, John	55
Lawson, John W.	26
Leak, James	73
Lechman, John	75
Lederer, John	53
Lee, James	26
Lee, Nicey	26
Lefew, Stephen	75
Lemons, Maja	26
Lemons, Elizabeth	24
Lemons, Lucy Jane	24
Lenall, Micholas	26

Leo, William	26
Lesis, Duella	40
Lewellin,	8
Lewellyn, R. J.	19
Lewis,	20
Lewis, Duella	39, 40, 42, 44, 46
Lewis, James M.	26
Lewis, John	26
Lewis, John W., Rev. ...	17, 65, 67, 69
Lewis, Mary	37
Lewis, Pattie	12
Lewis, Sallie	37, 40, 47
Lewis, Tamsey	36
Lewis, William	26
Lilard, Moses	75, 76
Lillard, James W.	71
Limon, Alexandr, Senr	75
Limon, John	75
Lindsay, Elizabeth	30
Lindsay, Mary	31
Lindsay, W. S.	67
Lindsay,	8
Lindsey, Miss	5
Lindsey, Pattie T.	69
Lindsey, William	15, 17, 18
Loftis, Job	73
Lomax, Margret	27
Lomax, Thomas	73
London, Mary	27
Lord, Aaron	73
Lord, Aaron, Junr	73
Lord, Andrew	73
Lovel, David, Juner	76
Loveless, Elizabeth	30
Loveless, Jane	26
Loven, Mary	32
Lovil, David, Seanor	76
Lovil, William	76
Lowe, Gilbert	26
Lowe, Isaac	73
Lowe, Isaac, Junr	73
Loy, Elizabeth	27
Loyde, Thomas	73
Lumpkin, Moore	26
Lunly, John	26
Lutherd, Buckner	27
Lybass, Jane	29
Lybass, Rawley	22, 27

—M—

Macorkel, Richard	27
Maderson, Ann	26
Madren, Adalada	38
Makey, John	74
Malcom, Susan	28
Man, Pascael	27
Mann, Elizabeth	25
Mann, Mary	24
Mann, Sarah	24
Marble, Charles	47
Margeson, John	73
Martin, Alexander	27, 69
Martin, Andrew	74
Martin, Andrew, Ju	74
Martin, Charity Ann	30
Martin, Elizabeth	24, 25, 27
Martin, George W.	68
Martin, Haney E.	27
Martin, John	74
Martin, Margaret Sharpe	69
Martin, Mary	26
Martin, Nannie	47
Martin, Richard	27
Martin, Sally	27
Martin, Sarah	32
Martin, Walter	74
Martin, William	74
Mason, Johnthein	74
Massey, Emily	38
Mateer, Angeline	36
Mateer, Margaret S.	32
Matkins, Frances E.	43
Matkins, John	27
Matkins, Mary	35, 36
Matkins, Mary E.	44, 45, 47
Matkins, Mary J.	38, 39, 41
Matkins, Nannie	40, 43
Matkins, Sarah	36, 41, 43, 45, 47
Matkins, Susan	37, 40, 43, 44
Matlock, Fannie	40
Mattck, John	74
May, Frances E.	29
May, James H.	27
Maynard, Margarette	37
Maynard, Sallie	39, 42
McCarrell, John	73
McCarrell, James	73
Mcclain, John	27

McClain, Joseph	73	Miner, Malinda	25
Mccollister, Sarah	30	Miner, Mary Ann	29
McCollum, Sallie	44	Mitchell, John	56
Mccoloter, Sutton	75	Mitchell, John G.	19
McCubbin, James	76	Mitchell, John J.	67
McCullen, A., Rev.	70	Mitchell, Mrs.	8
McCullum, Mrs.	15	Mitchell, Sallie	45
McDowell, William L.	62	Mobley,	9, 11, 19
McDowell, Z. A.	38, 39	Mobley, Calvin Wash.	5, 13, 18
Mccleroy, William	73	Moles, Salley	31
Mcgehee, Martha M.	31	Montgomery, James T.	27
McIlwaine, H. R.	62	Mooney, Wm.	73
McKey, Isaac	27	Moore	10
McKinney	39	Moore, Alice	40
McKinney, Ann	42	Moore, B. D.	27
McKinney, Annie	42, 44	Moore, Barnett	70
McKinney, Ben, Mrs.	45	Moore, Eliza	24
McKinney, Fannie	43	Moore, Isabella	64
McKinney, John	76	Moore, James Madison	17
McKinney, Minerva	30	Moore, Jas.	4
McKinney, Mrs.	38	Moore, Jim, Capt.	16
McKinney, Peter	27	Moore, John	4, 27
McKinney, T. J.	65	Moore, Martha	31, 35, 40, 43
McKinnie, Annie	43	Moore, Mary J.	31
Mckinry, Druzilla	31	Moore, Maurice	57
Mckleroy, Mary	32	Moore, Molley	31
Mcnealy, Jean	28	Moore, Pearson	64
McRae, Col.	67	Moore, Thomas, Jr.	27
McRae, J. A.	67	Morgan, Sarah H.	24
Meador,	14	Morris, David	75
Meador, Francis J.	65	Morris, Tabitha	29
Meador, John	20	Morton, Henry H.	27
Meador, Mary J.	17	Morton, Warren	27
Meador, Nancy F.	20	Moseley, Edward	56
Meador, Samuel J.	67	Moseley, Massey	29
Meador, Thomas C.	20	Moss, Martha B.	69
Mebane, W. N.	8, 19	Mount, John	73, 75
Mederes, Olipher	73	Mount, Thos.	74
Megeson, Benjamin	73	Mount, William	73, 76
Merrell	62	Mullins, Eliza	30
Merrell, James H.	52, 61	Murphey, Barbra	26
Miles, Elizabeth J.	29	Murphey, John	27, 75
Miller, Capt.	7	Murphey, Miles	73
Miller, G. W.	27	Murray, David	76
Miller, Martin	27	Mustire, Martha	24
Milling, Chapman J.	62		
Mills, Elizabeth	25		
Mills, Matthew, Junr	74		
Mills, Virginia	20		
Miner, Levin	27		

—N—

Nance, Emily	70
Nance, Kitty J.	24

Index for 1988

Nance, Martha	28
Nance, Thos.	73
Napier, Moses C.	27
Nappier, Betsey	26
Nash, William J.	27
Navey, Liane	62
Neal, Thomas	27
Needham	61
Needham, James	53, 54
Neeley, William	76
Nelson, Elly	27
Newel, Rebecca	24
Newnam, Francis	27
Newnam, Julia	29
Newnam, Sylvester	27
Newnan, Eliza	28
Nichols	25
Nichols, James	27
Nichols, Margaret	27
Nicks, Dock	27
Night, Stephen	27
Noah, Barbary	40
Noah, Barbary	41
Noblin, William	27
Nocross, Sophria	24
Noles, William	27
Norman	7
Norman, Alfred, Rev.	17
Norman, T.	27
Norman, W. C.	4, 17, 67, 68
Norman, William Casper	17
Normas, William	27
Norres, Abnor	76
Norres, Jerremiha	76
Norris, Archer	75
Norris, Joel	27
North, John	27
Nowles, John	27
Nowles, Martha	27
Nuel, Lundy	27
Numan, Mary Ann	28
Nunnally, Martha J.	28, 64
Nunnally, Nannie D.	64
Nwin, C. D.	27

—O—

O, Callaghan, E. B.	62
Oakes, Hanah	27
Oakes, Mortimer, Major	20

Oakley, Alexander	27
Oakley, Eliza	41
Oakley, Elizabeth	29
Oakley, Jincey	28
Oaks, Major	10
Oaks, Mortimer	65
Oaks, Mrs.	10
Odel, Elizabeth	30
Odell, John	73
Odeneal, Jn.	74
Oneal, Peter	74
Ore, John	27
Ortelius	53
Overby, Henry W.	27
Owen, David	76
Owen, John	75
Owen, Thads	73
Owen, Thomas, Junr	75
Owen, Thos., Senr	75

—P—

Page, Alice	45, 46
Page, Nannie	38, 43
Page, Priscilla	43
Pardo, Juan	53
Parrot, Abner	74, 76
Parrott, Ben Senr	74
Parrott, Benjamin, Junr	74
Partin, Elizabeth	25
Paschal, Capt.	8, 10
Paschal, Eliza	35, 37, 42
Paschal, Ezekiel D.	18
Paschal, Fletcher Ware	35
Paschal, J. A.	22
Paschal, Julia Ann	27
Paschal, Parthina	36
Paschall, Lewis,	28
Patrick, David S.	64
Patterson, Frances J.	32
Patterson, Joseph	76
Patterson, Lucinda T.	31
Patterson, William	28, 76
Payne, Charles M., Rev.	67, 68
Payne, John	28
Pea, Thomas	28
Pearce	14
Pearman, Katharine	30
Pearson	15
Pearson, Isaac J.	28

[illegible]

—R—

Ragin, Timothy	73
Raine, J. R.	65
Rainey,	10
Rakestraw, Elizabeth	30
Rakestraw, S. F.	19
Raleigh,	9
Raleigh, Ruffus	6
Raley, Abner	74
Randolph, J. Ralph	62
Rankin, N. F.	69
Rankin, Wm. S.	69
Rardon, Jeremiah	73
Ratliff, Eliza Ann	31
Ratliff, John A.	67, 68
Ratliff, Lizzie	67
Ratliff, Mary	64
Ratliff, Mary E. K.	67
Ratliff, Mary Eliza	70
Ratliffe, Cora A.	70
Ratliffe, Eliza Ann	29
Ratliffe, Elizabeth Susan	18
Ratliffe, J. A.	70
Ratliffe, Mackey	30
Ratliffe, Martha E.	32
Ratliffe, Sarah T.	31
Ratliffe, Thos. A.	70
Rawley	5
Rawley, Catherine Stubblefield	20
Rawley, D. A.	10

Rawley, Daniel Albert	20
Rawley, David I.	18, 20
Rawley, J. L.	4, 5
Rawley, J. S.	14
Rawley, L.	14
Rawley, Nancy	28
Rawley, Rufus	11, 14, 18
Rawley, T. L.	17
Ray, Usley	29
Reed, Anselom	28
Reed, Salley	24
Reid, David S., Gov.	8, 19
Reid, Dr.	4
Reid, F. L., Rev.	66-68
Reid, Frances	24
Reid, Frank L.	17
Reid, Hamilton	73
Reid, Henrietta Settle	19
Reid, James	5, 8, 17, 73
Reid, James W.	17, 19, 67
Reid, James, Rev.	17
Reid, Lamery	8, 19
Reid, Marth Edwards	17
Reid, N. F., Rev.	17, 19, 64-66, 68, 70
Reid, Numa F., Mrs.	17
Reid, Numa R.	17
Reid, Thomas S.	19
Rhoads, Joanna	30
Rhodes, Martha	24
Rice, William H.	28
Richardson, Edward	73
Richardson, Robert	28
Richardson, William	59
Ricks, Nancy	24
Rights, Douglas L.	61
Roach, Richard A.	28
Roberts, Bettie	45, 46
Roberts, Elizabeth	26
Roberts, James M.	28
Roberts, Martha	33
Roberts, Martha Jane	31
Roberts, Mrs.	44
Roberts, Naman	75
Roberts, Samuel	28
Roberts, Sires	75
Roberts, Thomas	28
Roberts, Bettie	45
Robertson, Ann C.	31
Robertson, Bertie M.	67
Robertson, Emily	31

Robertson, John F.	69
Robertson, Margaret B.	26
Robertson, Martha A.	29
Robertson, Mollie L.	67
Robertson, P. B.	33
Robertson, Sarah	26
Robin, Delila	28
Robinson, John	74
Robinson, William	74
Robison, Andw	76
Roscow, Nancy	37
Roseberry, Thomas	28
Roseborough, Amanda	25
Ross, Andrew D.	28
Ross, James	75
Russell, Moses H.	66
Russell, Nannie V.	66
Russell, William	73

—S—

Sainsbury, William Noel	62
Sams, Mrs.	8
Sanders, Elizabeth	27
Sanders, James	28
Sanders, Lewis C.	28
Sandridge, Thomas L.	28
Sapp, Robert J.	28
Sarten, Christopher	28
Sartin, Eliza	41
Sartin, Ellis	44, 45
Sartin, Jesse	28
Satterfield, Kinchen	28
Saunders, Eliza	36
Saunders, Emma	43, 46
Saunders, Lucy	32
Saunders, Robert	75
Saunders, William L.	62
Scales, Jackson	28
Scales, James	28
Scales, James M.	28
Scales, Noah	28
Scales, Pleasant	28
Scales, Rawley A.	29
Scales, Robert	29
Scales, Ruth M.	30
Scarlett, Robert E.	29
Scott, David	64
Scott, Dora	45
Scott, Pinckney	29

Scruggs, Edward	29	Simpson, Gena	36
Scrugs, Mary	31	Simpson, George Merion	34
Searcy, Alexander	29	Simpson, J. Hawkins, Dr. ...	34, 35, 47
Sergeant, William W.	29	Simpson, James M.	29
Semons, Andrew	29	Simpson, James T.	29
Sercey, Sarah C.	25	Simpson, Jinnie	38
Setliffe, Abram	29	Simpson, John H.	29
Settle, Benjamin	29, 73	Simpson, John Kerr	34
Settle, David	73	Simpson, Joseph Turner	34
Settle, Josiah	73	Simpson, Lou	37
Settle, William	74	Simpson, Lula Ida	34
Seybert, Richard A.	51	Simpson, Mag.	37, 40
Shann, Martha	27	Simpson, Manerva	46, 47
Shannon, Hugh	74	Simpson, Martha	35, 37
Shannon, William	74	Simpson, Mary	36
Sharp, A. H.	29	Simpson, Mary H.	20
Sharp, Absalom S.	29	Simpson, Mary Lucas Garrett	34
Sharp, Calvin	64	Simpson, Moses	34
Sharp, Charlotte	31	Simpson, Nannnie	42
Sharp, Hubbard	29	Simpson, Priscilla Simpson	34
Sharp, Jane	25	Simpson, Ruth	40
Sharp, John	29	Simpson, Sarah	30
Sharp, Joseph A.	29	Simpson, Sena	36
Sharp, Richard	29	Simpson, T. F.	65
Sharpe, V. A., Rev.	70	Simpson, Zebby Vance	34
Shelly, Jesse	33	Sims, John	29
Shepherd, John	29	Sinpson, Easter	38
Shepperd, Elizabeth	26	Sisk, Henderson	29
Shom, R. G.	29	Slade, Jane	46
Shomaston, Myers	29	Small, A. A.	29
Shropshire, Sarah	29	Small, Bryson	29
Shropshire, William	29	Small, Nathaniel	29
Shreve, Elizabeth	24	Smallwood, Onestus	29
Shreve, Rachael	27	Smith, A. P.	29
Shrieves, A. J.	29	Smith, Andrew, J.	29
Shrieves, John	29	Smith, Ann	29
Shrieves, Martha	29	Smith, Caleb	42
Shrieves, Robert	29	Smith, Calender S.	29
Shrieves, Thomas	29	Smith, Calvin G.	30
Shropshire, Henry	29	Smith, Daniel	30
Shropshire, James	29	Smith, Drury	30
Simpson, Aaron	34	Smith, Eldred H.	30
Simpson, Absalom	29	Smith, Elizabeth	27, 32
Simpson, Adaline	37	Smith, Harrell	65
Simpson, Amanda	35	Smith, J. Willie	13, 20
Simpson, C. R. S.	29	Smith, James	30
Simpson, Charlotte Wiseheart	34	Smith, James C.	30
Simpson, Dr.	35	Smith, Jane H.	26
Simpson, Francis "Frank" Lee	34	Smith, John	30
Simpson, Francis Lucas, Gen.	34	Smith, John R.	30

Smith, John Willie	8, 10, 19	Stacey, I.	30
Smith, Joseph	30	Stacey, John	30
Smith, Joseph H.	30	Staddler, Ann Eliza	46
Smith, Joshua T.	30	Staddler, Hannah	38, 41
Smith, L. W., Capt.	10	Stadley, William	30
Smith, Martha C.	29	Stallings, Eliza Jane	43, 45
Smith, Mary Jane	30	Stallings, Martin	30
Smith, Matilda M.	65	Stallions, Rebecca	32
Smith, Messrs.	70	Stanly, Elizabeth	31
Smith, Mrs.	10	Staples, Ann Penn	20
Smith, Nancy	28	Staples, James E.	30
Smith, Nathaniel H.	30	Staples, John	20
Smith, Sallie	41	Staples, Mrs.	10
Smith, Sarah	24	Staples, W. C., Dr.	10, 20
Smith, Shilly	24	Stapleton, William	73
Smith, Stephen	30	Stephens, Elizabeth	27
Smith, Susan	45	Stephens, Nannie	64
Smith, Thomas	30	Stephens, Walter	64
Smith, Virginia L.	70	Stephens, Wm.	75
Smith, Walker	30	Steward, John H.	30
Smith, William D.	30	Stier, William	30
Smith, William H.	30	Stiers, Allen B.	30
Smithey, Mrs.	37	Still, John	30
Smithy, John	30	Stires, Bedford	31
Smithy, Nancy	36	Stockton, John B.	31
Smothers, Adline	26	Stokes, William C.	17
Smothers, Frances	27	Stokes, William, Mrs.	18
Smothers, Harriet M.	29	Stone, James E.	31
Sneed, Noten	30	Stone, John D.	31
Sneed, Richard	30	Stone, Orinton B.	31
Sneed, Z. P.	30	Stone, Salathiel	31
Snets, Jonathan	30	Stovall, B., Maj.	69
Snuggs, Thos. B.	30	Strader, Henry	31
Solomon, Anderson	30	Strader, James	31
Solomon, Joseph	30	Strader, James M.	31
Solomon, Reuben	30	Strader, Morris	31
Solomon, William	30	Strat, William	31
Spaine, Nancy	3	Stricklen, Peter	31
Spalding, Andrew	19	Stringer, Sarah	27
Spalding, Willie	9, 19	Strong, James	75
Sparke, Wm. H.	30	Strong, John	31
Sparks, Mathew T.	30	Strong, Sarah P.	30
Sparks, Matilda	20	Strong, William R.	31
Sparks, Matthew	18	Stubblefield, Catherine	18
Sparks, Thos.	6	Stubblefield, Ed	74
Spaulding, Willie L.	11, 14, 68	Stubblefield, Malinda	18
Spencer, Martha Ann	29	Stubblefield, R. J. T.	31
Spiers, William	73	Stubblefield, Richd, Senr	74
Spotswood, Governor	57	Stubblefield, Tilman L.	31
Springs, J. D. M.	30	Stubblefield, Wesley	31

Suits, Mary	26	Thacker, Eli A.	31
Summers, Alice	40, 43, 44, 46	Thacker, Fredrick	31
Summers, Fannie	37	Thacker, Isaac G.	31
Summers, Manerva	41	Thacker, Joseph	31
Summers, Minerva	37	Thacker, Zack ^h	74
Summers, Mrs.	45	Thaker, Abner	31
Summers, Susan	40	Thomas, Ann	30
Sutel, William	74	Thomas, J. A.	22
Suthard, Jesse	31	Thomas, James F.	31
Suthard, Michael	31	Thomas, Joell	75
Sutherd, Henry	31	Thomas, Julia Ann	27
Suthorlin, George A.	31	Thomas, Lewes	75
Sutton, Elizabeth	35	Thomas, Martha	8, 19, 26, 32
Sutton, Millie Hughes	36	Thomas, Martha J.	31
Swann,	6, 18	Thomas, Mary T.	65
Swanton, John R.	61	Thomas, Michael H.	31
Swift, Ella	40, 42	Thomas, Michell	75
Swift, Rebecca	36	Thomas, Nancy	32
—T—		Thomas, Nathaniel	31
Tackit, John	75	Thomas, Robert	31
Tackit, Wm.	75	Thomas, Robert E.	32
Talley, John B.	31	Thomas, Ruth	66
Talley, William W.	31	Thomas, William J. M.	32
Talor, Wm.	73	Thomas, William Jones	65
Tarrant, Manlove	74	Thomas, William Y.	32
Tate, Basley	41, 42	Thomas, Wm. T.	66
Tate, Caleb	31	Thomason, Elizabeth	28
Tate, Lizzie	37	Thomilson, George	32
Taylor, John	74	Thompson, Alexander	32
Taylor, Delila	29	Thompson, Elizabeth Ann	29
Taylor, Edward	73	Thompson, Garland	32
Taylor, H. G.	31	Thompson, John	58
Taylor, James B.	31	Thomson, Richard	75
Taylor, John	73	Thomson, Wm.	75
Taylor, John W.	31	Thrall, Homer J., Rev.	14
Taylor, Martha	27	Thrasher, Isaac	76
Taylr, Wili	74	Tilar, Ruben	76
Terrell, Cornilia	38	Tily, Hiram	32
Terrell, James M.	31	Todd, Pleasant	32
Terrell, John	31	Tollerch, William	32
Terrell, Letitia	39	Tolloc, Frances	24
Terrell, Lienticia	36	Toney, Sherwood	75
Terrell, Martha	42, 46	Totten, Fannie	41
Terrell, Nannie	39	Totton, Nannie	40
Terry, Agness	26	Tranum, William	76
Terry, C. T.	31	Treson, James	73
Terry, Mary Ann M.	25	Troy, Allah	2
Thacker, Camel	31	Troy, Ella	2
		Troy, R. P., Rev.	2, 70
		Truitt, Willis	66

Index for 1988

Tucker, Nancy G.	27
Tucker, Pascal G.	32
Tucker, Paul	32
Tucker, Theodine	32
Tucker, Thomas J.	32
Tullock, Lucy	32
Turner, Ann E.	31
Turner, Harden	32
Turner, James P.	32
Turner, Tyre	32
Turner, William J.	32
Tyler, John	32
Tylor, Rubin	73

—U—

Underwood, Alice	41, 42
Underwood, Henrietta	36, 37
Underwood, Letitia	39
Underwood, Nancy	38
Underwood, Winnie	46
Unerwood, Nancy	36

—V—

Vaden, Mary A.	24
Vanlandingham, George	75
Vanlandingham, Richd	75
Vaughn, Emeline	30
Vaughn, Fheaderick C.	32
Vaughn, Susan	25
Vernon, Matilda	26
Vickers, Benjm	73
Vinson, Julia	43
Vinson, Sarah	41, 43

—W—

Waddell, James H.	69
Wade, B.	66
Wade, William B.,	32
Wadkins, Nannie J.	65
Waford, John	73
Walker,	15
Walker, Alfred	13, 20
Walker, Ann	20
Walker, Cornelia	21
Walker, David	73
Walker, Elizabeth Hopkins	20
Walker, Farevah	45

Walker, George	16
Walker, George T.	21
Walker, James	21
Walker, Joal	73
Walker, John	32, 73, 75
Walker, Josephine	39
Walker, Leonna	36
Walker, Lerah	30
Walker, Mary T.	27
Walker, Nannie	45
Walker, Philemon, Mrs.	45
Walker, Priscilla	27
Walker, Rev.	9
Walker, Robert	75
Walker, Sam., Mrs.	5
Walker, Sarah	21
Walker, Susan	38, 39
Walker, William	75
Wall,	10
Wall, A. J.	70
Wall, Elizabeth	25
Wall, Hessie	70
Wall, Jane	32
Wall, John	32
Wall, John C.	20
Wall, Loyd W.	32
Wall, Robert P.	67, 70
Wall, Samuel	66
Wall, Susan	28
Wall, W. D.	20
Wallace, Wm.	73
Walters, Annie	45
Walters, Mrs.	47
Ward, A. W.	32
Ward, George W.	32
Ward, H. Trawick	51, 61
Ward, Mildred	40
Wardlow, James, Senr	75
Ware, Dean	46
Ware, Jason	32
Ware, Johnnie	70
Ware, W. P.	70
Variner,	20
Wariner, Agnes Nunnally	20
Wariner, Robert H.	20
Warriner, Mrs.	12
Warters, Ned	32
Washburn, Joseph	32
Waters, Ann Edwards	17
Waters, Catherine E.	32

Waters, Lloyd	17	Wheeler, Dora	44
Waters, Mary S.	31	White, Isaac	74
Waters, Polly	32	White, Margaret	66
Waters, Selina	17	Whitt, Emma	44
Watkins, Arena	32	Whitt, Jim	43
Watkins, Bell	44	Whittemore, Martha	19
Watkins, Carrie V.	68	Whittemore, William M.	32
Watkins, Francis, Col.	68	William, Joseph	76
Watkins, Henrietta	26	Williams,	11
Watkins, Hiram	32	Williams, allen	76
Watkins, Hock	45	Williams, David	76
Watkins, John D., Capt.	67, 68	Williams, Disey	28
Watkins, John Guerrant, Capt.	70	Williams, Dora	45
Watkins, Lizzie F.	18	Williams, James	74
Watkins, Mary Jane	43	Williams, Mannaduke	32
Watkins, Minnie S.	65	Williams, Marish	20
Watkins, Col.	66	Williams, Martha Jane	19
Watlington, Bell	37	Williams, Mrs. Dr.	15
Watlington, Dora	44	Williams, Nancy	31
Watlington, Edith	36	Williams, Robert	74
Watlington, Jane	35, 40	Williams, Sarah	29
Watlington, Julia	39	Williams, William	32, 74
Watlington, Mary	36, 37	Williams, William T.	20
Watson, Joseph D.	32	Williamson, Mary	25
Watt,	7	Willson, Aquile	75
Watt, Jane Z.	25	Willson, Dolly	28
Watt, Robert B.	32	Willson, James	74, 76
Watt, Samuel	74	Wilsen, Wiliam	74
Watt, W. P.	18	Wilson	62
Waynick, Annie	40	Wilson, Corindon	32
Waynick, Julia	42, 46	Wilson, Dr.	8
Waynick, Mag	38, 41, 42, 43, 45	Wilson, Elizabeth	28
Webb, Frances	1	Wilson, Emily	31
Webster, Abner	31	Wilson, George A.	69
Webster, Amanda	68	Wilson, Jack H., Jr.	61
Webster, B. R.	70	Wilson, N. H. D., Dr.	8, 19
Webster, Charles	32	Wilson, Nancey	36
Webster, Elizabeth	32	Wilson, Urias	32
Webster, George W.	32	Wilson, William	32
Webster, HESSIE V.	67	Wilson, Sarah J.	31
Webster, J. R.	12, 16, 20	Winchester, Dr.	4, 13, 17
Webster, Nancy	32	Winchester, J. E.	33
Webster, Solomon	73	Winchester, Martha T.	28
Webster, W. A.	67	Winchester, Tabitha	25
Weeden, Manerva	30	Windson, John	33
Wells, Sarah W.	25	Witherly, Edward	73
Wesson, Mary	29	Withers, Charles Brooks	66
Wharton, Johnnie	68	Withers, David Lawson	10, 18
Wharton, R. G., Dr.	67	Withers, Elijah K.	18, 68
Wharton, W. W.	68	Withers, Elizabeth Susan Ratliffe... 18	

Index for 1988

Withers, Kate E.	68
Withers, Lawson	7
Withers, Nancy Lawson	3, 18
Wood, Abraham	54
Woodburn, Tabitha R.	33
Woods, Eliza	41, 45, 47
Woods, Merady	38, 39, 40
Woodson, Jane E.	67
Woodson, Martha	32
Woodson, Robert H.	67
Woollen, Ann	31
Wooten, Wm.	74
Wray, Dick	16
Wray, Grant A.	33
Wray, Richard H.	21
Wright, A. W.	70
Wright, Ann	17
Wright, Elizabeth	28
Wright, James	17
Wright, Louis B.	61
Wright, Nancy	24
Wright, Sallie Lindsey	17

Wright, William	33
Wright, William L.	12, 68
Wyfliet,	53
Wynick, Rachel	44

— Y —

Yancey, Lewis B.	33
Yomens, Drure	75
Yomon, Shadrich	75
York, Alpha S.	32
York, John B.	33
Young, Emily	17
Young, James	76
Young, John	75, 76
Young, Martha	25
Young, Patsee	23, 28
Young, Samuel	73
Young, Thomas	76
Young, William	70, 75
Younger, Rebecca	36

The Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

Officers

President.....	Jamie C. Smith, Stoneville
Vice-President.....	George A. Atkins, Eden
Recording Secretary.....	Mrs. Cora Ann Turner, Eden
Corresponding Secretary.....	Michael Perdue, Wentworth
Treasurer.....	Wayne Parleir, Eden

Directors

Robert W. Carter, Jr.....	Reidsville
Mrs. Robbin G. Dodson.....	Stoneville
Don Hoover.....	High Point
James R. Meador.....	Wentworth
Mrs. Lib Meador.....	Wentworth
Mrs. Peggy Osborne.....	Eden
Mrs. Zelma Scott.....	Stoneville
Rich Seybert.....	Ruffin
Mrs. Linda C. Vernon.....	Stoneville

Honorary Directors

Lindley S. Butler.....	Wentworth
Mrs. Lillian Coleman.....	Reidsville
Mrs. Lucy M. Rankin.....	Reidsville
Charles D. Rodenbough.....	Madison
V. Siler Rothrock.....	Reidsville

C977.77
T862

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy



The Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

VOLUME XIV

NUMBER 1

JUNE, 1989

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy

The journal is published semiannually in June and December by the Rockingham County Historical Society, Box 84, Wentworth, N.C. 27375. Members of the society, for which the annual dues are \$8.00 for an individual and \$12.00 for a family membership, receive the journal. Single issues may be purchased for \$3.50 per number plus 50 cents mailing charge.

Editorial Policy

The publication committee is interested in receiving articles on the history and genealogical source materials of Rockingham County and the adjacent area. The historical articles must be well written and thoroughly documented. Genealogical articles should consist of previously unpublished primary source materials pertaining to Rockingham County, such as abstract of local records and edited diaries, letters, or church records. Papers on family history should not be submitted. All copy, including footnotes, should be typed double-space. Articles and correspondence should be sent to the editor: Robert W. Carter, Jr., Route 2, Box 762, Reidsville, N.C. 27320.

Cover Illustration

The old Madison Male Academy built in 1844 on an acre lot donated by Randal Duke Scales to Henry Baughn. This sketch was completed in April, 1950 by Nancy Woodburn Watkins and was based on her 1900 pencil sketch. From *A Heritage To Honor*.

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy

VOLUME XIV

JUNE, 1989

NUMBER 1

CONTENTS

Reminiscences of Madison by "Isaac" (Nat S. Smith) transcribed by Joyce Mitchell with notes by Charles D. Rodenbough	1
A Sketch of "Isaac" and His Family by Robert W. Carter, Jr.	39

REMINISCENCES OF MADISON

by
"Isaac"

(Nathaniel Scales Smith)

Transcribed by Joyce Mitchell

Notes by Charles D. Rodenbough

Editor's note: The following articles were written by Nat S. Smith of Stoneville, North Carolina, under the pseudonym "Isaac" and appeared in the March 1910 issues of *The Madison Herald*.¹ The original files of the newspaper are lost but a Madison resident, Mrs. Nat M. Pickett,² clipped and preserved the articles and in 1949 submitted them to *The Madison Messenger* for reprint. *The Messenger* ran the articles between August 25, 1949 and November 10, 1949.

In January 1983 one of the Madison Library employees, Joyce Mitchell, prepared a typed copy of the articles from the 1949 reprint and placed a copy in the collection of the Library. Appreciation is expressed to Joyce Mitchell and the Madison Library staff for preserving this unique look at early Madison.

CHAPTER ONE

About 60 or 70 years ago a grist, flour and saw mill was located on Mayo River at what is now the town of Avalon.³ An old negro named Isaac was the presiding genius of this mill and one of his most distinguishing features was an abnormally developed upper lip. The writer at that time was clerking for Wm. L. Scales,⁴ whose store was on the corner diagonally opposite the present Hardware Store of Pratt Bros.⁵ On the upper lip of this clerk a trouble-some boil located itself and from some fancied resemblance of Isaac, the miller, Mr. Scales, gave him the soubriquet of "Isaac". This name stuck to him like a leech, and hence to avoid Ego-ism "Isaac" will write these sketches.

Madison is an old town, much older than its oldest inhabitant would imagine. It was a town before the Declaration of Independence was announced by the Old Liberty Bell in Philadelphia in 1776. It was not then known by its present name, but was called "Log Town".⁶ Over 100 years ago an old ballad had these stanzas in it:

Danville's drunk, Leaksville's sunk,
And Log Town's all on fire;
The boats can run to Eagle Falls

And they can run no higher.
So clear the way for Jackson Town,
No others need aspire;
She's got the coon and pretty soon
She'll set the world on fire!⁷

Now there are very few people in Rockingham County that ever heard of the town of Jackson. In fact it only lives in song and story and you would look in vain for ruins. As Madison was concerned greatly about this town, and its businessmen saw ghosts whenever its name was mentioned, it may not be amiss to give the history of Jackson,⁸ and then, as Judge Watts would say, "consign it to the archives of gravity."

Isaac would never have known anything of this phantom town had it not been that he was in Mebane & Scott's⁹ office about 24 years ago and they showed him a record of a case in court of J. M. Morehead,¹⁰ afterwards Governor of North Carolina, against a corporation known as the Roanoke Navigation Company.¹¹ This Corporation was granted by the State the control of the navigation of the Dan and Roanoke Rivers and their tributaries, and laid a heavy tax on all boats carrying freight on these streams.

Now this company, probably aided by outside capital, concluded to go into the booming business and many modern boomers might learn a useful lesson from their manipulations. They first circulated the report that Eagle Falls¹² - situated a mile or so below the present Settle's Bridge¹³ - would be the head of navigation of the Dan. That a big dam would be built at Eagle Falls in order to get ample power for all sorts of machinery. That cotton and woolen mills, flour mills, saw mills, and cotton gins would line the banks of the Dan at Eagle Falls, and of course no boats could go higher and Madison and Leaksville would be compelled to get freight from this point, as no landing would be made at Madison or Leaksville.

These reports were widely circulated and the good people of Madison and Leaksville trembled in their boots (everybody wore boots then) and felt that so far as these towns were concerned Othello's occupation was gone. After these reports had ample time to circulate and do the work intended, the company issued great placards and hand bills setting forth the wonderful advantages that the new town of Jackson, located at Eagle Falls, would have and advertised hundreds of lots to be sold at public auction, one-half cash and the remainder at one and two years time. The advertisement also mentioned wonderful industries that the company itself would estab-

lish at once.^{13a}

So thoroughly were these placards and advertisements distributed that a vast concourse of people assembled, eager to invest in town lots on the day of sale. To increase the excitement, a great many boats, one with a fine brass band, were in the river, and with much bustle and confusion were unloading hogsheads of molasses, barrels of flour and boxes of merchandise to be placed in ample warehouses as soon as they could be built. In the meantime, they were to be covered with tarpaulins to protect them from the weather.

The people were completely bamboozled, and when the selling commenced, bit like knotty heads, and lots near the river brought fabulous prices. The town of Jackson was laid off into streets and Washington, Adams, Monroe, Jefferson, Patrick Henry and Randolph were to be honored by calling them after their names. So eminent a man as Governor Morehead was among the purchasers.¹⁴

After all the excitement was over and the people returned to their homes, the goods left on the banks were reloaded and the boats quietly wended their way down the river.

One man who had more faith than all the rest built a house, and a large hole where the cellar was located is all that can be seen of the one-day-old town of Jackson, N.C.

Requiscat in Pace.

CHAPTER TWO

Isaac's first impression of Madison was derived from a visit he made to the town when he was 8 or 10 years old. He rode a broad backed fat horse bare-back from his home, a distance of 4 miles. His legs, when astraddle of the horse, were at right angles to his body. On arriving, he rode up to a long horse rack opposite a saloon and Pleasant Black's large white store.¹⁵

When Isaac alided off the fat back of his horse his legs had been spraddled out for so long a time he found he could not walk, and his efforts to do so caused considerable amusement to some loafers at the saloon. One of them told him if he would go to the blacksmith's shop the smith would hammer his legs out straight. This remark made Isaac blush like a pickled cabbage, and seeing a sypathizing and benignant look on Mr. Black's face, he made as straight a course for his store as the condition of his legs would allow.

From that day to the death of Mr. Black (or old Sawney,¹⁶ as he was familiarly called) he and Isaac were fast friends. Many marks of affection has Isaac received from his old friend and his memory is



Rural Retreat or Boxwoods. Built ca. 1800 by Randal Duke Scales the founder of Madison. Home of the Vaughn-Penn Family since 1875.

Photo from A Heritage to Honor.

green to this day.

A history of Madison without a page devoted to Sawney Black would be woefully incomplete. He was a large man, weighing perhaps 200 pounds, but owing to his great energy he was never obese. He had a handsome benevolent looking face and was a man of few words. His religious views were very peculiar. He believed the first twenty chapters of Genesis, but discarded the rest of the Bible. He could often be seen pouring over the 20 chapters, but what comfort he got out of them Isaac never knew.

He was a merchant selling everything and when an article could not be found in other stores Sawney was quite likely to have it.

In those days it was not considered anything out of the way for members of the church to sell spiritous liquors in their stores, but to retail it in saloons was thought inconsistent with church membership and the line was drawn here. Sawney Black sold large quantities of whiskies, brandies, and wines, and no man say that he ever sold any adulterated stuffs.

One thing Sawney Black knew, and the knowledge died with him, was how to take one barrel of strong brandy and make three, and chemical analysis could not find any deleterious substances in it.

Being both economical and frugal, he amassed much wealth, and

although like everybody else he lost all his valuable slaves, yet when he died he left good legacies to his children.¹⁷ No worthy man that needed help was ever refused assistance by him, and much preferred to help the worthy poor than to lend at a higher rate of interest to his rich neighbors.

Isaac calls to mind one instance. A good man in the country was almost ruined by a very disastrous fire, losing all he had saved up for a lifetime. He sent a trusted servant to Madison to lay in about \$100 worth of needed supplies. There was not a merchant that would accommodate him. He was passing by Mr. Black's store gloomy and despondent, and was about to return home without the needed supplies. Mr. Black hailed him and when he came near, handed him one hundred dollars and told him to tell his master that if that was not enough to come down and get as much as he needed. The servant expended nearly all with Sawney Black. The unfortunate man was a dear relative of Isaac and can my readers wonder why I should love Sawney Black?

Sawney Black cut down a large walnut tree and sawed it into wide planks. From this lumber he got James Hall,¹⁸ who is now a nonogenarian, to take his measure and make him a coffin. This coffin Sawney stored away for use when he should bid adieu to earthly scenes. But he was not destined to be buried in it. When William Lindsay,¹⁹ a good elder of the Presbyterian Church, died in Madison, Mr. Black let his friend have it. But it was not long before Mr. Hall had another ready for Sawney. In this he was finally laid to Mother Earth.

Mr. Black has been unjustly criticized for his treatment of William Hagood.²⁰ The facts are as follows: Bill Hagood was a miser; and a cabinet workman who rented his shop from Mr. Black. His shop was situated at the foot of the hill in the rear of the Hotel and dwelling of Mr. Black. Mr. Black furnished material for his work and supplies for his table. Knowing that Hagood had plenty of money he suffered him to get heavily in debt before he called for a settlement. To Mr. Black's utter surprise, Hagood would not pay him, claiming he had no money to pay with.

In those days a man could be put in jail for a debt. He told Hagood that if he did not settle he would be compelled to jail him. The old miser laughed at his threats. At last Mr. Black's patience becoming exhausted, he had Hagood arrested and jailed. Mr. Black paid his board and jail fees regularly until by accident Hagood drank water that had been standing on white paint, sickened and died.

The old miser never revealed where his money was hid, and Mr. Black lost all. No one would have blamed Sawney if Hagood had

died of old age, but so obstinate was Hagood that he would have died of old age ere he would have revealed his hidden treasure and paid his honest debts.

There are many descendants of Sawney Black in Madison and other places, but I doubt whether any of them have greater regard for his memory than Isaac.

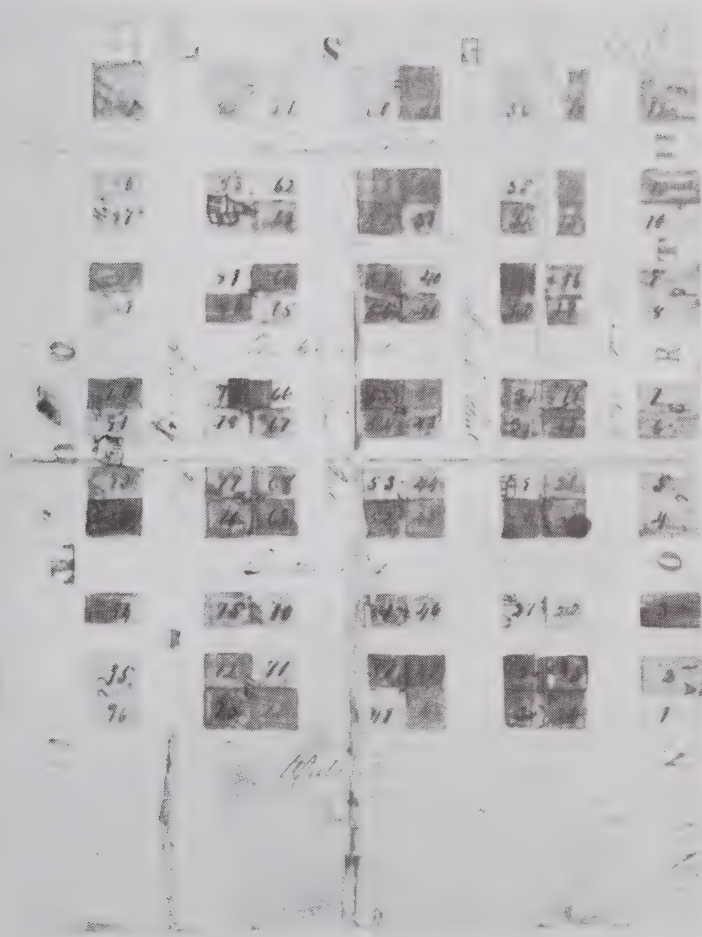
CHAPTER THREE

Editor's Note in 1949: This is the third of a series of reprints which originally appeared in the Madison "*Herald*" in 1910, written by a man who used the penname "Isaac". To date we have received no clue as to his identity, other than the fact that he was, in his youth a clerk at Wm. Scales' store. Last week E. V. Penn called for information on "Isaac" and told us that some of the Hagood furniture mentioned in last week's reprint, is among the furnishings at the "Boxwoods". Any information leading to the identification of "Isaac" will be welcome.²¹

Isaac will not attempt in these sketches to arrange events in any kind of chronological order, but will record them just as they come to mind. The only events of which he is absolutely sure of the dates are his own birthday and his marriage. And now, if anyone should desire to know when certain things took place, Isaac will give the old negro's answer to the question as to how old he was: "I was born befo' the war, Boss." So, all these events happened before the war, and all the characters portrayed lived mainly before the war, but some survived it many years.

Madison has had its ups and downs, both real and figurative. It, in the days when politics waxed hot between Whig and Democrat, was a strong Democratic precinct and there were very few Whigs that polled any votes. Leaksville, on the contrary, was a strong Whig precinct and very few Democratic votes were polled there. For this reason there was very decided rivalry between the two places. Isaac, however, who divided his time between these places, having near relatives in each, did not partake of these prejudices.

During the year 1857 (Isaac thinks) there were 59 cases of typhoid fever in Madison.²² Many died. One beautiful girl about 13 years old, Cornelia Scales,²³ a daughter of Major William L. Scales, was among the first victims. She was an exceedingly bright and lovely child and was much loved by Isaac and everyone who knew her. Isaac was asked by her father to write or select a suitable epitaph for her tombstone.



The earliest known map of Madison was probably drawn about 1850 by John New. Map courtesy Charles D. Rodenbough.

The cause of the epidemic was never known, but many charged it to the catalpa tree by which the town was overrun. These were all cut down. Typhoid fever was then thought to be both contagious and infectious. Many people fled the place and few on the outside were bold enough to enter it. The business of the place was very much injured and it was some time before the town recovered her equilibrium.

Some years before the events just recorded Madison had another scare which drove many of her people out of town and the place was quarantined. Col. James Irvin²⁴ had been to Boston to lay in a stock of goods. One of the boxes he was opening in the presence of several parties when he broke out with the smallpox. Some of the parties present took the disease, among them a Miss Amos.²⁵ She died and was possibly the only one who did. Smallpox, in those days, was more dreaded than war or famine. So Madison was for some time cut off from the outside world.

These topics are disagreeable to write about and Isaac is glad that he has no more of them to record.

The town soon began to put on airs and one James Raines²⁶ and his flatnose brother whose name Isaac has forgotten established a newspaper. It was called the *Madison Democrat*.²⁷ If Isaac mistakes not, the building in which William Hagood formerly worked was fitted up for a printing office and one of Isaac's brothers was Editor-in-Chief. The paper ran on smoothly for some time and the Editor went to Iowa and other states of the northwest prospecting. During his absence, William Raines concluded he would tabulate the census of Madison. Now, Mr. Raines was not an expert at tabulation and forgot to tell his readers how the table was to be read and left the interpretation of the census tables to the taste of each reader.

A copy of the *Democrat* fell into the hands of Jim Long, Editor of the *Lexington Flag*, an ultra-Whig paper. Now Mr. Long chose to read the census of Madison in his own way, with this marvelous result: "Madison" he says, "is a wonderful town and by its census has 17 female blacksmiths, 150 midwives, and 25 male washerwomen, and if these midwives are kept as busy in Madison as they are in other towns, the population of the town will be 100,000 in a few years, etc., etc."

When the Editor of the *Madison Democrat* returned, a copy of the *Lexington Flag* was handed to him with the comment on the census marked. The Editor of the *Democrat* was an exceedingly sensitive man and when he read Long's comments and saw the ridiculous census that was published in his own paper, the explosion of his

wrath made things hot in the office.

The wise thing for the Editor of the *Democrat* would have been to laugh off the incident, but his journalistic experience was meager, and in his hot displeasure, he went for the *Flag* with gloves off. The battle waged fiercely for some time, Leaksville taking the part of Long and the *Flag* while Madison sided with the *Democrat*.

Mr. Long had a long, thin nose and in one of his articles he complained that the *Democrat* had exposed him to an arctic breeze, or some expression of that sort, whereupon the *Democrat* replied with the following doggerel:

“Jim Long nose
I never chose
Thus to expose
The tip of his nose
To the cold snows
For fear it might froze.”

On the next week Long said, “My nose has sneezed three times in recognition of the compliment,” and shortly afterward the quarrel ceased.

The whole quarrel taught Isaac that to fight a word battle one should be as calm as a basin of potato starch. The Editor of the *Democrat* surpassed his opponent in scholarship, literary culture and graceful style of expression, but he was no match for his antagonist in sarcasm and billingsgate.²⁸

CHAPTER FOUR

Madison has been blessed with several good schools. The first that Isaac can now recall was taught by Junius Irving Scales,²⁹ son



Junius I. Scales (1832-1880) was a teacher in Madison during the 1850s. He later lived in Mississippi but returned to Greensboro in 1871 to practice law with his brother, future Gov. A. M. Scales.

This photo once believed to be Gov. Scales has now been identified as J.I. Scales. Photo from Rockingham County: A Brief History.

of Dr. Robert Scales of Lenox Castle³⁰ in this county, and a brother of Governor A. M. Scales.³¹ Governor Scales had his shingle out as a lawyer in Madison at this time. Many pupils from a distance attended this school. Bug Scales (for so he was called by his friends) was a ripe scholar and a severe disciplinarian. His boys had to walk a chalk line and whippings were freely given for imperfect lessons.

The following story is told of Mr. Scales while he taught afterwards in the town of Leaksville: Charlie Reynolds³² now of Winston-Salem and ex-Lieutenant Governor during the Daniel Russell regime, was a pupil under Mr. Scales. For some reason Charlie fell under the ban and was given a severe thrashing. His coat was torn in several places by the violence of the rod and this was noticed by Charlie's good mother on his return from school. The next morning Charlie brought to Mr. Scales a note from his mother reading about as follows: "Mr Scales - will you please hereafter, when Charlie needs a whipping, make him pull off his coat, as the switches injure it so badly. Yours truly." Now if all mothers were as sensible as Mrs. Dr. Reynolds³³ was the teacher would have an easier task governing his school.

Mr. Scales, Isaac thinks, was succeeded by Rev. L. H. Shook.³⁴ Mr. Shook was a very small man, weighing scarcely 100 pounds. He had a pleasant and handsome countenance, and ruled more by love than the fear he inspired. The school was called "Beulah Institute"³⁵ and was quite popular for many years. Isaac attended this school a while, and at the close of the last session he attended, was appointed a committee of one to go to Salem to lay in candy, cake, oranges, etc., for a big school party. He went by stage and passed through what is now Winston, but no such place was in existence then.

Mr. Shook was an eloquent preacher of the Missionary Baptist Church - a quiet, sincere man and much esteemed. When he left Madison he went to Virginia and Isaac lost sight of him forever.

At the time the Beulah Institute was flourishing, Rev. Jacob Doll,³⁶ of the Presbyterian Church, established a high school for girls and young ladies. It made Madison a very lively town. The presence of so many pretty and interesting girls at church brought out all the boys, and the churches were well attended. It was an excellent school but rather cramped for quarters. There was at the time no building in the town well suited for a school of such a character, but Mr. Doll did all that was possible.³⁷

He was a large fleshy, lovable man, and in addition to his wonderful mental acquirements, was noted for his gastronomic achievements. He had two rivals in this last accomplishment in the persons

of Rev. W. N. Mebane³⁸ and Mr. Joe H. Cardwell.³⁹ These three gentlemen met on a wedding occasion at a place noted for its cuisine and hospitality not very far from Madison.

Three young men, each selecting his champion, laid wagers that his man would eat the biggest supper. This was kept secret from the crowd. In a few minutes a colored waitress opened the parlor door and, making a graceful courtesy, said, "Ladies and gentlemen, supper are ready." A broad smile greeted this announcement and the guest filed into the large dining room, and by a preconcerted arrangement, the three gastronomics were placed side by side.

The table proper was covered by sweet nonsense in profusion. Scattered over its surface were pyramids of grated cheese, and golden butter in the shape of pineapples was placed at convenient distances from each guest. In the center of the table was a huge pyramid of cakes, looking like a bank of ice, while choice flowers adorned its apex and clustering foliage trailed down its side. Such a variety of dainties could only be seen on the tables of the well-to-do in ante-bellum days.

But that part of the feast which was most relished by our gastronomics was the side tables. One was loaded with beef, mutton, shoat, turkey, duck, geese and chicken. At another, coffee, tea and cream were dispensed. From another, all kinds of bread, but the most popular of all the breads were the biscuits. These were seasoned with grease from the fat fowls that were baked. The dough was worked up in a large wooden tray, and then placed on a large block, part of a huge oak, and beaten with wooden mauls. Such biscuits as were made in those days. Like the art of embalming, it is lost forever.

Brass candlesticks were placed all over the room filled with adamantine candles⁴⁰ (oil was then unknown), and the Major Domo (head servant) kept these continually trimmed with a pair of brass snuffers, the emblem of his office.

But Isaac has lost sight of the three gastronomics. These were faithfully served and the rapidity with which their plates were filled and cleared was really astonishing. The other quests had finished with the side tables before these three were fairly started. "More biscuits!" exclaimed the young men to the Major Domo, and from an unseen source they came in large quantities.

After a while the perseverance of our gastronomics attracted the attention of others and seeing they were the observed of all observers, they began to slack up, and soon laid down their knives and forks. Mr. Joe Henry Cardwell was crowned the victor. What a glorious event was a wedding supper in ante-bellum days! It makes Isaac's

mouth water to write about it.

An anecdote is told of the Rev. Jacob Doll as follows: He was invited by a Baptist brother to assist him in a meeting near Pelham in Caswell County. He accepted and preached about a week. A great deal of interest was shown and there were many conversions. At the close of the meeting, as is usual, the Communion of the Lord's Supper was celebrated. After all the members were served and the bread and wine replaced upon the table, the minister returned to Mr. Doll and said, "I'm sorry, Brother Doll, since it is the Lord's table, and not mine, that I cannot invite you to partake with us." Mr. Doll arose, and taking the elements in his hands, said, "You say, brother, that this is the Lord's table, and that being so, I have as much right to partake as any one has," and then reverently took the bread and wine.

CHAPTER FIVE

For many years there were only three church buildings in Madison, the Presbyterian, Baptist and Methodist.⁴¹ The Presbyterian and the Methodist worked together without friction but neither could get along with their Baptist brother. But strange to say, while the Methodist and Presbyterian were in full accord, yet in their doctrines they were very unlike. The Methodists believed in falling from grace, while the Presbyterians believed in the final perseverance of the saints. But their peculiar views were not combatted by each other, both fully agreeing to disagree. Governor Vance said that in religion he was a Presbyterian and did not believe in falling from grace and was always falling while his brother, Robert Vance⁴² was a Methodist and believed in falling from grace and never fell. This may have been the state of affairs in Madison.

The question of the mode of baptism was an exceedingly hot one and there was firing along the whole line constantly. There was not much culture or erudition among the Baptist devine in Madison in those days, but they stood to their guns even when firing blank cartridges. They did not know much Greek, but they were very familiar with bapto, batidzo, apo, eis and en,⁴³ and they frequently double shotted their guns with these and fired broad side into their opponents. The following incident Isaac well remembers.

The pulpit of the Baptist church was placed between the two doors at the entrance, so that you did not see the minister until you entered and took your seat facing the entrance doors.⁴⁴ Rev. Stinson Ivy⁴⁵

was preaching one Sunday morning and was ridiculing "baby sprinkling" as he called it. In the heat of his discussion a man outdoors, unseen by Mr. Ivy, beckoned Dr. Robert Galloway¹⁶ to come out. As he passed out, Mr. Ivy exclaimed to the audience, they always run when you throw hot shot at them. Now Dr. Galloway did not hear the remark, but some one knowing the Doctor's irritability told him of it. On Monday morning Dr. Galloway with his horsewhip in his hand met Mr. Ivy at the store, now Pratt Brothers, and told him he must swallow his words, which Mr. Ivy proceeded to do with alacrity. This incident shows the temper of the times.

When Isaac first knew Madison, Rev. Mebane,¹⁷ one of the most consecrated of men, was pastor of the Presbyterian Church. On one occasion Mr. Mebane was preaching quite an affecting sermon and many were silently shedding tears. One lady, a good sweet woman, but one who was not well able to control her temper at all times and her emotions being much affected by the sermon, rose in her seat and shouted, "Glory! Glory!" Mr. Mebane stopped short in his sermon and said, "Jane, when you get through let me know and I will commence again." It may be unnecessary to add that Jane got through at once. He preached logical and learned sermons, but in this age of sham and shoddy would be ranked with the "dry-as-dust" contingent. He died in Madison - a great and good man.

When Isaac was about 15 years of age he was quite a wag and was very fond of jokes. On one occasion while he was at church, there sat in front of him a young man with a flaming red head. It was in the rear of the church, the place where the young men liked to congregate.¹⁸ There were 15 or 20 boys on seats near the young man of the brilliant red hair, and Isaac sat immediately in his rear. He very solemnly poked his finger near the young man's head turning it as the blacksmith turns his iron in the furnace to heat it. Then he would put his finger on his knee and hammer it like the blacksmith on his anvil. The young men around began to laugh. The girls to the right were soon attracted to Isaac's antics and nearly all were in a titter. In the meanwhile Isaac was as solemn as a judge and heated and hammered his finger. Mr. Mebane who was preaching requested that they be quiet. Again Isaac commenced his heating and hammering and the disorder was so marked that Mr. Mebane told them if they could not behave, to leave the church, but said he, referring to Isaac, "I am glad that there is one young man who knows how to conduct himself."

Sometime back Isaac put a fine of \$20 on a young man for a much less offense at church, but times change and we change with them.



The old Madison Methodist Episcopal Church South completed ca. 1845. The building was moved across the street in 1909 when a new building was erected. The old church was torn down in the 1970s. Photo courtesy Charles D. Rodenbough.

The Methodist Church has the itinerary system and hence few of them stayed long enough in one place to be favorably known. One Methodist minister Isaac particularly remembers for his earnestness and eloquence, Rev. Fletcher Reid.⁴⁹ Isaac does not remember whether he was ever in charge of the Madison church, but he remembers frequently hearing him preach. His sermons were always timely, thoughtful and suggestive. It seemed impossible for him to preach a dull sermon. He enlivened every topic. There has never been a minister in Isaac's opinion in Rockingham County that was his superior as a pulpit pastor. Rev. Charles F. Deems,⁵⁰ of Greensboro, afterwards pastor of the Church of the Strangers in New York was perhaps his equal and these two were the finest preachers of the Methodist Church in the state. During the week of the great Chicago fire, Isaac heard Mr. Deems in New York but his sermon was not equal to the great efforts of Mr. Reid.

One of the great features of the Methodists in the days of which these sketches are a record, was the camp meeting. Isaac well remembers one held at Bethesda near Mr. Sam Wall's.⁵¹ Isaac at this time was teaching in a public school, located just beyond the limit of

the present corporation of Madison on the west side.⁵² He was boarding with Mr. Jackson Scales⁵³ whose good wife Maria was a daughter of Mr. Pleasant Black, by his first wife.⁵⁴ Mrs. Scales was noted for exquisite cuisine and her home was very popular with the preachers, who were equally as fond of good eating as the moderns are. Isaac frequently met with Methodist ministers at this home as well as at the home of Maj. William L. Scales. where he boarded when he attended Mr. Shook's school.

When the time for the camp meeting arrived Jackson Scales and family and Isaac broke up house keeping in Madison and moved to the camp ground occupying a hastily constructed house made of plank nailed upright, with a loft accessible by a ladder. This loft the males occupied while the lower floor was of dirt covered with wheat straw. This was reserved for the women. The tent was full of people and if Isaac's memory does not deceive him an intellectual lady now of Madison was among the girls in attendance. There were several ministers in attendance, but so far did Mr. Reid surpass them that Isaac cannot even recall their names.

One incident of this camp meeting Isaac well remembers. He was so carried away by one of the sermons of Mr. Reid, that not withstanding the fact that he was a blue stocking Presbyterian shouted as lustily as Mr. Rice Smith himself.⁵⁵ The latter gentleman was a large, portly redfaced man, who, if he did not believe in falling from grace, was always falling, the love of brandy being his besetting sin. But to his credit be it said, after his spree was over, he would come before the church weeping like a child and confess his sin.

What glorious times were had at those old fashioned camp meetings. Living much in the open air, the appetite was whetted to a keen edge and turkeys, chickens, beef, mutton, shoat and boiled ham disappeared with marvelous rapidity. Isaac is glad that he has no such appetite now for he would not be able to gratify it, but the very thought of the good things then so bountiful makes his mouth water. Mrs. Maria Scales⁵⁶ was noted for the many dainties with which her table was loaded as well as the bountiful supply of staple goods. One thing however was seldom seen in those days, and that is ice cream and its absence added to the longevity of the people; for people in those days lived 'till they died, and did not die 'til their time came.

CHAPTER SIX

In these sketches Isaac will speak of several men who, while closely identified with Madison and her history, did not live in the town at all.

Many years before the war, farmers as a rule did not raise nearly so many hogs as was necessary for the use of the family; especially was this the case with those who owned slaves. Many rich slave owners did not make buckle and tongue meet at the end of the year, this being often the case on the finest farms. This gave the rich slave-owner no concern, for the increase in the number and value of his slaves fully satisfied him, even if he did have to carry over deficits from year to year. He knew very well if a day of reckoning should come he could easily dispose of a slave or two and pay off all his debts.

Several men living in Rockingham and on the borders of Rockingham in Henry and Pittsylvania Counties in Virginia had so many slaves that they did not personally know one half of them. Some of the slave-owners of Virginia in the counties named owned lands in Rockingham and would stock their farms, which they called "quarters", with sufficient force of slaves to tend, and under a much despised overseer. To keep the slaves in subjection a police force called patrollers was necessary. Hence, the old song, "*Run, negro, run the patrollers will catch you!*"

It is said that a Mr. Hairston (Samuel,⁵⁷ Isaac thinks) passed through Madison going to one of his quarters near Walnut Cove and overtook a crowd of negroes going to the same place. He did not know the negroes and they did not know him. Entering into a conversation with them he soon found out that the negroes knew him by reputation if not by sight and soundly abuse him for everything that was mean and cowardly. Mr. Hairston soon rode ahead and arrived at the quarters an hour or more ahead of the negroes. The latter on their arrival were told that Mr. Hairston, the Master, had arrived, and fearing the lash ran to the woods, where they stayed until Mr. Hairston left.

But all this is a digression which Isaac did not intend when he started out. The lack of hogs was fully met by immense droves from Kentucky, Tennessee and Western Virginia. (There was no state of West Virginia then.) Word would be sent by the drovers when they would arrive at different places and a large crowd of buyers would assemble at Madison to buy. Webster's *Weekly* slanderously affirms that Madison was called Hogtown on this account.⁵⁸ It is as unjust to call Madison Hogtown as it would be to call Reidsville "Jugtown" from the

amount of liquid cussedness revealed there every Monday morning in the Recorder's court.

Isaac was once asked why there were so many 3-cent pieces of silver circulating in this neighborhood. Thereby hangs a tale which Isaac proposes to tell. A large drove of hogs was advertised to be in Madison on a certain date. Mr. Len W. Anderson,⁵⁹ a remarkably generous and hospitable gentleman, who lived up on Dan River, came to town to lay in his supply of hogs, as also did another man, whose name Isaac does not wish to reveal. The latter was a man of wealth, but lacked culture, and when he came to town always drank too much brandy. Mr. Anderson expected to get money from some one in town, but was disappointed. So seeing the nameless man and knowing him to be always supplied with ready cash, borrowed four or five dollars with a stipulation that it was to be paid back in silver. This stipulation Mr. Anderson forgot, but the lender did not.

So when Mr. Anderson came to town when the money was due he offered the lender paper currency. But this he absolutely refused to accept, reminding him of the stipulation that it was to be paid back in silver. Mr. Anderson asked for a week to get up the coin, stating that was no small matter to get together such a pile of silver. Mr. Anderson left and went first to Salem (there was no Winston then) and got all the 3¢ pieces he could find. He then visited Salisbury, Lexington, Charlotte and Greensboro, and finally got all the money in 3¢ pieces. He met the lender punctually and handed him over the silver. The air was hot with the explosions of rage on the part of the lender, and nothing but Mr. Anderson's good nature prevented a battle royal. But as the stipulation said silver, the lender could not see any loophole of escape as it was certainly silver that Mr. Anderson offered. For a year or more the lender went about exchanging his 3¢ pieces for larger coin, paying 5% premium. This is Isaac's answer as to why 3¢ pieces were so abundant in this section in the 50's and 60's.

One more anecdote of Mr. Anderson and we may not revert to the name of this glorious Old Roman again. One of his great vices was profane swearing. Mr. Hempstead⁶⁰ of Rochester, New York, tells the following. Mr. Anderson invited Mr. Hempstead and several other northern hunters to spend some time with him in chasing foxes and shooting partridges and rabbits. One day they had a very fatiguing hunt. During this hunt one of Mr. Anderson's pointer dogs flushed a gang of birds and when Mr. Anderson tried to get the dog to whip him, the dog ran and could not be caught. They came home tired and hungry. Aunt Pat,⁶¹ Mr. Anderson's good Methodist wife, had invited a minister to stay all night, who was holding a protracted meeting in the neighbor-

hood. Supper over, Aunt Pat seeing that Mr. Anderson and the hunters were tired and sleepy, gave a Bible to Mr. Anderson and told him to ask the preacher to have prayers. He read a long chapter in the Bible, and then knelt in prayer near Mr. Anderson. It was a long prayer and Mr. Anderson fell asleep. He dreamed of the dog that he could not catch, and thinking that he had him loudly exclaimed: "You d- rascal, I've got you now and you are going to catch h-!" All present looked around and Mr. Anderson had his hands around the parson's throat. It is unnecessary to add that the prayer was never finished.

CHAPTER SEVEN

Very few towns of the size of Madison have had so many unique and eccentric characters. Some few of these Isaac remembers. There was a man named Hood,⁶² whose given name is not recalled. He was Madison's Beau Brummel. He dressed gaudily and fancifully and was never known to be untidy. He had the appearance of a man of great means and did not seem to regard expense. In profession he was a tailor and led the town in style of dress. If Hood had any property it was not known, and the wonder was how he could keep up appearances, as he seemed to do very little work. But the secret leaked out after a while. Hood was a polished gambler. He did not drink and there seemed to be an artificial polish about the man.

In those days Madison was noted for its large number of gamblers. A gambler in those days was not a broker, or speculator dealing in options, but a man who played cards for money, betting on the game. "Seven-up" was the great gamblers game and the skillful manipulator was most successful in winning. Of course this gambling was done on the sly, for there was a severe law against it, and many more were prosecuted then than now. The reason is that fewer men gamble now. For a man to gamble in those days did not necessarily debar him from good society and hence Hood's influence.⁶³ But he left Madison and Isaac never heard of him any more.

Mr Jack New⁶⁴ was another unique character. He was a shoemaker and a philosopher. He was not a peripatetic but taught at his bench while hammering his soles. He discussed politics in all its phases, drilled his hearers in political economy as taught by Adam Smith, and was a firm believer in the tariff for revenue only. The protective tariff was not an issue then and Whig and Democrat vied with each other in seeing who could run the government most economically. That mon-



A photo of the Murphy-Market Street intersection in Madison in 1906.
Former Mayor Woodburn is crossing the street.

Photo from
A Heritage To Honor

strosity developed by the Civil War and now known as “radicalism” was then unknown in the South and Jack New wasted no rhetoric on it.⁶⁵

There was one peculiarity about Mr. New. It seems his best thoughts were superinduced by brandy, and when that died out his mental machine refused to function. Occasionally he would imbibe too much and a runner would be sent at once to his good old wife⁶⁶ who would at once leave her household duties, hurry to the shop, take “Jackey” as she called him, by the ear and lead him home and put him to bed. Jackey was a badly hen-pecked man but he thoroughly enjoyed being so. Isaac is sorry that he cannot recall some of his pithy sayings, but they would be good reading in Poor Richard’s Almanac.

Another eccentric man was Thomas D. Roseboro,⁶⁷ Mr. Roseboro was a very small man weighing perhaps not more than 100 pounds. He was an elder in the Presbyterian Church and so far as Isaac knows was never absent from any of the services of his church. He was a good man and much esteemed by everyone who knew him. He lived to be a nonogenarian, died some 15 years ago. He however had his eccentricities.

A horse ran away with him once and threw him and laid him up on

the shelf for a long time, but his genial good humor never fortook him even amid his sufferings. One result of his fall was that it destroyed the power of focusing his eyes on an object in front of him. So when he looked straight at you, he saw two persons, but he soon learned to turn his head in such a way as to focus both eyes on an object. This gave him a quaint and quizzical appearance.

His eccentricity consisted in his fondness of puns, puzzles and conundrums, and so persistent was he in getting these off, that they were often out of reason. He rarely, if ever, laughed at his own wit, but very much enjoyed the perplexity of his hearers. As a sample of what is meant, Isaac remembers that one morning coming to his shop he stopped on the street where several men were standing, and as he came up he told them very seriously, that Charley McGehee⁶⁸ had a beard over five feet long, and that he knew it to be a fact. He then left and went to his shop. It created considerable comment, for nearly everybody knew Charley McGehee and also knew that he had no beard at all. The most charitable opinion was that Mr. Roseboro was mentally unbalanced. But the point of the joke soon leaked out, when they found that Charley had married a tall lady, a Miss Beard⁶⁹ the night before.

He announced one day that he expected a great meeting in Madison. No one had heard about it so finally Mr. Roseboro explained that Robertson's⁷⁰ nose was about to meet his chin. The joke was heartily enjoyed and Mr. Robertson had no peace for several days.

Pleasant Ayers⁷¹ had a good size mouth and was the leader of music in the Presbyterian Church. When he sang his mouth would spread open like an adder's head. Mr. Roseboro remarked one day that there was to be a big removal in town. After letting the folks guess for some time he informed them that the Doctors contemplated moving Pleasant Ayers' ears back so as to give his mouth more room.

He married a widow, Mrs. John Martin,⁷² who had three daughters, two of whom aged 72 and 75 are still living. One child, a daughter, was born after the marriage to Mr. Roseboro, who is now living in Davie County; of this family Isaac will say more later, as a remarkable romance is connected with it.

Madison had its Jew in the person of Isaac Fels.⁷³ He was a very clever man and much esteemed. Fels did not follow any particular business, but was a sort of speculator, but not confined to any particular class or object. At one time he sold liquors in a small house located near the long building known as the Stamps House⁷⁴ but he did not sell by the drink as it was not profitable. He peddled, selling

soap, then he bought and sold cattle, but it was hard for him to make ends meet. He was very fond of the rabbit as food and to get a supply cheap he played a practical joke on Isaac which came near severing the friendship that had long existed between them.

Isaac was in school in 1858 under Rev. L. H. Shook. He hunted on Saturdays when the weather permitted. One Saturday morning, clear cold and frosty, he was preparing to hunt across the river in Mr. J. Reynolds' plantation,⁷⁵ Fels saw him and engaged to go with him and carry the game for half. Instead of crossing the bridge which would have made a long and tiresome march before the main hunting ground was reached, Isaac and Fels went by what is now Joe Vaughn's⁷⁶ place, got the canoe key from a colored man there, went to the river and crossed over in the canoe. The ice had formed along the edge of the river for 3 or 4 yards from the bank, but was easily broken by the poles they used in directing the course of the canoe. Getting on the opposite side, Fels locked the boat to a stub on the bank, and the fun soon commenced.

In half an hour Fels had three rabbits in each hand and as they were very large Isaac could hear Fels muttering on account of the burden he was bearing. To make the burden more easily carried Isaac ran sticks through the hind legs of the rabbits which pleased Fels and he seemed in better humor. Isaac kept on shooting, while Fels began to fall behind. Nine rabbits had now fallen before Isaac's gun, and Fels was far in the rear.

When the tenth rabbit fell Fels was not in halooing distance and Isaac put the game on some stumps and prominent trees so that Fels could easily find them. When Isaac had killed eighteen, it was an hour or more past noon and halooing to Fels, he started towards the river. He called repeatedly but no answer was received. On arriving at the river Isaac found that the boat was moored to the opposite bank. He yelled and yelled but no one answered. At last he removed his pants and under garments, broke through the ice and waded across. You may rest assured that he was in no gentle mood. He would have been angered if a Gentile had played such a trick on him, but for a circumcized Jew to have done so added insult to injury.⁷⁷

When he got to town he found that Fels had notified everyone he met of the good joke he had played on Isaac. Isaac soon recovered his good humor and telling Fels that nine more rabbits were hung up on stumps and trees, that he left at once and finding them easily, brought them down for future use.

So popular was Fels that years afterwards when he had been ab-

sent a long time and it was found out that he was coming to town, the Madison Brass Band⁷⁸ met him at the bridge and escorted him to town. The old fellow was so overjoyed that he cried like a child. He is dead now and may the greenest of grass wave over his last resting place..

CHAPTER EIGHT

One of the most wonderful events of ante-bellum days was the immense number of pigeons that in the winter of 1857-58 visited the western counties of North Carolina bordering on Virginia. It so impressed everybody and Isaac in particular that he thought it ought to be classed as the Eighth Wonder of the World.

It seems that there was a failure of the mast or acorn crop in the Dominion of Canada in 1857, the favorite home of these birds. Being a wise bird, the question of a supply of food for the coming winter engaged his attention. At first scouting parties of birds were sent out, and these reporting to headquarters that an immense crop of mast was to be found in the western counties of North Carolina, these birds commenced to arrive in large flocks, before the front had bit the leaves on the oaks.

Men and boys turned out with all kinds of guns to kill them. Everywhere the sound of firearms could be heard. And pigeons, fried, baked, boiled and stewed graced nearly all the tables in the land.

Isaac entered college in the fall of 1857 and letters from home spoke of the great flocks of these birds passing from East to West. Sometimes the head of a huge column of these birds could be seen emerging from the Eastern horizon and soon would span the Heavens and for an hour would cast a shadow on the earth like a cloud.

It was soon found out that these birds were roosting among the hills and mountains of Stokes County. Men hunted them by night and the slaughter was terrible, Isaac heard in those days that a man named Mitchell⁷⁹ of Stokes County killed 3,000 during one night and loading up a six horse team, carried them to Salem and sold them at 3¢ each. Of these, it was said that Mr. Deschweinitz⁸⁰ bought the greater part to feed the girls of Salem Academy, of which he was then principal.

Isaac was in a fever to come home and enjoy the shooting and left college to spend the Christman holidays. On the second day before Christmas, he went with a one horse wagon to the roost. But unfortunately he did not go as well equipped as he would have, had he met up with someone to post him. The overseer of the plantation and two

little negro boys went with him. Near a Mr. Wilson's⁸¹ he found a man named Joyce to pilot him to the roost, for which service he demanded one dollar and a quart of execrable whiskey.

The result of the night's hunt was 800 pigeons, which filled the body of the carryall. Fifty were presented to a good neighbor and 750 were brought home and salted down in tubs Christmas Eve. It was midnight before the women got through with their work. These birds were very fat, and were far superior to the partridge. Next morning after the hunt was over, the women of the neighborhood went through the woods with sacks and gathered up the birds left by the hunters, and captured those that straggled off after being wounded. It is said that there are plenty of feather beds in Stokes County today make from the soft down on the pigeons' breasts.

Isaac remembers one particular shot he made; he fired off two barrels at once and picked up 39 birds, and heard many more fluttering away down a ravine. In the woods where these birds roosted, large branches of the trees, as large as a man's body, were broken off by the weight of the birds. Some marvellous stories were told, many of which were of course the emanations of the story teller's imagination. The truth was marvellous enough, but some tried to excel others. One man told very seriously what befell him.

His horse was afraid of the sound of the gun and he got John Crowder⁸² to make a heavy raw-hide bridle, with extra strong reins. He rode him to the roost, arriving after dark. Dismounting, he tied his horse to what he supposed was the limb of a fallen tree. Going 50 yards further, he fired into a bunch of pigeons and picked up 50 to 100. He hunted for an hour or more and killed as many as he could well carry in two large sacks. He then returned to the place where he had tied his horse, and to his utter consternation there was no tree lying there at all. He heard his horse breathing heavily over his head and looking up saw him suspended in midair. He made the mistake of tying his horse to the limb of a tree that was bent to the ground by roosting pigeons, and when he fired his gun, the birds flew up from their roost, the tree straightened itself, and the horse was carried up with it.

"Did you lose your horse?" some credulous person asked. "Why, no," said the narrator, "we got an axe, cut the tree down, and my horse got a few scratches, that was all." Credit Jedeaus Apelles.⁸³

Another man, who afterwards became a professor of Latin in the State University, told the following story. "I got to the roost about sundown and tied my horse. I had an old U.S. musket that my grandfather brought with him from the battle of Guilford Courthouse in



The illustration which appeared in HARPER'S WEEKLY, June 1862 showing a horse being accidentally hung during a pigeon hunt. Courtesy Charles D. Rodenbough.

1781. Of course, it had a flint and steel lock. I walked in the direction of the roost until I came to a clover lot and looking over the fence I could see the pigeons in the clover as thick as hops. I knelt down, put my gun through a crack in the fence and fired. But my old musket "blowed" and before it finally exploded the birds flew away. So I shot too low."

"How many did you kill?" asked one of his auditors.

"Why, I did not kill a single one, but I raked up two bushels of pigeon feet."

These two are samples of the numerous anecdotes about the celebrated pigeon roost that were in circulation in 1858.

CHAPTER NINE

Some men impress themselves on you more forcibly than others and you recall them more readily than you do others; yet if you were required to give a reason for it, it would be difficult to give one.

There were two men in Madison with whom Isaac was in close fellowship, Robert Dalton⁸⁴ and J. Martin Cox,⁸⁵ yet he can now remember very little about Robert Dalton, but Martin Cox is as clear to his memory as a sunbeam.

Dalton was tall and slim but not handsome, but being a young man of good property, he dressed faultlessly and Art was summoned to aid Nature. He was generous, kind-hearted and gentlemanly. Dalton suggested once to Isaac to try and introduce a new style in pantaloons. The change consisted in simply stitching a broad velvet ribbon to the out seam of the pants, just as is now seen on Cavalry pants. It took like wildfire and all over the country were seen pants with black velvet ribbon on the legs. Yet this style (just from Paris) originated in Madison.

In those days men seemed to catch to fashion more than women did. If a woman dressed becomingly it was all that was required and beauty unadorned, was adored the most. Isaac remembers that nearly all the young ladies had curling irons and hair that did not curl naturally was made to curl artificially. Dress is a wonderful aid to a homely man, but ugliness in woman was incurable. Isaac does not mean to say that the homely girls were neglected or slighted by the young men; far from it, for the want of beauty of face or form was a strong incentive to the homely girl to lay up the treasure of mind, and many of these were more popular than the reigning belles, on account of their conversational power.

Curls were generally worn by the young ladies and were natural, but some were the creations of art. Isaac remembers that at a party in Madison, a stylish, handsome young lady dropped one of the curls and a gentleman connected with a paper published in Madison picked it up, and she made him promise to write a piece of poetry on the incident. The ensuing week the paper contained the following lines:

To A Curl From A Young Lady's Head

When I took thee from the floor,
And held thee trembling to the light;
The words I spoke, I now deplore,
I told thy mistress I would write.

Had thy fair owner bade me try
My hand at writing lines on thee;
Then in my efforts to comply,
I might have hoped for sympathy.

The task was self-imposed; and now
Must be performed without delay,
But what words should be writ, and now,
Is very difficult to say.

It could be said, before they fall
That thou wert near a lovely cheek;
And other charms, to tell them all,
Would occupy at least a week.

Glowing tributes might be made
To Zephyr's moving thee upon
An alabaster neck that swayed
Graceful as the sailing swan.

But 'twas for thee and not for her
(Who needs them not, these lines were made),
And doubtless she would much prefer
By other pen to be portrayed.

O! Curl Adieu! Poetic fire
Might blaze and burn thee to a shred!
If thou permit we'll take the Lyre
And put it in its little bed.

But most of this is a digression which Isaac never intended. Robert Dalton was a bachelor and a manufacturer of tobacco. His house and factory were located north of what is now known as the Mash Black residence.⁸⁶ He died, Isaac thinks, during the Civil War.

J. Martin Cox moved to Madison from Stokes County in the early 50's and when Isaac first knew him he was clerk and bookkeeper for Maj. William L. Scales. He was a spare built, nervous, fidgety man and a singular way of moving the muscles of his mouth. He began to show age when Isaac first knew him and to keep his hair from turning gray consumed large quantities of Lyons Kathairon. He was a member of the Presbyterian Church, but his extreme sensitiveness

and difference caused him to take an active part in church work.

One memorable thing about Mr. Cox was his remarkable memory. He would sell goods all day long and make no entries until night. Isaac has frequently entered the items on the day book for him embracing perhaps 500 at a time. He never forgot the smallest item and he would not be able to sleep if any should be overlooked. The firm at first distrusted his ability to remember the day's transactions but after making one test they gave up. He often entered items that others failed to enter.

Martin Cox was the soul of honor, truth, and probity. As a friend he was as true as steel. Isaac has always thought that his influence was for good on all his associates. He was fond of the society of ladies and always had one whom he loved better than others, but strange to say that he never really courted any. His first sweetheart, so far as Isaac remembers, waited patiently for two or three years for him to "pop the question", but giving up all hope of his doing so, married a dentist.

He paid devoted attention to two sisters in Madison and for a long time none could find out his preference. Finally Isaac went with him quite frequently and then the secret leaked out. He was simply a Platonic lover and he would have paid the woman he most admired attention till doom's day, and marriage would never have entered his head. Yet, had he not had some woman to love (if it can be called love), he would have been a miserable man.

On one of the visits Isaac made with Mr. Cox, Isaac spoke rather disparagingly of woman's work, when one of the young ladies said that she did not believe that Isaac had sense enough to learn to knit. To dispel this said asperation Isaac knitted a pair of garters for one of the sisters, but as this chapter is already too long Isaac prefers to speak of his new industry in the next chapter.

CHAPTER TEN

At the close of the last chapter of these reminiscences we find Isaac resolved to show that he could easily learn how to knit: he afterwards learned how to sew, but thereby hangs a tale.

He went home and at once got his mother to put a garter on the needles for him, and after finding out how to proceed, in the course of a day he had his garters all knit. Then he bound the ends with blue silk and sewed on hooks and eyes and rejoiced in his handiwork.

On the first day of April (All Fool's Day) he sat down and composed

some doggerel verse to enclose with the garters. Right here Isaac wished to render thanks to Mrs. Maria Tidball,⁸⁷ the sister of Miss Mary Cardwell⁸⁸ for whom the garters were intended, for a copy of the poetry (if so it can be called) that Isaac wrote. The following is almost an exact copy:

Dear Cousin:

Oft noble themes the poet's pens employ
And we the fruits of their best work enjoy.
To giant minds I noble things resign,
The reason's plain - they do not suit my mind.
Come now, my Muse, and ye Benedictine Martyrs,
Help me sing the merits of my garters!
Now, Cousin dear, according to direction,
I send my garter for your kind inspection,
And if from blunder they are not exempt,
Remember in kindness, 'tis my first attempt.
That practice renders perfect, all agree,
Therefore, kind Cousin, do not censure me,
For tall oaks from little acorns grow
And great effects from small beginnings flow.
If you will recollect (your pardon I beg)
You did not give me the measure of your - foot.
So if they don't fit, I cannot be to blame,
For you I charge with neglect of the same.
The hooks and eyes on each have carefully been
placed
Which would assuredly a finer garment graced.
I am not April-fooling with words like sugar maple,
For instead of April-fooling, I'm making a fool in
April.
And now that you receive them is my heart's desire,
By so doing, I am your, affectionately, Isaac
Brown, esquire.

It seems to Isaac that it was not long before Miss Mary Cardwell died. She was one of the loveliest women Isaac ever knew and was a great favorite with all. She was tall and graceful and perfectly lovely in feature. She, on her mother's side, belonged to the celebrated Dalton family and her father was as perfect a gentleman as ever lived and a man of marked business talent. Judge Richard Cardwell⁸⁹ of Richmond, Virginia, was the youngest son, who has achieved dis-

tion as a great lawyer in spite of the meagre opportunities of his boyhood.

Mrs. Maria Tidball of Madison is another of this excellent family, and many items of these "reminiscences" have been suggested by her, her mind being a magazine of information and knowledge. Long may this link that binds the past and the present be spared to us.

CHAPTER ELEVEN

One of the most remarkable and noted families of Madison and its vicinity was the Dalton family. The people composing this large and interesting family were distinguished for intellectual vigor, rugged honesty, uprightness of character, unselfish hospitality and longevity. Isaac was fortunate in knowing nearly all of these people and therefore can speak of them from his own knowledge.

The progenitor of this family was Nicholas Dalton,⁹⁰ whose wife was Rachel Hunter,⁹¹ the daughter of Colonel James Hunter,⁹² who was a Regulator and was probably at the Battle of Alamance. So far as Isaac can recall there were eight sons and three daughters born to them. Their names were as follows: Sam Dalton,⁹³ James Dalton,⁹⁴ John Dalton,⁹⁵ Nicolas Dalton,⁹⁶ Robert Dalton,⁹⁷ Ewell Dalton,⁹⁸ Lee Dalton,⁹⁹ and Pleasant Dalton,¹⁰⁰ Mrs. Charlotte Scales,¹⁰¹ Mrs. Thomas Roseboro¹⁰² and Mrs. Elizabeth Cardwell¹⁰³ were the daughters. Four of these sons reached 90 years; Dr. Robert Dalton 95, Ewell Dalton 92, and Lee Dalton 93 years. Mrs. Charlotte Scales lived to be 93 years old. Isaac doubts if there is another family in the State that can show such longevity.

Only two were professional men, Dr. Robert Dalton and Rev. Pleasant Dalton. Dr. Robert Dalton lived many years in Mississippi, but in the latter part of his life resided in St. Louis, Missouri, where he died.¹⁰⁴ Rev. Pleasant H. Dalton was a Presbyterian preacher, and, if Isaac mistakes not, had charge of a church in High Point,¹⁰⁵ where he died since the war.

The others were farmers and manufacturers of tobacco. All, so far as Isaac can now remember, were successful business men, owning slaves and amassing wealth.

Ewell was a farmer in the true sense of the word, generous, hospitable, kind and humane. Addison makes one of his characters, Uncle Toby, so genteel and kind, that having caught a fly that was worrying his bald pate, he opened the window and put it out, saying: "Go, the world is wide enough for you and me." Now Uncle Ewell Dalton reminds Isaac of Uncle Toby, for on a visit there once when Uncle

Ewell was old and feeble, his grandchildren told Isaac that in hot weather the old gentleman loved to sit in the shade of the trees, and so kind and gentle was he that the English sparrows, though shy of others, would alight on his chair and his person. One day while the old man dozed in his chair, the sparrows were seen busily drawing hairs from his head and carrying them up to build their nests on the trees.

Isaac can recall but two of the descendants of this family in Madison today, viz: Samuel Smith,¹⁰⁶ who possesses the characteristics of both the Daltons and Scales'; and Mrs. Maria Tidball, who possesses in an eminent degree the intellectual vigor of the Daltons.

Isaac does not feel called upon to apologize for the length of the sketch of this family, for the refining influence it exerted is seen in Madison and vicinity to this day.

There was one man in Madison in those early days whom Isaac recalls with clearness, Major William L. Scales. He lived in the house now occupied by Mr. W. C. Jones.¹⁰⁷ Major Scales was a man of culture and refinement.

Major Scales was in the tobacco manufacturing business. It was frequently six weeks from the shipment of goods until their arrival at Madison. Before the building of the Petersburg and Weldon Railroad, goods were hauled in wagons from Richmond to Petersburg.¹⁰⁸ Goods were also shipped by steamer from New York, Philadelphia and Boston to Charleston, South Carolina, and tobacco merchants would carry a load of tobacco there and after disposing of it, would load up with goods for merchants on their return trip. Major Scales, being a tobacco manufacturer, got many of his goods through the port of Charleston. (Right here Isaac would like to weave in the history of Drewry Smith,¹⁰⁹ but it would make this chapter too long and will come in later.)

Major Scales' first wife was a Miss Cardwell,¹¹⁰ and three children were born to them. One, a sweet, interesting girl named Cornelia, died at the age of fourteen.¹¹¹ The other two, Calvin H. Scales,¹¹² now lives in Reidsville, and Mrs. Cora Hay, wife of Dr. Peas Hay, in Winston.¹¹³

Major Scales' second wife was a Miss Mary Clemmons.¹¹⁴ She is still living in Greensboro, and is upward of ninety years old. Isaac was a boarder in her family and if ever there was a good stepmother, she was one. She was kind and indulgent to the children, and Isaac has often wondered at the sweetness of her disposition under great provocation. She was an old-fashioned Methodist and when the roll is called Up Yonder she 'll be there. God bless all such kind and un-

selfish stepmothers.

Major Scales was not a member of any church, but he often suffered from the lashing of his conscience because he was not. He once asked Isaac if he ever thought of Eternity, and said that if he did not banish the thought it would run him crazy. Just after the War, Isaac visited him in his last illness and he was much concerned about his soul's salvation, and it is hoped that he found peace at last.

An incident that made a great impression on Isaac comes to memory and he will close this chapter with it. There were several young ladies who often met at Mrs. Scales'¹¹⁵ to sew. She was a woman of taste and refinement and the young ladies met there to consult her about their work.

Now Isaac, as has been said before, was a great tease, and he was very fond of the young ladies. He exercised his ingenuity in hiding thimbles, pulling threads out of needles, etc. The patience of the girls was exhausted, and while Isaac made a trip downstairs to get some water, they concocted a plan to make exquisite vengeance.

No sooner did Isaac commence his pranks again than Miss Maria Cardwell, now Mrs. Tidball, who was stronger than Isaac, siezed him, while the girls took hold of his legs and stretched him across a bed with his back up. Isaac could not move. Mrs. Scales then lifted up his coat and paddled him with a press board. It must have hurt Isaac awfully, as he squalled for mercy and told them they were killing him.

Fortunately for Isaac the punishment finally ended by extorting from him a promise that he would be good. There was no need of a promise as Isaac could scarcely stand up. He certainly couldn't sit down. On Isaac's threatening to show them how badly he had been treated they fled from the room. Isaac sat upon a pillow for some time, and reached the conclusion that a woman did not know how a thing of that sort hurts.

Notes

¹Nat Pickett (1871-1929) was a merchant in Madison at the turn of the century. His wife was Cora Johnson (1874-1968). Their brick, Queen Ann style house is on Hunter Street.

²Madison had its first newspaper in 1856, *The Rockingham Democrat*. In 1857 it became *The Weekly News*. In 1873 the *Madison Enterprise* started to be succeeded at some point by *The News*. On February 22, 1906 the *Madison Herald* was first published with C. O. McMichael as editor.

³Avalon was founded by Francis Henry Fries in 1899, three years after he built his mill. The town died June 15, 1911 when the mill burned. Many of the houses were moved to Mayodan.

⁴William L. Scales was born about 1813 by the census of 1860, the son of Nathaniel Scales and Caroline Matilda Joyce. He was a brother of Jackson Scales. The store referred to was on the southwest corner of the intersection of Market and Murphey Streets.

⁵The Pratt Brothers were Charles Benton Pratt (1858-1928) and Thomas Ruffin Pratt (1856-1931). They were in the hardware business and sold mules.

⁶Nat Smith perpetuated the error in interpretation of the oft quoted Jackson ditty that in its several forms uses the name Log Town or Hog Town and that in either case it refers to Madison. Actually at the time of the Jackson sale there was a small settlement west of Leaksville called Hog Town.

⁷This poem sung to Yankee Doodle was used by a group of Virginia investors who started Jackson on the north side of Dan River at Eagle Falls. See Rodenbough, Charles D. "Jackson Town: Fraud or Honest Speculation," *The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy*, Vol. 1, No. 1, April 1976.

⁸This town named for General Andrew Jackson, hero of New Orleans in the War of 1812, was promoted with much hoopla in 1818 but the town did not survive the Economic Depression of 1819.

⁹Attorneys W. N. Mebane and Hugh Reid Scott (1855-1947).

¹⁰The description to which they refer is in Thomas P. Devereux, *Equity Cases Argued and Determined in the Supreme Court of North Carolina from June Term 1828 to December Term 1830*, (Raleigh: Harry O. Turner, 1849), I, 37. Morehead brought the case of fraud before the Supreme Court of North Carolina.

¹¹Chartered in 1812, the Roanoke Navigation Company made repeated efforts to open the Dan River through Rockingham as part of its charter to open the Roanoke River and its tributaries.

¹²An outcropping of rock in the Dan River near Wentworth, Eagle Falls was a barrier to up river transportation. At the time of the Jackson case there was a ford and mill at Eagle Falls.

¹³Settle's Bridge was built in 1870 when Thomas Settle, whose Mulberry Island Plantation was nearby, was at the height of his political influence in North Carolina.

¹⁴John M. Morehead was only 22 when the Jackson promotion happened. It is more likely his father, John Morehead was the person involved at Jackson.

¹⁵Pleasant Black's store stood on the north side of Murphy Street where Madison Furniture is located today. It served as a hotel and store. The double porches in the front were right on the street. It probably dated from the 1820's and was not torn down until about 1910.

¹⁶Pleasant Sawney Black was born in 1794 son of Frederick and Elizabeth Black.

He was a trader, merchant and hotel keeper. He died February 23, 1881. Often he was called "Trader" Black. In 1834 he bought the Scales house at the northwest corner of Hunter and Dalton Streets from John P. Scales.

¹⁷ By his first wife Trader Black had Matilda, Elizabeth, Emily, Marshall, Pleasant and Thomas. By his second wife, Mrs. Charlotte Dalton Scales widow of Pleasant Scales, he had Mariah Ann who married Jackson Scales. By his third wife, Matilda Dalton, he had Charlotte G., Mary Kenna, Ellen, Julia A., Cassandra, and James Madison.

¹⁸ James Hall was born October 13, 1816 and died December 11, 1911. His wife was Sarah Ann (1815-1887). James was a carpenter and cabinet maker in Madison.

¹⁹ William R. D. Lindsey was in 1824 one of 12 original members of Greensboro First Presbyterian Church. He was one of first Greensboro police officers and the founder of Fire Department. He moved to Madison about 1853. On February 26, 1857 he married Widow Aiken (Jane R. Aiken). He was one of the Madison Postmasters and an Elder in the Presbyterian Church.

²⁰ This should read William Hagewood who was born in Virginia about 1794 which made him the same age as Trader Black. The incident told here happened in the decade of the 1850's.

²¹ This furniture came to "Boxwood" through Trader Black's daughter Cassandra, who married Joseph Vaughn in 1861. The Vaughns bought "Boxwood" from Benjamine Watkins in 1874.

²² The year was actually 1858 per Miss O. L. Harte's diary. Typhoid Fever was a frequent killer disease. It was usually associated with major floods of the Dan River.

²³ Cornelia Scales was the daughter of William L. and R. M. Scales. She was born January 15, 1847, died December 30, 1857. *Cemetery Records* p. 50.

²⁴ Col. James Irvin was Superior Court Clerk in 1850. He moved to Madison and in 1856 opened a store with William B. Carter and Robert J. Dalton; Carter, Irvin and Dalton. In 1859 he bought the Drug Store of Staples and Galloway. He later lived near Reidsville.

²⁵ Miss Amos was probably a daughter of Isham and Susan Amos. Their log home stood on the northwest corner of Decatur and Franklin, next to the Presbyterian Church.

²⁶ Possibly the flat nosed brother was Isaac Raines who was a photographer in 1856.

²⁷ The *Madison Democrat* was started in mid-October 1855 and lasted until end of 1856. It was replaced by *The Weekly News* of William L. Sneed.

²⁸ Billingsgate Market in London was known for its fish and bad language thus the use here is as a synonym for bad language.

²⁹ Known as "Bug" for June Bug, Junius Scales was born in 1832 and died July 11, 1880. He taught school to support himself while studying law. He married Effie Hamilton Henderson, daughter of Archibald Henderson. In 1860 they moved with family and 60 slaves to the Yazoo River in Mississippi. In the Civil War he became a Colonel of a Mississippi Regiment and was captured at Chickamauga. He became the Speaker of Mississippi House of Representatives. In 1871 he moved to Greensboro to practice law with his brother Alfred Moore Scales.

³⁰ Dr. Robert Scales was the youngest son of Nathaniel (1756-1824) and Nancy Allen Scales (1759-1840). He inherited the estate which he called "Ingleside" near Lenox Castle. He became a Doctor and married Jane Bethel.

³¹ Governor A. M. Scales was born November 27, 1827, was a Lawyer, Confederate General, Congressman, and Governor of North Carolina 1884-1888. He died February 9, 1892.

³² Charlie Albert Reynolds was born November 10, 1848 in Madison. A graduate of

Princeton, he was Lieutenant Governor of North Carolina from 1897-1901. He married Carrie W. Fretwell April 13, 1873. *Sketches of Reynolds, Fewells, Walls, and Kindred Families* by John Fewell Reynolds; (The Commercial Printers, Inc., Winston Salem 1923), p. 11-15.

³³Dr. Thomas Reynolds was born in Lawrence County, Alabama on April 17, 1819. He married Sarah Jane Fewel on June 22, 1847. He started a practice in Madison and later moved to Leaksville. He died December 14, 1870.

³⁴Dr. Lewis Hall Shook was born 1836 in Macao the son of J. Lewis and Henrietta Hall Shook, Baptist Missionaries. He came to Madison in 1858 to teach at Beulah Male Academy, his rename for the Madison Academy. He was pastor of the Baptist Church from 1860-1863. His first wife and daughter died. He went into Confederate service with many of his students but after the war he did not return to Madison. A *Heritage to Honor*.

³⁵Dr. Shook held a male school in the former Madison Academy.

³⁶Rev. Jacob Doll was born in Martinsburg, West Virginia on June 27, 1812. He graduated from Union Theological Seminary and in 1853 came to Madison from Caswell County. He taught school at the Doll Academy and acted as Stated Supply at Snow Creek in Stokes County and in 1857 accepted a call to Yanceyville. He organized Reidsville Presbyterian Church 1875. He died April 27, 1878. *History of Bethesda Presbyterian Church 1765-1965*, W. E. Lytch, p. 26.

³⁷The Doll Academy was built on a hill west of town perhaps by Joseph M. Vaughn. The building still stands at the southwest corner of Murphey and Doll Streets.

³⁸Rev. W. N. Mebane was the son of David and Annie Cummings Mebane. He was born March 10, 1809 in Guilford County. He graduated from the University of North Carolina in 1833 and Princeton Theological Seminary in 1837. He was the first minister of the Madison Presbyterian Church officially taking over in 1852. He died of consumption in 1859. His wife was Mary H. Aiken.

³⁹Joseph Henry Cardwell was born January 13, 1815, the son of Joel and Mariah Henrietta Scales Cardwell. He married Caroline Matilda Scales. He owned the Twitchell house on Academy Street then moved to the Lone Island Plantation of Dr. Samuel Spencer. In 1856 he was elected Deacon of the Presbyterian Church. His sister, Rebecca was a wife of William L. Scales. Joe Cardwell died December 28, 1905.

⁴⁰Adamantine refers to a legendary mineral of impenetrable hardness. These candles must have been very hard.

⁴¹The Methodist Church was organized in 1843, the Presbyterian Church in 1848 and the Baptist Church in 1841.

⁴²Robert Vance (1828-1899) brother of Governor Zebulon B. Vance was a merchant farmer and Clerk of Court in Madison and Buncombe Counties. He was a Brigadier General in the C.S.A. After the war he held several elected positions and was in Congress from 1873 to 1885.

⁴³Bapto, batidzo, apo, eis and en - to baptize, emerse, sprinkle, into and on.

⁴⁴The Baptist and Presbyterian Churches were similar as worshipers entered facing the congregation. An arrangement which discouraged late arrival or early departure.

⁴⁵Rev. Stinson Ivy was a teacher and minister who served in both Madison and Leaksville.

⁴⁶Dr. Robert Galloway was born about 1830 and died September 10, 1892. He was the son of Robert and Susan Galloway. In Madison he owned the Twitchell House on Academy and then built a frame house west of Madison. He was an Elder in the Presbyterian Church.

Reminiscences of Madison

⁴⁷ At the time referred to by Isaac there were three ordained Presbyterian ministers in Madison. Rev. William N. Mebane was pastor of the church. Rev. Jacob Doll was teaching in his Academy. Rev. Pleasant Hunter Dalton taught for a time then founded the Presbyterian Church in High Point.

⁴⁸ About 1970, when the sanctuary of the Madison Presbyterian Church was renovated, a back wall along the east side of the sanctuary was exposed showing where the pews were set into the walls on which children had written their names and drawn pictures. These walls were not disturbed but were covered over by a wall behind the choir.

⁴⁹ Rev. Fletcher Reid was born in 1825. Although he frequently preached in Madison he was located at Wentworth where he preached and operated the Wentworth Academy.

⁵⁰ Rev. Charles Force Deems was a Methodist minister, educator and author. Between 1850 and 1854 he was President of Greensboro College.

⁵¹ Bethesda Methodist Church is located about five miles west of Madison and the road leading there is still referred to as Wall Street.

⁵² The Madison Graded School was located west of Madison and north of Decatur Street which led out to the Salem-Petersburg Road. The first building was a frame structure that was built in 1900 and was torn down in 1914 to be replaced by the brick building that is used today as the Superintendent's office.

⁵³ Jackson Scales was born about 1817, the son of Nathaniel and Caroline Matilda Joyce Scales. His brother-in-laws included Joseph H. Cardwell and Samuel Smith.

⁵⁴ Maria Scales wife of Jackson Scales was the daughter of Pleasant Black by his first wife. They were married June 12, 1846.

⁵⁵ Charles Rice Smith was the son of Reuben and Elizabeth Smith. He was born about 1801 in Pittsylvania County and died February 20, 1874.

⁵⁶ Mrs. Maria Scales refers to the wife of Jackson Scales.

⁵⁷ Samuel Hairston (1788-1875) was married to Agnes John Peter Wilson and their home was at Oak Hill on the Dan River in Virginia. This reference may be to Peter Hairston (1819-1886) who owned Sauratown Plantation in Stokes County and built Cooleemee near Mocksville.

⁵⁸ Another reference to the Hogtown/Logtown name in the Jackson ditty which was assumed to refer to Madison.

⁵⁹ Leonard Wade Anderson was born in Prince Edward County, Virginia in 1821 and died at Pine Hall in 1902. About 1850 he purchased the Valentine Allen Plantation called Allen's Delight and built the large brick house he called Pine Hall. During the Civil War his plantation became the commissary collection point for the region. Anderson acquired large land holdings in Stokes (Pine Hall) and in Rockingham Counties. Although not an active member of any church he gave generous support to the Pine Hall and Madison Methodist and Madison Presbyterian Churches.

⁶⁰ Len Anderson frequently invited his friends in the North to visit Pine Hall to hunt. Since he made a number of trips to Baltimore to purchase plantation supplies he made wide ranging friendships. In 1980 a silver flask engraved "L. W. Anderson - Pine Hall" was found in a Pennsylvania attic.

⁶¹ "Aunt" Pat was born in Henry County, Virginia on December 25, 1822 and died at Pine Hall on January 9, 1915. Her maiden name was Martha Fontaine.

⁶² The 1850 census shows an H. Hood, who was 27, leiving in Madison and listed as a tailor. In the 1860 census he is not listed.

⁶³ Faro was the most frequent gambling game and as Isaac indicated there were resident gamblers and circuit gamblers who often followed the Superior Court

session.

⁶⁴ John M. New was born in Virginia about 1787. Besides the occupation of shoe-maker listed by Isaac and the 1850 census, he is said in several sources to have been a Baptist Preacher.

⁶⁵ New was probably a Whig. His large library indicated a broad intellectual curiosity.

⁶⁶ Permelia New was born in Virginia about 1798.

⁶⁷ Thomas O. Roseborough was born August 26, 1812. He came to Madison about 1834 and set up as a tailor. He was active in the organization of the Presbyterian Churches at Spring Garden and Madison and he was an Elder in each. He married Nancy Kinner Martin (1808-1882) in 1847. Another tale told about Roseborough concerned his practice of carrying an umbrella even on sunny days. When questioned he replied, "Any fool can carry an umbrella when it rains." He died June 5, 1896.

⁶⁸ Charley McGehee was born in Virginia February 25, 1829 and came to Madison with his parents, Micajah and Martha Venable McGehee. Their home was built west of Madison and was recently torn down. He became a farmer and died November 16, 1895.

⁶⁹ Mollie Beard McGehee was born April 20, 1833 and died July 15, 1910.

⁷⁰ This is probably Thomas H. Robertson who was a carpenter in Madison.

⁷¹ Probably Samuel P. Ayers who was received in the Presbyterian Church in 1855 and excommunicated in 1859 and left Madison. He was the son of John and Mary Ayers.

⁷² Nancy Kinner Dalton was born July 7, 1808. She married first John Julius Martin, son of Hugh Martin of Stokes County. He was charged with forgery and left the state in 1834. She eventually got a divorce. Her second marriage was to Thomas Roseborough. She died November 29, 1882.

⁷³ Isaac Fels was a Jewish peddler born in Sembeck in Bavaria about 1817. He came to Madison from Caswell County about 1856. He opened a store and like many other businesses he was ruined by the Civil War. About 1885 he moved his family to Chicago, stayed about eight years and returned to Madison. He died at his son Samuel's home in Reidsville on August 28, 1902.

⁷⁴ Stamps House in this case probably refers to the Long Hotel of Pleasant Black which Milton Stamps managed.

⁷⁵ The Fewell-Reynolds house still stands on the south side of Dan River opposite Madison. It was built in 1828. William Fewell is the first known owner. His daughter Eleanor married James T. Reynolds.

⁷⁶ Joseph Mitchell Vaughn purchased "Rural Retreat" from John D. Watkins in 1874. This brick federal structure was built by Randal Duke Scales about 1800 and it was on part of this plantation that Scales had the Town of Madison laid out. The Watkins had bought loads of boxwoods from their Virginia home and planted a formal garden. During the Vaughn occupancy the place was renamed "Boxwood."

⁷⁷ This comment shows the selective discrimination which this loose Jewish family experienced in Madison.

⁷⁸ This incidence probably occurred about 1892 at the end of the Fels' eight year stay in Chicago.

⁷⁹ This story was repeated in many forms. Mr. Mitchell may have been J. G. H. Mitchell.

⁸⁰ Robert William de Schweinitz was born at Salem in 1819 the third son of Lewis David von Schweinitz, said to have been Father of American Phycology. Robert William was a Moravian minister who was principal of Salem Academy from 1853 to 1866, having followed his brother Emil Adolphus who held that post from 1848 to 1853.

⁸¹This may be the location known today as Wilson's Store about two miles east of Danbury.

⁸²John M. Crowder born about 1819 was a maker of saddles and harnesses in Madison.

⁸³This story is found as part of "*Fisher's River Scenes and Characters*" and it was reprinted in *Harpers Weekly*, June 1862, No. CXLV. Vol. XXV under the title "Surry County, North Carolina", p. 179-180.

⁸⁴Robert Dalton was a tobacconist in the 1860 census which noted his death in July 1860 at age 26 of "Disease of Heart."

⁸⁵Joseph Martin Cox was born about 1825. In 1850 he was a store clerk for Pleasant Black. He was received into the Madison Presbyterian Church in 1856 and was elected Deacon in 1860. In 1879 he moved to Reidsville.

⁸⁶In 1910 the Marshall Black family was living in a house on the northeast corner of Academy and Franklin Streets.

⁸⁷Maria Louise Cardwell was born April 3, 1836 and died June 21, 1919. She married Rev. William B. Tidball who was a widower. They came to live in Madison and built a home north of town.

⁸⁸Miss Mary Cardwell and Maria Louise Cardwell were daughters of Richard Perrin and Elizabeth Martin Dalton. She died single in 1858.

⁸⁹Judge Richard Henry Cardwell was also a child of Richard and Elizabeth Dalton Cardwell. He was born August 1, 1846. He was one of the students of Dr. Shook's Academy. He was received into the Presbyterian Church in 1863 but was suspended in 1868 for six months, "unchristian conduct," for accepting a challenge to duel. He married Kate Howard after he moved to Virginia and died there in 1931.

⁹⁰Nicholas Dalton, son of Sael Dalton II and Charlotte Gallahue, He was born April 4, 1770 and died January 7, 1838.

⁹¹Rachel Hunter married Nicholas Dalton in 1793. She was born in 1774 and died in 1868.

⁹²Colonel James Hunter was born April 8, 1740 in Hunterdon County, New Jersey. He died January 30, 1821.

⁹³Samuel Dalton III, (1794-1897). For more information on the Daltons see *The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy*: Vol. IX, number 2; Vol. X, number 1; Vol. X, number 2.

⁹⁴James Hunter Dalton (1796-1886).

⁹⁵John Dalton was born in 1813.

⁹⁶Nicholas Dalton was born in 1817.

⁹⁷Robert Hunter Dalton (1805-1900).

⁹⁸Ewell Gallahue Dalton (1801-1895).

⁹⁹Leander Hughes Dalton (1803-1894).

¹⁰⁰Pleasant Hunter Dalton (1821-1896).

¹⁰¹Charlotte G. Dalton was born in 1799. Her second husband was James Scales.

¹⁰²Nancy K. Dalton Martin was born in 1808. She married first John Julius Martin and when they divorced she married Thomas Roseborough.

¹⁰³Elizabeth Dalton was born in 1811. She married Richard Perrin Cardwell and was received into the Presbyterian Church in 1844. She died in 1864.

¹⁰⁴Dr. Robert Dalton lived and practiced for many years late in life in St. Louis but died in the State of Washington.

¹⁰⁵Rev. Pleasant Hunter Dalton founded the First Presbyterian Church in High Point.

¹⁰⁶Samuel Smith became an Elder in the Madison Presbyterian Church in 1869.

¹⁰⁷This house was on Hunter Street west of the Trader Black house. After the Jones family left the house, it was rented by various people until it was torn down about 1965.

¹⁰⁸The William L. Scales Tobacco Factory stood on the southeast corner of the intersection of Market and Hunter Streets.

¹⁰⁹Drury Smith was born in 1796 and died on January 3, 1873. He owned a large plantation and store on the Pawpaw Creek of Mayo River.

¹¹⁰Rebecca M. Cardwell was the daughter of Joel and Mariah Cardwell. She was born July 4, 1819 and died February 17, 1849. p. 50. *Rockingham County Cemetery Records*. She married William L. Scales in 1838.

¹¹¹Cornelia Scales was born January 15, 1847, the daughter of William L. and Rebecca Cardwell Scales. She died December 30, 1857.

¹¹²Calvin H. Scales (1840-1910) married Adeline H. May on June 23, 1862. He joined the Presbyterian Church in 1860 but was excommunicated in 1864.

¹¹³Cora Scales was received on examination in 1856 in the Madison Presbyterian Church. She was dismissed to Reidsville 1883. Dr. Pleasant Hay married Cora Scales December 17, 1860.

¹¹⁴Mary P. Clemmons married William L. Scales in 1854.

A SKETCH OF "ISAAC" AND HIS FAMILY

by
Robert W. Carter, Jr.

Nathaniel Scales Smith, or "Isaac," the author of the "Reminiscences of Madison" articles reprinted in this issue of the journal, was a well known educator and businessman in Rockingham County during the late 19th century. He was born on June 28, 1838, the son of Samuel and Ann Eliza Scales Smith,¹ and grew to manhood at *Shady Grove*, his father's plantation on the Mayo River in western Rockingham County. The plantation lay in a beautiful setting between two small mountains and was located about one mile north of the present town of Mayodan.

The Smiths were among the pioneer settlers in the Mayo River Valley. Family tradition relates that three Smith brothers were born in Wales and came to America, one settling in Culpeper, Virginia, one in Northern Georgia and the other in North Carolina.² The earliest known ancestor of Nat was John Smith who settled on the Mayo River and died in late 1776 or early 1777 while the area was still part of Guilford County. John's son Joshua was to become a prominent citizen of Rockingham County.³

During the Revolutionary War Joshua served as a sergeant under Captain Alexander Hunter in Colonel James Martin's regiment of the Guilford County Militia during their second expedition to Cross Creek.⁴ Joshua was a well known surveyor during the period and surveyed numerous tracts of land for people who were entering claims for vacant state land.⁵ In 1778 he entered a claim for 500 acres of land along the Mayo River which was granted to him in 1780. The land would later become part of the *Shady Grove Plantation* and remain in the Smith family for over 100 years.⁶

In December 1785 Rockingham County was formed from the northern part of Guilford and at the first session of the court in February 1786, Joshua Smith was appointed one of the Justices for the new county.⁷ He served as the "High" Sheriff for Rockingham County during the years 1795-1796 and was the county's representative in the North Carolina State Legislature during the session of 1800.⁸

Smith continued to purchase land and by 1815 owned 1500 acres.⁹ He owned several slaves, the number increasing from 11 in 1800 to 16 in 1820.¹⁰ Joshua was the owner of two grist mills. One of these was on Mountain Run Creek and was erected about 1796.¹¹ This mill



Foundation ruins of the Smith Mill below Avalon Dam on the Mayo River. Three generations of the Smith Family owned the grist mill at this site during most of the 19th century.

Photo courtesy Bob Carter.

no doubt served the people living on the eastern side of the Mayo River for some years; however, its length of operation is unknown. Smith's major mill was on the west side of the Mayo at the site where the Avalon Cotton Mill would later be built. The exact date when Joshua built his Mayo River mill is unknown; however, it was prior to 1821.¹² This and a later mill on the site were owned and operated by Joshua's son and grandsons until the land passed out of the family late in the 19th century.

Joshua died sometime during the year 1821. By November of that year his son Thomas had been appointed as his administrator and was granted permission to sell his personal property as allowed by the laws of the time.¹³ On February 20, 1822 Joshua's land was surveyed into seven tracts for division among his heirs.¹⁴ His son Samuel Smith received a tract of land on the Mayo and later purchased the Mayo River mill tract from another one of the heirs.¹⁵

Samuel Smith, the father of Nat S. Smith, was born February 18, 1798 and on December 22, 1825 married Ann Eliza Scales. She was

the daughter of Nathaniel Scales (1776-1839?) and Caroline Matilda (Joyce?) (1780-1846).¹⁶

In addition to the land he inherited from his father, Samuel continued to purchase surrounding land and by 1835 he had developed a plantation of 800 acres.¹⁷ He named his plantation *Shady Grove*.

Samuel had received a fine classical education and about the year 1821 he began teaching at the Madison Academy. He soon decided to build his own classical school and erected a brick building on his property which he named *Shady Grove Academy*.¹⁸ The school was incorporated under the Laws of North Carolina in 1825 with Robert Martin, Nathaniel Scales, Jr., James Scales, Thomas Smith, Samuel Smith and Henry Baughn as Trustees.¹⁹ One of Samuel's pupils later said of him, he was "...an eminent classical teacher."²⁰ Tradition relates that his school "though not so large, enjoyed a reputation not unlike that of Bingham of (a later day)."²¹ Many prominent people, including Judge Thomas Ruffin, Jr., attended *Shady Grove Academy*.²² In 1840 the academy had 24 pupils enrolled and all were boarding with Samuel and his family.²³

In 1839 Samuel purchased a 783 acre tract of land at the Great Falls of the Mayo River (now site of Mayodan) from the heirs of Reubin Lindsay. The property also contained a grist mill. With this purchase Samuel now owned the two most important grist mills on the Mayo River.²⁴

Samuel Smith died December 6, 1844 and was buried in the family burial ground on the *Shady Grove Plantation*.²⁵ The cemetery, which still exists, is located on a low hill near the Mayo River. At the time of his death Samuel owned a total of 1772 acres of land which included some three miles along the west side of the Mayo River reaching all the way from Shepherds Creek to and including most of the site of the present town of Mayodan. On August 19, 1846 a court appointed commission laid off for his widow a dower of 561 acres. Her third of the property included the homeplace, academy and the Joshua Smith grist mill.²⁶ On December 29, 1846 the Smith heirs sold the Lindsay mill and Plantation at the Great Falls (Mayodan) but retained the remaining portion of the *Shady Grove Plantation*.²⁷

Between the years 1840 and 1851 the number of slaves on the *Shady Grove Plantation* increased from 25 to 40.²⁸ In 1851 the slaves were divided among the Smith heirs with each receiving an allotment valued at \$1,850. One slave named Isaac was listed at a zero value by the committee and he was allotted to Samuel's son Nat S. Smith. There is little doubt that this slave was Isaac the miller

from whom Nat received his nickname "Isaac."²⁹

Samuel and Ann Eliza Scales had a family of 10 children.³⁰ Two of the daughters, Ruth and Emma, died young.³¹ The remaining children became prominent citizens of Rockingham County. The following paragraphs contain a brief sketch of each of the children.

Rufus H. Smith (c. 1827-1889) like his father became a classical teacher. After his father's death he continued to conduct the *Shady Grove Academy* sporadically for some years. He also conducted schools at various times at Madison, Wentworth and Stoneville.³² He married Harriet M. Martin in Stokes County, North Carolina, in April 1856. The couple later separated. They had one child, Hattie, who died at Mount Airy, N. C. in 1876 at the age of 20.³³ Rufus was a great promoter of the mica mines which he owned in North Carolina and Virginia.³⁴ At his death in 1889 he bequest his property to two sisters, a brother and several nieces.³⁵

Dr. Walter R. Smith was born September 15, 1828. Upon completing his medical training in Philadelphia he probably practiced



Dr. Walter R. Smith, a son of Samuel and Eliza Scales Smith of Shady Grove, was born in 1828. He practiced medicine in Madison from 1872 until his death in 1887. He was a brother of "Isaac" the author of the *Reminiscences*. Photo courtesy Charles D. Rodenbough.

for some years in Virginia.³⁶ He set up practice in the Town of Madison in the year 1872.³⁷ During the mid-1870s he was elected a member of the Board of Rockingham County Commissioners.³⁸ He was married three times: first to Mary Starling, second to Elizabeth Scale and lastly to Susan H. Scales. He was the father of three children: Samuel Smith, Jr. (1861-1938), Jennie Smith and Emma Smith Hamlin who died young leaving several children.³⁹ Dr. Smith died February 18, 1887 and was buried in the Presbyterian Cemetery in Madison.

Mary Smith (born ca. 1830) married Jones W. Burton on July 4, 1848. Burton (1812-1888) was a merchant who established a store Leaksville in 1839.⁴⁰ He accumulated large tracts of land owning 1426 acres by 1869.⁴¹ In 1869 his brother-in-law Nat Smith became a partner in the store and they continued business for some time under the name Burton & Smith. He was also a partner with his brother-in-law Nat in the Smith mill on the Mayo River. Jones served as postmaster of Leaksville 1842-1866.⁴³ In addition to serving as a long time magistrate in Leaksville, Squire Burton served as Rockingham County's representative during North Carolina legislative session of 1865-1866.⁴³ The Burtons has a son Rev. Samuel Smith Burton who died at age 24 in 1877 leaving a wife and daughter Mary Fannie Burton.⁴⁴ In 1866 the Burtons deeded their property to their granddaughter Mary Fannie.⁴⁵ Jones Burton died July 17, 1888 and his wife Mary died sometime during the 1890s. They are buried in the Lawson Cemetery in the Leaksville section of Eden.

Caroline M. Smith married Robert Richard Gallaway on August 21, 1849. "Bob Dick" as he was known was a member of a prominent Rockingham County family. His parents were Charles Gallaway II and Sarah W. Michaux Gallaway. The young couple built a beautiful home on the south side of Dan River opposite the Town of Leaksville. Caroline died in August 1854 leaving no children. Her husband later remarried and lived in Mount Airy where he raised a family of three children.⁴⁶

Samuel Smith, Jr. was born July 17, 1833.⁴⁷ He married Sarah E. Lawson on May 5, 1858. She was the daughter of Francis I. Lawson (a Leaksville merchant) and Ann Johns Lawson.⁴⁸ They had two children: Annie L. Smith (1859-1944) a long time teacher who was raised by her uncle Nat S. Smith, and Caroline Smith who died March 7, 1863 at age two. Samuel's wife Sarah died May 5, 1863 at the age of 21 and was buried at the Lawson Cemetery near Leaksville.⁴⁹ On February 22, 1866 Samuel Smith married Annie Rush Norcom (1843-1930) a native of Edenton, North Carolina.⁵⁰ The couple lived

in Henry County, Virginia, and later in Madison. About 1885 they moved to the Town of Reidsville where he was a clerk for several different merchants over the years. Samuel died November 11, 1901 and was buried in Greenview Cemetery in Reidsville. By his second wife Samuel had the following children: Samuel, Jr. (1868-1869), Guy a Smith (1879-1887), Benjamin R. Smith, (1877-1898), N. K. Smith, Mrs. Emily Greaves (1867-1944), and Mrs. R. R. Mobley.⁵¹

Eliza "Lizzie" Smith was born about 1835 and in April 1854 married Dr. William W. Oliver.⁵² He was a physician at Madison in 1850 but about 1851 he retired to follow agricultural pursuits on his 560 acre farm located on upper Hogan's Creek about two miles from Madison.⁵³ The couple's children included James L., Mary E., Nettie Oliver (Graham), Rev. Samuel S. Oliver and W. S. Oliver. By 1890 Dr. Oliver had died but his widow Lizzie was still living on the family farm. Later, some members of the family moved to Winston-Salem.⁵⁴

Dr. Joshua R. Smith was born February 26, 1844 the youngest child of Samuel and Ann Eliza Scales Smith.⁵⁵ He established a medical practice in the town of Stoneville by the year 1872.⁵⁶ He and his wife, Jessie Scales, spent the remainder of their life in Stoneville where he died December 26, 1907.⁵⁷ Evidently Dr. Smith and wife Jessie had no surviving children as only a wife and her sister Fannie are mentioned in his will which is dated 1898.⁵⁸

Nathaniel Scales Smith, our "Isaac," was a student of his brother Rufus who continued the *Shady Grove Academy* after their father's death.⁵⁹ After completing his studies at *Shady Grove*, Nat attended Davidson College where he graduated just prior to the Civil War.⁶⁰

On May 18, 1861 he enlisted in Rockingham County as a private in Company H. of the 13th Regiment North Carolina State Troops.⁶¹ Later in life Nat wrote a sketch of his war experiences. In the article he wrote that his regiment spent the Winter of 1861-62 at Ben's Church, Isle of Wight County, Virginia. In the Spring of 1862 the regiment marched to Yorktown, Williamsburg, and on to near Richmond. The regiment took part in the Battles of Cold Harbor and Malvern Hill in Virginia and was at the Battle of South Mountain in Maryland. At the conclusion of the Battle of Sharpsburg only 180 men remained in the regiment.⁶²

After the first days battle at Gettysburg, only 30 men and two officers, Captain R. L. Moir and 3rd Lieutenant Nat Smith were left in the 13th Regiment. On July 3, 1863 Captain Moir and Adjutant Smith led 45 men in a charge in which 23 men were killed leaving only 22 men in the Regiment. The remaining men retreated from the Battlefields of Gettysburg and were crossing the Potomac at Falling

Waters, Maryland, where one-half the men including Nat Smith were captured.⁶³

After being taken as a prisoner of war Nat was confined in the Old Capitol Prison in Washington, D.C. for a short period before being transferred to Johnson's Island, Ohio where he spent the remainder of the war as a prisoner. On May 6, 1864 he was promoted to 1st Lieutenant while he remained a prisoner in the Yankee prison. He was released on June 11, 1865 after taking the Oath of Allegiance.⁶⁴

Nat returned to Rockingham County where on June 26, 1867 he married Mary J. Lawson of Leaksville.⁶⁵ His wife was born October 29, 1842, the daughter of Ann Johns Lawson and Francis I. Lawson who had been a successful merchant in Leaksville prior to his death in 1845.⁶⁶ Ann Johns Lawson was a sister of Dr. A. B. Johns, Sr., a prominent physician in Leaksville, Nat's brother Samuel had married Mary's sister Sarah in 1858. Sarah died in 1863 leaving one surviving child, Annie, who was raised by her Uncle Nat and Aunt Mary after her father remarried in 1866.⁶⁷

Nat and Mary settled in Leaksville where he helped establish one of the early tobacco warehouses in the county. Evidently this project was a failure or of short duration for nothing more is known of the effort.⁶⁸

About 1868-1869 the old Leaksville brick Academy building on Henry Street was remodeled and opened under the direction of Colonel John R. Winston and with Nat Smith as a teacher.⁶⁹ Apparently by 1872 Nat had become the principal of the Leaksville Academy.⁷⁰ One of the students at the school during this period was future governor Robert B. Glenn.⁷¹ About 1875 Nat expanded the Academy to include girls with an assistant named Nannie Hayden.⁷² For three years during the 1870s Nat operated a private academy in the Town of Madison where his niece Annie L. Smith was a teacher.⁷³ Apparently he continued to operate both the Leaksville and Madison academies simultaneously.

During 1869 Jones W. Burton, Smith's merchant brother-in-law in Leaksville, became over extended in finances and Nat purchased one-third interest in his store. The business continued under the name Burton & Smith.⁷⁴ In 1872 Nat purchased the John Hall Bulard Store building and opened a store. In 1874 he was advertising his store under the firm name N. S. Smith & Sons. Evidently he sold the business in 1875.⁷⁵ In 1887 he had a new brick store building erected in Leaksville and set up two of his sons in the mercantile trade under the name Smith Brothers. When the family left Leaksville some years later Nat continued to own the store building and leased it to other merchants.⁷⁶



The Leaksville Academy built ca. 1820 and remodeled to its present form ca. 1869. Nat S. Smith conducted the academy during the 1870s and early 1880s. Photo courtesy Bob Carter.

A person who was well acquainted with Nat Smith once said of him, "he was probably the best educated man in the county."⁷⁷ In 1881 the State of North Carolina created a new position known as County Superintendent of Public Instruction. A superintendent was to be appointed to oversee the public schools in each county. It is not surprising that on June 6, 1881 the County Board of Education elected Nat Smith as the first Superintendent of Public Instruction for Rockingham County.⁷⁸ One of the major responsibilities of the new office was to hold examinations for certification of teachers and to conduct institutes for teachers. Smith presented the Board of Education with a bold proposal to improve the standard of education in the county by conducting institutes for both white and black teachers and to increase their salaries. Because of taxpayer opposition, the Board resisted Smith's new program and as a result he resigned as Superintendent. Some months later he was reinstated by order of

the North Carolina Attorney General. Gradually the Board increased appropriations and Nat was able to achieve many of his objectives for the improvement of education in the county.⁷⁹ During his tenure as Superintendent he also served as Clerk of the Board of Education.⁸⁰ Nat continued to serve as the County's Superintendent of Education during the 1880s with the exception of the years 1887-1889 when the North Carolina Legislature abolished the position in Rockingham County and replaced it with a County Examiner.⁸¹

As the office was not a full-time job while he held the position, Nat continued teaching during his tenure as Superintendent. He evidently conducted excellent teacher institutes because only a few years after he left office several of the teachers were requesting "...one of those good old-time institutes like Professor Smith used to give us..."⁸²

Nat continued as Superintendent of the County Schools until June 3, 1890 when he stated to the County Commissioners "...that he did not desire a re-election" to the office. Professor E. P. Ellington of Madison was elected as Smith's successor.⁸³ While many taxpayers in the county continued to oppose the teacher institutes and other educational improvements, Nat's tenure as Superintendent brought the county's educational system from the old common schools into a more modern era and paved the way for his successors. Many years later some citizens who were aware of the lack of funds and conditions under which he worked said that Nat Smith "...could be considered the father of public education in Rockingham County."⁸⁴

While busily engaged as County Superintendent, Clerk of the Board of Education and as a teacher, Nat still found time to establish a newspaper in Leaksville. The paper was democratic in perspective and was of course pro-education. The first issue of *The Dan Valley Echo* appeared on April 16, 1885. He continued to print the paper until June 1887 when he sold the publication to Durval Porter and Phil A. Peatross.⁸⁵

In 1884 Nat wrote a sketch of Leaksville and stated that the town had "a flourishing academy supplied with all the modern school paraphernalia." Nat was writing about his own school; however, he would soon have some major competition.⁸⁶ In 1836 B. W. Ray opened the *Leaksville Practical High School* which met with success and flourished for some years.⁸⁷ Sometime during this period the old brick academy was closed and Nat opened a "fine school" in the old Episcopal Rectory with his niece Annie Smith as his assistant.⁸⁸ On February 21, 1891, Nat received a state charter for the *Leaksville Collegiate Institute*.⁸⁹ It is not clear if this was the charter for the school he established at the old Episcopal Rectory or if he was plan-

ning to begin a new school. Long range plans for the institute failed to materialize and the project was abandoned.

Nat and Mary Smith had been residents of the Leaksville Area since their marriage in 1867. In 1868 Nat purchased his brother Samuel's home which was located a short distance west of Leaksville on a 59 acre tract of land.⁹⁰ The two story frame house built in 1859



Hawthorn Hill in the western portion of Eden was the home of Nat S. Smith and his family from 1868 to ca. 1894. Photo courtesy of Bob Carter.

by his brother was named *Hawthorn Hill*.⁹¹ The house still stands near the corner of Washington and Patterson Streets in present day Eden. Nat and Mary continued to reside at *Hawthorn Hill* until the family moved away from the Leaksville area.⁹²

Nat Smith's religious background was Presbyterian.⁹³ His mother Eliza joined Spring Garden Presbyterian Church on May 19, 1844. Nat joined the same church in May 1850 when he was just short of his 12th birthday.⁹⁴ As already stated he graduated from Davidson College which had been established by the Presbyterian Denomination in 1837. After moving to the Leaksville area he transferred

his membership from the Madison church to the Leaksville Presbyterian Church. He was an elder in the Leaksville congregation for many years.⁹⁵ His wife Mary and her relatives, the Lawsons and Johns, were members of the Church of the Epiphany in Leaksville.⁹⁶ Sometime after moving from Leaksville to Stoneville, Nat and his family became members of the Episcopal Church.⁹⁷



The Nat S. Smith home on Smith Street in Stoneville, North Carolina. Smith built this house in 1895 and lived here until his death in 1914. Photo courtesy of Peggy Osborne.

About the year 1893 or 1894 Nat and his wife Mary moved to the Town of Stoneville where his younger brother Dr. Joshua Smith lived.⁹⁸ He purchased a lot in Stoneville in 1895 on which he built a two story brick home where he was to spend the remainder of his life.⁹⁹ His niece Annie built a small home on a nearby lot for herself and a friend Lucy M. Stephens.¹⁰⁰ Both the houses were located on Smith Street which Nat opened when he purchased the land to build the houses.

In 1866 Nat's mother Eliza and his brothers Walter and Joshua



The stone dam across Mayo River was built in 1899 to furnish power for the Avalon Cotton Mill. This structure was built on the site of the Smith Grist and Flour Mill dam. Photo courtesy of Bob Carter.

had sold one-half interest in the Mayo River Gristmill to John H. Price. After that time the enterprise was known as the Price & Smith Mill.¹⁰¹ The mill which had been erected in 1860 to replace the earlier Joshua Smith mill had the capacity not only to grind flour and corn but also to gin cotton.¹⁰² In 1871 Nat Smith, his brother Walter, and their brother-in-law Jones W. Burton purchased the remaining half of the mill property. The milling operation continued under this partnership until 1891 and 1892 when the land and mill were sold to the Piedmont Land and Manufacturing Company who wanted the site for its excellent water power potential. The company continued to operate the Price & Smith Mill until it was demolished around 1899 to be replaced by the Avalon Cotton Mill.¹⁰⁴

As early as 1872 Stoneville had a male academy which was operated by Nat's brother Rufus.¹⁰⁵ In 1877 the school was deeded by Nat's uncle Nat Box Scales to several Stoneville citizens who served as trustees for the Stoneville Academy.¹⁰⁶ Little is known about



Stoneville Public School class in 1912. The old Stoneville Collegiate Institute building was sold to the County Board of Education in 1907. Photo courtesy Rockingham County Historical Collection Room, Rockingham Community College.

its operation until March 4, 1893 when Nat had the academy chartered by the State of North Carolina as the *Stoneville Collegiate Institute*. The Charter of Incorporation allowed the Institute to own real estate up to a value of \$5,000 and to issue stock in shares of \$25 each.¹⁰⁷ Sometime during this period a brick academy building was erected by the trustees to replace the old frame school.¹⁰⁸ The school evidently underwent a name change for in 1897 Nat Smith was listed as being the principal of Stoneville High School.¹⁰⁹ He evidently retired from teaching during this period as he was not listed as a teacher in the 1900 census.

After moving to Stoneville Nat continued his interest in the mercantile trade. In partnership with his son Tom he opened a general store on Henry Street. In a big frame two story building the Smiths "sold everything from fine lace to tombstones."¹¹⁰ By 1897 Nat was serving as a magistrate for Mayo Township.¹¹¹ During the North Carolina Legislative Session of 1899 he was appointed as Magistrate for the Town of Stoneville for a term of six years. He continued to serve the town in that capacity as late as 1913.¹¹²

Nat's wife Mary died on July 2, 1904. She was buried in the



Thomas L. Smith (1868-1965), son of Nat S. Smith, was a merchant, postmaster and member of the North Carolina General Assembly 1925-1927. Photo courtesy of C. P. Robertson, from The History of Joyce Presbyterian Chapel 1905-1959.

Church of the Epiphany Cemetery in Leaksville beside their son, Dr. N. S. Smith, Jr., who had died March 28, 1892 at the age of 22. The Smiths had two infants, Fannie and Manie, who were also buried in the same plot.¹¹³ Their other children who reached adulthood were: Mattie, Thomas L. and Samuel. Mattie married Dr. George M. Ivie on November 14, 1895. He was the son of William S. and Sallie Scales Ivie of Leaksville.¹¹⁴ By 1897 Dr. Ivie had formed a partnership with his wife's uncle, Dr. Joshua R. Smith of Stoneville.¹¹⁵ Dr. Ivie continued to practice in Stoneville until he died January 22, 1905 at the age of 41 years.¹¹⁶ He and his wife Mattie had two children: Rivers Ivie (Fitts) and George Lawson Ivie.¹¹⁷ His widow remarried on

December 1, 1910 to W. L. Gravely.¹¹⁸ Mattie, who was born in 1876 and died in 1964, had no children by her second marriage.

Nat and Mary's son Thomas was born in 1869. He was a merchant first in the Town of Leaksville and then in partnership with his father in Stoneville.¹¹⁹ Tom was a mail carrier on a Stoneville rural route and later served as postmaster of Stoneville from 1914 to 1922.¹²⁰ In 1924 he moved to Leaksville where he operated a boarding house known as the Bettie Fields Inn. He also sold insurance and operated a brickyard for some years.¹²¹ Tom was Rockingham County's representative in the State Legislative Sessions of 1925-1927.¹²² His and his wife Zell Wall adopted a daughter and later lived in Winston-Salem.¹²³

Nat and Mary's bachelor son Sam Burton Smith was also a merchant working as a clerk in the family store. When the first telephone exchange in Stoneville was installed on the second floor of Smith's Store he served as the telephone operator. He was also the organist in the Stoneville Episcopal Church.¹²⁴

Nat Smith made a will on June 30, 1911 requesting that he be buried beside his wife in Leaksville.¹²⁵ He left property to his sons Tom and Sam, daughter Mattie, grandchildren Lawson and Rivers Ivie, daughter-in-law Zell Smith and his niece Annie L. Smith.

On April 10, 1914 Nat's doctor, James F. Dick, began treating him for a carbuncle which had become infected. The medical treatment failed to prevent the spread of the infection and he died on April 27, 1914 at the age of 75 years, 10 months and 1 day.¹²⁶ During this period burials were prohibited in the Church of the Epiphany Cemetery in Leaksville so Nat could not be buried beside his wife as he desired. He was buried in the Stoneville Town Cemetery. His funeral was conducted at the Episcopal Church in Stoneville by Rector H. A. Willy and Rev. P. H. Gwynn, a Presbyterian minister.

Notes

¹Information from family group sheets on the Samuel Smith Family, research Linda C. Vernon. Hereinafter cited as Smith Family Group Sheets.

²Family tradition in the Smith Family from Mrs. River Ivie Fitts, Eden, North Carolina.

³Guilford Wills, Book A, page 337.

⁴Early Families of The North Carolina Counties of Rockingham and Stokes with Revolutionary Service, (Madison, North Carolina, 1981), Vol. I, pages 119, 120.

⁵Information from The Secretary of State's Office, Land Grant Division, Raleigh, North Carolina.

⁶Ibid.

⁷Rockingham Court Minutes, February, 1786.

⁸Rockingham Court Minutes, 1795, 1796, John L. Cheney, *North Carolina Government, 1585-1979*, (Winston-Salem: Hunter Pub. Company, 1979), page 1258. Hereinafter cited as *North Carolina Government*.

⁹Rockingham Tax List, 1815.

¹⁰Rockingham Censuses, 1800, 1820.

¹¹Rockingham Court Minutes, November 1796.

¹²Rockingham Deeds, Book W, page 151. In 1822 the 11 acre mill tract was heired by James Wall who sold it to Samuel Smith in 1825.

¹³Rockingham Court Minutes, November, 1821.

¹⁴Rockingham Deeds, Book W, page 151.

¹⁵Rockingham Deeds, Book 2dB, page 339.

¹⁶Smith Family Group Sheets. Tradition states that Caroline was a Joyce but absolute proof to confirm this has not been located. Rockingham Deed Book 2dK, page 137 proves Nath. Scales died in 1839 and not in 1840 as sometimes cited.

¹⁷Rockingham Deeds, Book W, page 151, Book X, page 314, Book 2dB, pages 218, 219, 221, 339, Book 2dD, page 23, Book 2dF, page 100, Book 2dL, page 297.

¹⁸Dr. Robert H. Dalton, "A Brief History of The Dalton Family and The Hunters," *The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy*, Vol. X, number 1, (June 1985), page 35. Hereinafter cited as *Journal of Rockingham History & Genealogy*. Rockingham Commissioners Minutes, 1884-1895, road petition dated October 9, 1889 mentioned "the brick school."

¹⁹*Laws of North Carolina, 1825-26, Chapter CXXV, page 81.*

²⁰See note number 18.

²¹Avila Lindsay Lowe, "Life on the Dan."

²²*Dan Valley Echo*; May 8, 1885.

²³Rockingham Census, 1840, Sam Smith, a grandson of Samuel Smith, related the following story about the school in the *Madison Messenger* October 8, 1936. "My grandfather was a celebrated school teacher. He prepared boys for college. On one occasion, too many of the boys were out of school. And grandpa went out to look them up. As he went to the spring he saw one boy on his all-fours calling doodle-bug. He slipped up behind him as he was about to say doodle and gave him a sharp lick with a board. It scared the boy badly. He ran to the school room a sad doodle."

A Sketch of "Isaac" and His Family

- ²⁴ Rockingham Deeds, Book 2dK, page 195.
- ²⁵ Shady Grove Cemetery, recorded by Linda C. Vernon.
- ²⁶ Rockingham Estate Records, North Carolina State Archives, Samuel Smith Estate Papers, 1845. Eliza Smith Dower recorded February 8, 1848.
- ²⁷ Rockingham Deeds, Book 2dR, page 313.
- ²⁸ Rockingham Censuses, 1840, 1850. Rockingham Deeds, Book 2dR, page 482. Rockingham Court Minutes, May 1852, page 139.
- ²⁹ Rockingham Deeds, Book 2dR, page 482. In the Samuel Smith Estate Record dated 1845 Isaac is listed as a boy valued at \$225.
- ³⁰ Smith Family group sheets.
- ³¹ Shady Grove Cemetery.
- ³² Greensboro Patriot, January 4, 1851, January 27, 1855. *Executive and Legislative Documents*, (Raleigh: James Moore, 1871), page 299. *Branson's North Carolina Business Directories*. 1872, 1890. Hereinafter cited as *Branson's Directory*.
- ³³ Stokes Marriage Bonds. Loose papers from the Nancy Watkins Collection from Charles Rodenbough, April 5, 1989.
- ³⁴ *The Dan Valley Echo*, April 16, 1885.
- ³⁵ Rockingham Wills, Book E, page 431.
- ³⁶ In a 1851 letter Dr. John W. Smith of Ridgeway, Virginia, stated to Dr. R.D. Hay that Walter R. Smith was planning to locate in Abingdon, Virginia. Copy of letter courtesy J.W. Tatum, Winston-Salem, North Carolina.
- ³⁷ *The Madison Leader*, May 31, 1888, *The Madison Enterprise*, April 9, 1873.
- ³⁸ Rockingham Board of Commissioners Minutes, 1870-1884.
- ³⁹ Smith Family group sheets. Rockingham Appointments of Executors, Vol. A, page 357.
- ⁴⁰ Smith Family group sheets. *Journal of Rockingham History & Genealogy*, Vol. V, number 1, (June 1980), page 26.
- ⁴¹ *Branson's Directory*, 1869.
- ⁴² Rockingham Deeds, Book 2dY, page 366, Book 3dA, page 236. *Journal of Rockingham History & Genealogy*, Vol. IV, number 1, page 39.
- ⁴³ *Branson's Directory*, 1877, 1884. *North Carolina Government*, page 1251.
- ⁴⁴ Lawson Cemetery, Eden, North Carolina. The census of Rockingham County for 1880 listed Rev. Burton's daughter as being born in Tennessee.
- ⁴⁵ Rockingham Deeds, Book 4D, pages 133, 134. Mary Smith Burton died by 1899 as her granddaughter was selling part of the property at that time. See Deed Book 122, page 80.
- ⁴⁶ *Journal of Rockingham History & Genealogy*, Vol. IV, number 1, pages 30, 37, 39.
- ⁴⁷ Tombstone, Greenview Cemetery, Reidsville, North Carolina.
- ⁴⁸ *Journal of Rockingham History & Genealogy*, Vol. 1, number 2, page 74. Betsy Willis, Martha B. Craddock, *Sketches And Genealogy of The Bailey, Craddock, Lawson Families*, (Private, Alexandria, Virginia, 1974), page 69. Hereinafter cited as *Bailey, Craddock, Lawson Families*.
- ⁴⁹ Smith Family traditon from Mrs. Rivers Ivie Fitts to Marjorie T. Walker, January, 1989. Lawson Cemetery, Eden, North Carolina.
- ⁵⁰ From an application for membership in the N. S. D. A. R. by Olivia Smith Mobley of Danville, Virginia. A copy of the record dated 1937 furnished by Linda Vernon.
- ⁵¹ *The Reidsville Review*, November 12, 1901, January 27, 1930.
- ⁵² Smith Family group sheets.
- ⁵³ Rockingham Census, 1850. See note number 36. In the 1851 letter from Smith to

Hay, Dr. Oliver is selling his medical practice and medicines and moving to Texas. If Dr. Oliver moved to Texas he soon returned to Rockingham. Rockingham Deeds; Book 83, page 480, Book 2dY, pages 235, 645.

⁵⁴Rockingham Census, 1860, Nancy Watkins, *Four Blocks of Culture*, pages 74, 75. Rockingham Deeds, Book 82, page 434.

⁵⁵Smith Family group sheets.

⁵⁶Branson's Directory, 1872.

⁵⁷Tombstone, Stoneville Town Cemetery.

⁵⁸Rockingham Wills, Book F, page 359.

⁵⁹Rockingham Census, 1850.

⁶⁰The Reidsville Review, May 5, 1914.

⁶¹W.T. Jordan, Jr., *North Carolina Troops 1861-1865. A Roster*, (State Archives & History, Raleigh, 1975), Vol. V, page 356.

⁶²Walter Clark, *Histories of The Several Regiments of Battalions From North Carolina*, (E.M. Uzzell, Printer, Raleigh, 1901), Vol. I, pages 689-699.

⁶³Ibid.

⁶⁴See note number 61.

⁶⁵*Journal of Rockingham History & Genealogy*, Vol. 1, number 2, (October 1976) page

⁶⁶Church of The Epiphany Cemeter, Eden, North Carolina. Bailey, Craddock, Lawson Families, page 69.

⁶⁷Conversation with Margorie T. Walker, February, 1989. See note number 65.

Tombstones in Lawson Cemetery, Eden, North Carolina.

⁶⁸The Reidsville Review, May 5, 1914.

⁶⁹Claudia Roberts Brown, *A Tale of Three Cities. Eden's Heritage*, (Eden Historic Properties Commission, Eden, North Carolina, 1986), Hereinafter cited as Brown, *Eden's Heritage*. Rockingham Census for 1870 listed Nat Smith as a teacher in Leaksville. *The Leaksville News*, April 23, 1931.

⁷⁰Branson's Directory, 1872

⁷¹The Reidsville Review, May 5, 1914.

⁷²Lindley S. Butler, *Rockingham County: A Brief History*, (North Carolina Archives, Raleigh, 1982), page 69. Hereinafter cited as Butler, *Brief History*.

⁷³Jean and Charles Rodenbough, *150th Year Town of Madison, N.C., A Heritage to Honor 1818-1968*, (Madison Sesquicentennial Commission, 1968), no page numbers. Branson's Directory, 1877-78. The directory listed Smith as the head of schools in both Leaksville and Madison.

⁷⁴Rockingham Deeds, Book 2dY, page 366. Branson's Directory, 1872.

⁷⁵Rockingham Deeds, Book 85, page 221, *Madison Enterprise*, April 29, 1873. Rockingham Deeds, Book 3dF, page 181.

⁷⁶The Dan Valley Echo, September 1, 1887, October 13, 1887. Smith sold his Leaksville property on December 13, 1894. See Deed Book 97, page 349.

⁷⁷The Leaksville News, 1936 article by J.F. Kemp, Sr. of Leaksville. Reprint in The Eden News, November, 1969.

⁷⁸Rockingham Board of Education Minutes, Vol. 1, 1877-1885, page 28.

⁷⁹Butler, *Brief History*, pages 67, 70

⁸⁰See note number 78.

⁸¹North Carolina State Laws, 1887, Chapter 158, page 368. State Laws, 1889, Chapter 79, page 85.

⁸²The Reidsville Review, May 11, 1894.

⁸³The Reidsville Review, June 4, 1890

⁸⁴The Leaksville News, March 28, 1957.

- ⁸⁵ *The Dan Valley Echo*, April 16, 1885, June 23, 1887.
- ⁸⁶ *The Journal of Rockingham History & Genealogy*, Vol. VI, number 1, page 26.
- ⁸⁷ Butler, *Brief History*, page 69.
- ⁸⁸ Berta King Ray, "The History of Leaksville", manuscript ca. 1948, Mrs. Ray probably attended this school.
- ⁸⁹ *Private Laws of North Carolina*, 1891, Chapter 130, page 940.
- ⁹⁰ *Rockingham Deeds*, Book 2dY, page 447.
- ⁹¹ Brown, *Eden's Heritage*, page 207.
- ⁹² *Rockingham Deeds*, Book 97, page 349.
- ⁹³ *The Reidsville Review*, May 5, 1914.
- ⁹⁴ Records of Spring Garden Presbyterian Church, 1832-1856.
- ⁹⁵ *The Reidsville Review*, May 5, 1914.
- ⁹⁶ *The Journal of Rockingham History & Genealogy*, Vol. 1, number 1, pages 13-28.
- ⁹⁷ *The Reidsville Review*, May 5, 1914.
- ⁹⁸ *Rockingham Deeds*, Book 97, page 349. The deed dated December 13, 1894, states that Hawthorn Hill had been "occupied until recently by N.S. Smith as a home."
- ⁹⁹ *Rockingham Deeds*, Book 102, pages 300, 302.
- ¹⁰⁰ *Rockingham Deeds*, Book 102, page 513. Lucy M. Stephens was a music teacher in Stoneville for some years. Conversation with Guy V. Lewis, April 10, 1989.
- ¹⁰¹ *Rockingham Deeds*, Book 2dX, page 495.
- ¹⁰² *The Leaksville Herald*, October 20, 1860, See note number 95.
- ¹⁰³ *Rockingham Deeds*, Book 85, pages 474, 475, Book 91, pages 393, 508.
- ¹⁰⁴ Ola Maie Foushee, *Avalon*. (Private, Chapel Hill, North Carolina, 1977), page 26.
- ¹⁰⁵ *Branson's Directory*, 1872.
- ¹⁰⁶ *Rockingham Deeds*, Book 3dH, page 154, Robert L. Stone, ed. Guy V. Lewis, "History of Stoneville, N.C.", page 0. Copy in Rockingham Community College Library.
- ¹⁰⁷ *North Carolina Laws*, 1893, Chapter 253, page 394.
- ¹⁰⁸ Conversation with Guy V. Lewis, February 7, 1989.
- ¹⁰⁹ *Branson's Directory*, 1897.
- ¹¹⁰ Conversation with Guy V. Lewis, February 7, 1989. *The North Carolina Year Book*, (The News and Observer, Raleigh, North Carolina); 1902, 1905, 1907, 1910, 1911. Hereinafter cited as *The North Carolina Year Book*.
- ¹¹¹ *Branson's Directory*, 1897.
- ¹¹² *North Carolina Laws*, 1899, Chapter 515, page 705. *The North Carolina Year Book*, 1913.
- ¹¹³ Tombstones, Church of The Epiphany Cemetery, Eden, North Carolina. Conversation with Guy V. Lewis April 10, 1989. Lewis stated the Stoneville Episcopal Church records revealed that Mary Lawson Smith died July 2, 1903 (sic) of Bronchitis.
- ¹¹⁴ *Rockingham Marriage Register. The Heritage of Rockingham County, North Carolina*, 1983, (Hunter Pub. Company, Winston-Salem, 1983), page 319. Hereinafter cited as *Rockingham Heritage Book*. IIII
- ¹¹⁵ *Branson's Directory*, 1897.
- ¹¹⁶ *The North Carolina Year Book*; 1902, 1904, 1905. I
- ¹¹⁷ *Rockingham Heritage Book*, page 319.
- ¹¹⁸ *Rockingham Marriage Register*. Mattie is buried in the Ivie plot in Lawson Cemetery, Eden, North Carolina.
- ¹¹⁹ *The Dan Valley Echo*, October 13, 1887. *The North Carolina Year Book*, 1902,

1905, 1907, 1911. *Branson's Directory*, 1897.

¹²⁰ Guy V. Lewis, "History of The Stoneville Post Office", *Eden Daily News*, **June 1, 1988.**

¹²¹ Conversation with Marjorie T. Walker, February 6, 1989. Family papers of Mrs. Rivers Ivie Fitts who is a granddaughter of N.S. Smith.

¹²² Cheney, *North Carolina Government*, **page 1251.**

¹²³ Information from Marjorie T. Walker February 6, 1989.

¹²⁴ Conversations with Guy V. Lewis, February 7, 1989, April 10, 1989.

¹²⁵ Rockingham Wills, Book F, page 547.

¹²⁶ Rockingham Death Records, Vol. 1, Mayo Township, page 10.

¹²⁷ *The Reidsville Review*, **May 5, 1914.**

The Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

Officers

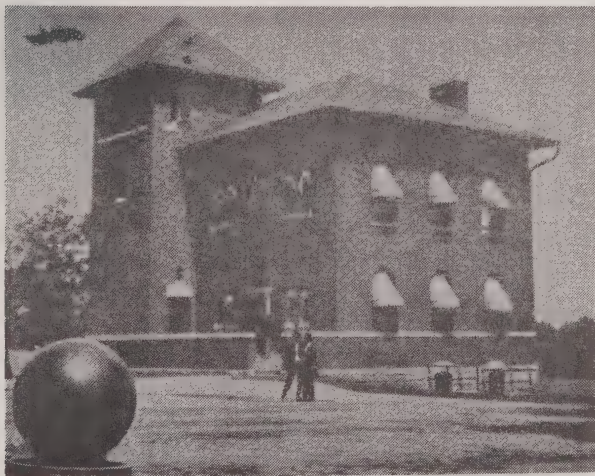
President	Jamie C. Smith, Stoneville
Vice-President	George A. Atkins, Eden
Recording Secretary	Mrs. Cora Ann Turner, Eden
Corresponding Secretary	Michael Perdue, Wentworth
Treasurer	Wayne Parleir, Eden

Directors

Robert W. Carter, Jr.	Reidsville
Mrs. Robbin G. Dodson	Stoneville
Don Hoover	High Point
James R. Meador	Wentworth
Mrs. Lib Meador	Wentworth
Mrs. Peggy Osborne	Eden
Mrs. Zelma Scott	Stoneville
Rich Seybert	Ruffin
Mrs. Linda C. Vernon	Stoneville
Lindley S. Butler	Wentworth
Mrs. Lillian Coleman	Reidsville
Mrs. Lucy M. Rankin	Reidsville
Charles D. Rodenbough	Madison
V. Siler Rothrock	Reidsville
Mrs. Jerri Griffin	Madison
Mrs. Barbara Joyce	Madison

0976.79
JES

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy



The Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

VOLUME XIV

NUMBER 2

DECEMBER, 1989

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy

The journal is published semiannually in June and December by the Rockingham County Historical Society, Box 84, Wentworth, N.C. 27375. Members of the society, for which the annual dues are \$8.00 for an individual and \$12.00 for a family membership, receive the journal. Single issues may be purchased for \$4.00 per number plus 50 cents mailing charge.

Editorial Policy

The publication committee is interested in receiving articles on the history and genealogical source materials of Rockingham County and the adjacent area. The historical articles must be well written and thoroughly documented. Genealogical articles should consist of previously unpublished primary source materials pertaining to Rockingham County, such as abstract of local records and edited diaries, letters, or church records. Papers on family history should not be submitted. All copy, including footnotes, should be typed double-space. Articles and correspondence should be sent to the editor: Robert W. Carter, Jr., Route 2, Box 762, Reidsville, N.C. 27320.

Cover Illustration

The old Reidsville Post Office built in 1894 at the corner of Scales and Morehead Streets. The building served as Reidsville's Post Office until 1936 and as the public library from 1953 to 1971. Photo taken in June 1909 by Allen Willis, uncle of the late W. B. Pipkin. The site is now occupied by the Reidsville Public Library. From *The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy*, Vol. I, Number 2, October 1976.

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy

VOLUME XIV

DECEMBER, 1989

NUMBER 2

CONTENTS

Memories by Bettie Sue Gardner	59
The Early History of Reidsville by Bettie Sue Gardner	88
Bettie Sue Gardner: A Short Sketch by Robert W. Carter, Jr.	101
Index for 1989 by Don Hoover	108



BETTIE SUE GARDNER

1882 - 1965

First President Rockingham

County Historical Society

1954 - 1956

MEMORIES

by

Bettie Sue Gardner

Editor's note: Bettie Sue Gardner (1882-1965), local Rockingham County historian of Reidsville, North Carolina, wrote this sketch of her early life in 1956 when she was 74 years of age. In 1962 she prepared a typed version which was used for this article. The sketch presents a unique look at growing up in Rockingham County during the 1880s and 1890s. The article was written for members of her family and has never been published. Special thanks is extended to Locksley Anne Henage of Chapel Hill, North Carolina, a granddaughter of Mrs. Gardner, for granting permission to the Society to publish the memories. The editor also wishes to thank Don Hoover who helped prepare the manuscript. Others who helped with this project were Michael Perdue, Cecilia Scott Hester, Mark L. Gardner, Dr. J. Elwood Carroll and Linda C. Vernon.

There is always some speculation as to your earliest memories of persons, places and events. You wonder about some things-- whether by frequent reference to them by older people you have formed a clear picture of them in your mind. However, there are a number of things of which I have a clear recollection.

Before my father married he had been a photographer with a gallery in Stoneville, North Carolina.¹ He lived in the home of Dr. Joshua Smith.² Miss Fannie Scales, the maiden sister of Mrs. Smith, lived with them.³ I think they kept other boarders also. A number of years ago "Miss Fannie" came to Reidsville to live with her niece, Mrs. Francis B. Kemp, Sr. who was a daughter of her sister who married Captain J. M. Andrews.⁴ She told me a number of amusing incidents in connection with my father. She confirmed my opinion of him when she said he was a shy, bashful and very quiet boy. He remained such as a man. She said he would go home week-ends for fresh linen; only had in Stoneville the clothes he needed for the week. One day when he came in for lunch he offered to climb a cherry tree and gather her some cherries. In getting out of the tree he hung his pants on a snag. That was a real catastrophe, as he had no others there, so she put him to bed and mended his pants for him. When I told him what "Miss Fannie" had told me he had a dry grin.

He and my mother were married in October 1881 and as the photograph business at that time was not sufficient to maintain a household, he accepted the offer of an old family friend, James Thomas to farm with him.⁵ He was really no farmer, but Mr. Thomas built him a house and he moved into it in the spring of 1882. It was here, probably six or eight miles from Stoneville, that I was born on the 3rd of August, 1882 during the most fearful thunder storm and rain. My father had gone to Stoneville for his old friend "Dr. Josh." In the meantime Dan River's waters had risen to such an extent it was impossible for them to ford the stream.⁶ In those days Dan River was a real river and not the mere stream it is today. However, before he left for "Dr. Josh" papa got "Aunt Betsy Kelly," a maiden lady, grand nurse, and good friend to stay with mama.⁷ Their delay in crossing the river did not delay my coming and when they finally arrived "Aunt Betsy" had everything in hand and presented my father with a roly, poly daughter.

In rambling over the scenes of my mother's early married life a few years ago I came across an abandoned graveyard; was told that it was the graveyard of the old Wesley's Chapel, a Methodist meeting house.⁸ I was immediately interested as I had heard my mother speak of attending services at that church. I began browsing around and imagine my surprise when I found the grave, of all people:

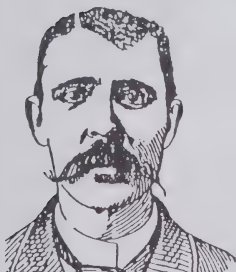
Elizabeth T. Kelly

Born December 16, 1819 Died May 11, 1890

That made her sixty three years old when I was born. I felt a real friendship with that abandoned last resting place of the mortal remains of my earliest friend. The church had been sold to a black congregation and razed some years before when the members of Wesley's Chapel decided to build a modern church in a more accessible location, a few miles west of this site on the Stoneville Highway.⁹ It saddens you to find these sacred spots abandoned to nature. There may soon be no remembrance of the spot when the older inhabitants are gone. The spot is about a mile from the old home of Albert Ray, now owned by his son Will.¹⁰ I well remember Mr. Ray and his home in his old age. My father had a Crescent tandem bicycle and almost every Sunday in the summer he and I made trips to churches all over the county where he could meet with old friends and visit after the service was over and have lunch, when it was not on the church grounds, as it often was. I was about twelve or fourteen years old when these trips began. I remember distinctly the terrible dirt roads. That was long before hard surfacing began. The farmers

themselves tried to keep the roads passable. All of this is preliminary.

On the original Reidsville-Wentworth Road, about five miles west of Reidsville, was the house of Harvey Moore and in passing, his daughter had married Albert Ray. Rainey Moore, son of Harvey, had built a home across the road from his father.¹¹ He was going to marry Susie Meador, daughter of Abner and his wife Susan King Meador, who lived on the western edge of the village of Reidsville, and decided to build a better home on a lot secured from Mr. Meador on the edge of the village.¹² My father was no farmer at heart but he decided to take this house and rented a few acres of land from Mr. Moore. He secured as tenants Wash and Easter Bingham, a black couple. They proved a tower of strength to my mother since my father began traveling for the B. F. Johnston Publishing Co. of Richmond, Virginia selling Bibles and other books during the winter months. Wash kept things going on the farm and Easter helped my mother in many and various ways as her house was quite near. I can recall their faces even today.



F. B. JONES, Reidsville, N. C.

Sewing Machines, Bicycles, Typewriters, Needles, Oil and
Parts for all machines. Repairing on Short Notice

Second Hand Machines from \$2.00 up.

SEE ME BEFORE BUYING I'LL SAVE YOU MONEY.

Phone No. 73 when in a hurry.

Next Door to Citizens Bank.

Ad of Fletcher B. Jones, father of Bettie Sue Gardner, which appeared in The Rural Free Delivery Directory for Rockingham County, North Carolina, Published in December 1905 by E. F. Barber, Reidsville, North Carolina.

My father was always a great "tinkerer" and could fix anything he decided to tackle. He was always helping a neighbor with some difficult matter. He could build a chimney that would not smoke, which I understand was quite an accomplishment in those days. While living at the Thomas place, our first home, the spring was at least a quarter of a mile or more down a hill from the house. My sister, Minnie Lee, was also born in that home, and my mother could not manage two babies and a bucket of water. She got a puppy about the time I was born and named him "Benson" for a famous temperance lecturer of

that time. He was now about two years old, so she would place us on a pallet and tell him to watch us. He was faithful to his trust and would allow no one near us. She would hurry to the spring, but that was pretty difficult for her. Papa decided he would fix a contraption to bring the water to her with less effort. He had a stout wire rigged so that it would carry a bucket down hill to the spring, where by some means it was tipped and filled. Then she wound the attached rope up by means of a windless; all without leaving the house. I asked him once if he had ever seen one and he said he never had.

When we moved to the Rainey Moore house in the fall of 1884 "Benson" had to do his old job all over again. The spring was again quite a distance away down a steep incline. Papa decided to have a well dug. Jim Shreve, a neighbor was to dig the well.¹³ I remember this distinctly. The dirt from the well was full of something shiny and I was always nosing around. I am sure this caused Mr. Shreve no end of worry. He would tell me to go away. The water was never very good. While living here Papa built a sleigh, so we could visit his mother who lived five or six miles out on the Leaksville road. We were on the way to visit her once when Mollie, the horse, became frightened at something and I was thrown from the sleigh into a deep snow. Fortunately I was unhurt, but that finished visits in that vehicle and the snow.

Another thing Papa made while living in the Moore house was a unique table, which was copied widely. It was a dining table and was round with a moving center. The outer edge for the purpose of the place settings was perhaps fifteen inches wide and was stationary. The center was round and arranged on a movable pedestal. The food was placed on this center and moved around as you wished certain food. There was perhaps an inch of space between this and the stationary part. We had the table for many years after we came to Reidsville to live. It was not a thing of beauty and was rather cumbersome, but very handy.

There were a number of events which occurred while we were living at this place which were deeply impressed on a child's memory. One particularly occurred one day when Easter carried Minnie Lee and me with her to gather vegetables. Minnie Lee wandered off.¹⁴ When she was missed a search began. Wash and Papa were in a nearby field. When they caught sight of her and called she ran away from them screaming. This kept up for some time, but she was finally caught in a briar thicket on the edge of an embankment. She was a nervous wreck when caught.

Another vivid memory is of the earthquake of 1886.¹⁵ This hap-

pened at night. Everyone was awakened by the rattling and shaking of the house; got up and went out of doors into the dark night. I remember particularly the howls of Benson which disturbed me. I could not understand why he was crouched near us howling. Mama had our baby brother, Glenn, only a few weeks old, in her arms.¹⁶ Mama was unable to nurse him for sometime. Our cow was dry and we had to depend upon a neighbor for milk. It was my job to go to Mrs. Throckmorton's, probably the distance of two blocks, each morning for the milk. There were no baby foods in those days. I took a little tin pail with a lid on it, and with Benson accompanying me for protection. I went through the woods, got the milk and returned safely. I was only four years old that August but I still remember the pretty spotted gourds on the vine over Mrs. Throckmorton's back kitchen door and her son Charlie, who must have been six or seven years old. I did not like him. He was always doubling his fists and saying he was as "strong as ivor fargis", or what has always remained with me as to what he said.

I remember the school house across the road in a grove of trees. Miss Neilie, the teacher came often to see mama. I learned in later years that she was Miss Neilie Carter. I remember a crippled girl who went to the school. I afterwards learned she was Sallie Bet Delancey. Laura Powell went to this school, but I do not remember her until a year later.¹⁷ The only people I remember well while we were living in the Moore house were the Hudson girls and their mother. Mrs. Hudson would always take me into her garden and give me a bouquet of flowers when I started home. We did not have flowers. The three girls claimed one each of us as her baby. I belonged to Miss Mollie (Durham), Minnie Lee to Miss Fannie (Mrs. Will Duke) and my brother Glenn was claimed by Miss Delilah, afterwards a Mrs. Stone.¹⁸ They were all very kind to my mother and would baby-sit for her at times.

In thirteen months after Glenn was born we had another baby-Mary Matthews, named by our family physician for his wife. Glenn called her Mamie and the name accompanied her through life.¹⁹ She was born on May 10, 1887 and we had a terrible hail storm that spring, which destroyed all the crops. That ended Papa's farming operations. Mama's brother, uncle Will Clark and a friend had been batching and farming on an adjoining plantation for several years, which belonged to Mr. George W. Johnson.²⁰ This friend, Jim Mallette, decided for some reason to return to his home in eastern Carolina. Uncle Will wanted us to come and live with him, which we did. The Johnson home was across the highway from Salem Church. Mamie was about five months old; I was five years old and a pretty good baby-sitter,

needs must, with three other younger. Our main playground was across the Wentworth Road in the Salem Church yard and the log school house near the church.²¹ It had been abandoned as a school, but we would see lots of men over there at times. Then we stayed away. I learned in after years that the Farmers Alliance members met there on each Saturday. Our playmate was a black girl, Zylphia Jones, known to us as "Dit." She was the daughter of uncle Will's tenant Nathaniel Jones and her mother, Venie, helped my mother often with her housework and laundry. "Dit" was a year or two older than I and when the chinquips, and the bushes were all over the church grounds, were ripe we would take them into the school house and beat them out on the big rock hearth. Then some one boiled and strung them for us and we has strings of them to hang around our neck.

We lived with my uncle a year. One of my most vivid memories of that time is the week that Dick Stokes and Lee Hannah spent with my uncle.²² They all loved the "chase" and there was good hunting in the community. Dick Stokes gave me one cent a pone to cook the bread for his hounds. This was cooked on a hoe on top of the stove and had to be turned while cooking. I expect Mama did the turning. "Little Rawley Johnson" was also one of the party.²³ He lived about half a mile from our home and was my uncle's pal. He was in and out of the house at all times. Uncle Will had a number of fox hounds. I remember Beauty, a liver colored dog; Hannah, a black and white; Drum, a big black and old Loud, a rangy, gray hound, but very intelligent. He had been trained to carry notes to Miss Pattie Powell and return with the answer.²⁴ They lived about a mile north of our home. Neither he nor Drum cared for children.

When the hunters returned from the chase in the early morning they would go upstairs and sleep for a while. It was my business to keep the children quiet, but when we heard Uncle Will's music box start everything was O. K. We were not supposed to be upstairs at all. One room was for uncle and the other for the guests.

I had received a large doll one Christmas. As was the custom in those days the face and head of the doll were made of wax. It was kept in the guest room on the bed. At some time Minnie Lee had slipped into the room; got the doll off the bed and bit a chunk out of one cheek. I remember how I cried when I found it so mutilated. I was heartbroken, but Uncle Will took me to his room and held me in his arms while he made music for me with his music box. When Dick Stokes was there he had given me a small box to keep my pennies in. I always waited on the steps for him to come out from supper and pay me my

day's earnings. I think this was on the bed, but was not bothered. Later he married Zena Miller, sister of Polk Miller of Richmond, Virginia who played the violin and was an entertainer.

We had a large Indian peach tree in the back yard. The peaches were red all the way through and very good. Mama and I were gathering some peaches one day when she decided to give the chickens their supper. She had a large hogshead in the smokehouse in which she kept corn for this purpose. The corn had gotten low so she lifted me into the hogshead to hand it to her. But a monster lay in wait for me-- an enormous gray rat. Guess he was as badly frightened as I was and in trying to get away from me, ran up my leg and on up my body to my loose sleeve. Of course, I yelled like I was being murdered, which frightened Mama. She reached down and lifted me and the rat both out. She didn't know about the rat, but just about the time we reached the top the rat jumped out of my sleeve. Fortunately he had not bitten me, but my nerves were in pretty bad shape.

I remember the all-day preaching days at Salem Church, chiefly because they placed table cloths on the ground and put the food on them. They got water for themselves and stock from our well. Sometimes Mama would go over during the dinner hour and visit among her friends. The women with children used the old log schoolhouse in which to rest and feed the babies; the benches were logs split in half and fastened to the supports with wooden pegs, as I found when I examined them many years later. "Aunt Pattie" Powell used to visit Mama frequently and bring Laura with her. Laura was five years my senior and rather looked down her nose at a five year old. I did not care for her, but later in life we became very good friends.

When Papa stopped farming he also ceased to travel for the Johnson Publishing Co. and got a position in Reidsville with the Rev. W. P. Ware, a Methodist preacher, who owned a large store in which he sold everything from plow points to ice cream.²⁵ That is about all I remember about the store. After he secured Papa's services he turned over everything to him: bookkeeping, general management, buying etc., and he looked after his church and its people. I do not remember, but wonder now, if Papa walked those five miles to and from the store each day. It was a killing job and in the fall of 1887, we moved to Reidsville.

Before I leave the Salem Church community I will say this with reference to the Farmers Alliance organization. All of the farmers, or most of them, belonged to the Alliance, but when they began to mix in politics and fuse with the Populist party most of them got out. My Uncle Gus (Augustine) Clark stayed with them, hence the only

Republican Clarks that were.²⁶ Mama and Uncle Will jealously guarded his fall from my grandfather Joseph Clark, who had gone back to his old home in Mecklenburg County, Virginia, and he died never knowing that his son had joined the Carpetbaggers and Scalawags, which was worse as he saw it.²⁷ They were the only Republicans he had ever known, and against whom he had fought during the War Between the States and through the Reconstruction period.

A number of years ago I got some inside information about the transactions that took place between the Farmers Alliance and Populist party as it pertained to Rockingham County. Tyree Glenn, a connection on the Glenn side of our family, was living at the Belvedere Hotel in Reidsville.²⁸ Some Glenns from the West who were tracing their ancestry, were spending the night at the hotel. He invited me to dinner to meet them. They were headed for Lunenburg County, Virginia, but Tyree Glenn and I both knew that Halifax County had been cut off of Lunenburg, and that the Glenns' records were in Halifax. When they had retired I asked him if he would mind telling me why he ever became a Republican, as I had never heard of any Glenn, except his family, who were Republicans. He laughed and said he wanted a certain appointment and that he had a promise if Marion Butler was elected to the Senate; that he came to Rockingham County and promised the Farmers Alliance that if they would support Butler, the Populist party would support their local ticket.²⁹ They had nominated W. L. Gardner for Sheriff and had tried to make a deal with the Democrats, but they had their own ticket; no deal.³⁰ They had no chance. I told him he knew it. He said, "what did we care about their local affairs; we wanted Butler and have been sorry ever since." The funny thing is the Rockingham Populists got mad with the Democrats and joined the Republican Party, then the Populist Party group sold them down the river, hence the only known Republican Gardner. That is how that party got its start in Rockingham.

I do not remember how Uncle Will was situated when we moved to Reidsville in the Fall of 1887, but he married Lula Bennett, a daughter of "Courts" Bennett and Lou Holderby Bennett in the fall of 1889. She was the daughter of Joseph B. Holderby, one of Reidsville's early settlers about 1863.³¹

When we came to Reidsville our first home was in the middle of a large corner lot at the intersection of Matlock (now N. Scales) and Wentworth Streets, then the old Wentworth Road. The house had been recently built by Will Penic (Pinnix) who had married "Uncle Billie" Burton's daughter.³² For some reason they moved elsewhere. The Scales Street front is now a commercial center. The first memory

I have of this place is when I awoke one morning and the whole lot across Wentworth Road was filled with tents and men, and animal noises rent the air. Robinson's Circus had come to town! It was a great day. The first person I remember knowing was Dolly Ellington, a girl living in a house on the edge of this field. The tents were very near her home and we went over there, for we could see huge animals walking around- elephants. In after years she married Zeb Price of Leaksville.³³

Northeast of our home, and in plain view of it, was a log cabin in the middle of a field. Just north of it was a red brick house where Richard Wray lived.³⁴ It was built in 1870 as the F. P. Hobgood Academy. He had a daughter, "Miss Att" and to this day I have never known her by any other name. She taught a school in the log cabin and it was my pleasure to attend this school for a short while. . My classmates were Mary Pierce, Annie Womack, Beckie Waddill and Nora and Lutie Hensley.³⁵ There were also a number of large boys in the school. I remember Frank and Johnny Al Burton, Fred DeGrotte, Eugene Johnson, and Rawley and Emmett Maxwell.³⁶ Emmett could not walk for his legs were no larger than a baby's. He rode around the room on a four-wheel flat vehicle. Mary, Annie, Beckie and I were playmates as we lived near each other. (We are all living today in our eightieth year, 1962).

My father was still managing the W. P. Ware store, but he was completely worn out after two years of long hours and great responsibility. When an old friend, Wash Mobley, who had a large country store seven or eight miles northwest of Reidsville, operated by his son, made Papa what he considered an excellent offer, he decided to accept it.³⁷ Mr. Mobley built us a comfortable house on the hill above the store. With a new baby, Numa Fletcher who had been born on August 12, we moved back to the country in the Fall of 1889, just after Uncle Will and his bride, Aunt Lula, had dinner with us one night.³⁸

Mobley's Racket Store had quite a reputation for bargains throughout the county. Hack loads of people came from Reidsville, Leaksville and as far away as Madison. It was indeed a racket for the son, John Will Mobley.³⁹ His father had hoped that Papa could hold John Will down to earth in his buying and selling. That was only a hope. Before we had been there but a short while, Mama, who could do anything with a needle, became interested in the millinery department. John Will would buy crates of hats from Armstrong, Cator & Company of Baltimore and have them trimmed before being shipped, but the demand was so great on account of the low price he charged for them

that his stock was soon sold out. Mama had studied these sample hats and suggested to John Will if he would buy more hats and material she could trim them, so she had a job. But early, both Papa and Mama found that it was impossible to keep the feet of that amiable and affable young man on the ground. They would price the merchandise to the throngs that came; then they would go to that pleasing gentleman and down the price would go. Papa fussed, Mama fussed; he would promise, but could not withstand the pleas of the ladies. Poor Papa was terribly worried; they would discuss it at home; Mr. Mobley was trusting him to see that he was not ruined. He would promise both Papa and his father to make a profit on his sales. The trouble was life had been made too easy for him and he was having the time of his young life. Later, when on his own and married he became a wonderful traveling salesman.

While all of this was taking place at the store I was becoming a seasoned baby sitter and housekeeper. The nearest school was five or six miles away, so I went to no school. This worried Mama. I had to carry the baby down to the store when his nursing hour arrived. I guess he slept most of the time in his carriage; he was only a few months old. I do not remember taking him out of the carriage that first winter. Sometimes either Papa or Mama would come to the house to see how things were progressing. Mama would put the milk in the churn and I would churn it until the butter was made. She would do the rest when she came home. Of course she was at the store only a few weeks during the fall and spring seasons. She had no trouble with the children. We were healthy and unusually well. I do not remember ever having any trouble with them myself.

We all did what she told us to do. We knew better than to do otherwise. She did not switch us often but we did get it occasionally. Papa left everything to her management and control. I cannot remember in all of my life that he ever raised his voice in anger. When he had the time, and was not too tired, he would bury himself in his magazines, which he had from the time I could first remember. I could read a little and they bought me linen books with jingles and other reading material. One book I remember distinctly had a rhyme about each letter in the alphabet:

A is an ape that wore a short cape and got himself up in fine shape.

B is a bear that went to the fair and thought himself the only animal there.

C is a cat that took off his hat and was always polite to a mouse or rat.

D is a dog that bought a big gun, shot at a bird and thought it fine fun.

E is an eel that danced a round reel with a large oyster and a fat seal.

F is a frog that sat on a log and sang a nice song to his friends in the bog. etc. etc.

Fortunately I was born with an old head on young shoulders; a sense of responsibility, and the more I was praised the more I tried. The spring and summer days were easier than the winter had been. Some of the trees in the grove had large roots above the ground. These could be arranged as different rooms. We used moss for the little dolls' beds and pretty pieces of colored glass and china for decorations. We spent hours out of doors. We always had plenty of milk if the children were hungry, but we had to drink it warm until Papa brought the jugs from the well down at the store. That was the only refrigeration we had. The butter was also kept in the well in a bucket, which could be lowered on a rope as was also the milk, both sweet and buttermilk. Besides playing in the grove I used to carry the children to a black home, which was near, where there were children we could play with. They were our nearest neighbors and their mother was our laundress. There were no other children nearer than two or three miles. The second summer I took them there occasionally, but it was hard work pushing the baby carriage over the rough country road. On Sundays I would take the older children down to the saw-mill, which was near the store and in sight of the house, and play in the saw dust, or climb into an old buggy and play we were going for a ride. It was fun and we had a pleasant life. No wrangling; no fussing as I remember. For a short while we had a cook Frances, who had a baby with black, curly hair.

Mama kept worrying and wanted to go back to Reidsville so I could go to school. Mr. Mobley persuaded Papa to remain through the winter and spring of the second year. He wanted to close the store and stop losing his money; the son protested. Mr. Ware was begging Papa to come back. Papa might have been more rested physically but not mentally.

Back to Reidsville we came in the mid-summer of 1891 just before my ninth birthday, August 3. We moved into a house on the extreme west end of Wentworth Street, almost out of town. The Baptist Tabernacle has been erected next door to the house, which is still used as a home. And what was rather odd, this was the Rainey Moore home to which he brought his bride Susie Meador, when we took his other home in the country. He had again moved and sold his home to his

brother-in-law Will Meador. This time he had gone to eastern Carolina to teach them how to raise and cure tobacco. He never returned. We had scarcely gotten settled before Mr. Will Meador decided to marry his sweetheart, Wilma Harrison of Harrison's Cross Roads and wanted his home.⁴⁰ Fortunately Papa's sister, who had built next door, had just sold her home to Mr. Tom Motley and moved to High Point. He had not yet rented the house so we just hopped across the fence to this house where we remained until 1897. There were several acres of land at this home; about a quarter of an acre was planted in peach, apple, pear and cherry trees; all loaded with fruit. We had a nice stable for our new cow. Just before we left the country we had traded our little Jersey, which I had learned to milk, as we needed more milk for our growing family, for a monster in size. I heard Mr. Glass tell Papa she gave three gallons of strained milk a day. I wondered what kind of milk that was. When she was fresh her udder was enormous. I finally managed to milk her after several years, but she was more than I could manage until I was thirteen or fourteen years old. My hands show it to this day.

Mama dried many pounds of peaches and apples each summer by slicing them and placing them in the sun on boards Papa made for this purpose. We had to turn them over every day and carry them in at night and then back in the sun on the morrow. These were used for pop-over pies during the Winter. She also canned and preserved these fruits as well as pickled some. I cannot remember that she ever canned any vegetables, but we always had both enough sweet and Irish potatoes to carry us through until the next crop. In the winter there were dried peas and beans and a bountiful supply of all varieties of green vegetables during the summer months. John and Minerva Oliver, a black couple who lived back of our home had a number of children. Minerva would help Mama in the garden and with the laundry work. In return she got her milk and butter and Mama made the clothes for her children. We usually had two big hogs to kill in the Fall. There was always an abundance of food. Mama made all our clothes and took as much pains with the four and five cent lawns, trimmed with val. lace at two cents per yard, as she would have taken with a silk dress. In the Winter we had woolen dresses trimmed with velvet and braid. We were always well dressed.

Another vivid memory of those early days in Reidsville, which carried back to the days we lived with our Uncle Will, is of an exceedingly tall man, with large rings in his ears, who passed our home frequently. He had a small mule drawing a carryall, in which were hoes, plows, etc. He always walked and had two or three dogs walking un-

der the wagon. The farmers kept their tools locked in a barn lest he might appropriate them. Whether they ever had any reason for this suspicion I doubt. He was John Goin from what was called the Indian village in the western part of the county. It was said in those days that he had been banished from his village because he had married a black. This I also doubt. I knew "Aunt Martha" in after years and she had every characteristic of an Indian woman. He eventually wandered off and never returned to his family. He was a dignified reserved Indian or Portugese descendant, and never mingled with the blacks of our community.

About this period we saw frequently droves of hogs passing. There would be hundreds of them, filling the road and reaching for at least a block. Men would be riding horseback back of them. There were a number of dogs on the sidelines and when a hog would stray from the road he got a nip from a dog. He would squeal and get back in line. It always made me sad when I saw them, for I wondered if they ever got any water or anything to eat. They had come from Madison, twenty or more miles away, where they had been gathered from the surrounding country and from as far away as Tennessee and West Virginia. In earlier days they had been loaded on bateaus below Eagle Falls in Dan River and rowed down to Danville, Virginia. The Norfolk & Western had not yet been built through Madison, so they were driven to Reidsville and loaded in cars for shipment.⁴¹ Madison enjoyed or not the name of "Hogtown."⁴²

Also during these days Grandpa and Grandma Jones broke up housekeeping on the Wentworth-Leaksville Road, not far from Wentworth, the county seat, and came to live with us. Grandpa, Richard Perryman Jones, a native of Halifax County, Virginia had married my grandmother, Elizabeth McCoy of Pittsboro, Chatham County of this state.⁴³ He was a school teacher all of his life, except the period during the War Between The States. During that period he was unable to serve in the army on account of a physical disability and served the county in some capacity at the county seat. Grandma was a tiny woman with twinkling brown eyes; a pretty Scot lass. We all loved her. She was very deaf at this time and it was my job to repeat things being discussed to her. When she would see the family laughing about something she would say: "Sudie what are they laughing about?" Sudie would have to tell her. That was insisted upon by Mama. I think that was the reason she preferred to stay with Mama in preference to any of her own children. She could do anything with her hands; had an artist's touch. She designed and crocheted for each of her children a beautiful counterpane and made for

the oldest grandchild in each family a "crazy-quilt". These were made of silk, velvet and woolen scraps. She would fit these scraps on a square of cloth and fasten them in place with a cross-stitch with different colored threads. She would work flowers and birds on the large pieces with the colored thread. They were beautiful. The squares were then feather-stitched together.

We had always had a stove, but Grandma had done all of her cooking on the hearth of the enormous fireplace in her combination kitchen-spinning room, separate from her house. She would cook "ash cakes." They were made of corn meal. She preferred hickory wood ash, but would use oak; never pine wood. That wood was rarely ever used in the fireplace anyway as it burned out too rapidly. The hickory or oak logs were banked with ashes at night and the fire never burned out. She would push the embers to one side and sweep the rock clean, after piling the ashes to the other side. Then she would put the meal cake on this hot rock and cover it with the hot ashes and a few embers on the top of the ashes. When it was cooked until done she would take it out, wash it quickly with cold water and then fill it with butter. It was delicious and believe it or not you would never have known any ashes had been near it. She said hickory ashes gave it a flavor; made it taste better.

She cooked biscuits in a skillet on the hearth. It had three legs and a top. You put embers under it and on top on the lid. She seemed to know exactly when they were ready to be taken out. Another thing I never saw anyone else do was to make wonderful hominy; she said just like the Indians made it before the white men came to this country. She always had an ash hopper at her home, so Papa built her one at our home. The boards slanted on the four sides down to the bottom where there was a small opening. Hickory ashes were also used for this. They were put in the hopper when taken out each day. A large pot was placed at the bottom of the hopper under the small opening. If it rained the lye would leach out and if it did not rain by the time she needed the lye, she would pour water over the ashes until she had as much as she wished. This was a slow process. I watched all of her operations while she explained. I do not remember how much of this lye she put in the pot in which she cooked the shelled corn. This made the husk come off the kernels. When it had cooked for a certain time she would take it out of the pot and pour cold water over it and get the husk off. When you wanted to prepare some of the hominy for eating you would heat it in water for a short time and then drain it and put butter on it. It was very good.

She stayed with us most of the time for many years, visiting with

her children now and then. Grandpa always came in from his school on week-ends for fresh linen and to fill the orders the ladies had given him before he left the neighborhood in which he was teaching on Friday afternoons. One would want thread of some kind, other pins and needles, or buttons, and some would want so many yards of lace, etc. etc. Mr. John Early Field, an old friend and one of the first and largest merchants in Leaksville, had decided a number of years before while he was still living at his old home, "to fit Dick out with a small satchel, filled with some of the many things the ladies needed."⁴⁴ After that Grandpa carried his little satchel back to school the next week well stocked. He wore a long cape which Mama always made for him and a large black hat. He looked for all the world like a Quaker picture of William Penn. When his regular school of two or three months was finished people from different sections of the county would make up classes in spelling and arithmetic for grown-up night classes. He always walked to and from these schools; some more than twelve miles away. He was a strict disciplinarian; one of the old school of "do it because I say do it." However, he was highly regarded as a teacher throughout the county. "Uncle Dick" was highly respected by everyone, as I have found in discussing him with the older men and women I have contacted in the various sections of the county for the past twenty years. He used two white vests each week. They had removable buttons. I ironed these vests and replaced the buttons each week. He would look at them closely, but rarely ever said anything. Once I did something which displeased him, I have no idea now what, but I will never forget that he said: "Rosa, you will punish her or I will." I was scared nearly to death, and strange as it may seem, I cannot remember whether she punished me or not. He was a devout Methodist and a steward in his church, or trustee as they were called in early church history. He told me one time he had taught as many as three or four three-month schools in a year, after the first Public School in North Carolina was established in Rockingham County in 1840.⁴⁵ He died just a few days before his eighty second birthday. He walked twelve miles home from teaching a night school for adults; went to bed and died in less than a week. He had a mouth full of perfect teeth; not a decayed spot on them. Was his habit of a lifetime thus justified? After each meal when he left the table he would put a pinch of salt in his mouth, go out, fill his mouth with water and rinse his teeth. You wondered why he did this; no one else did.

Grandma was terribly drawn with rheumatism in her shoulders in her old age. She liked to sleep on the trundle bed, usually used for the young children. This bed was made up and pushed under the

other bed during the day. After she went to bed at night she loved to play a game with us. We thought it fun as well as she. We would stick a finger near her foot and she would attempt to grab it with her toes. She would be greatly tickled when she would catch the finger and there was strength in those toes. She was always bright and happy in spite of her deafness and drawn body. I do not remember her ever complaining about anything. Papa was more like his mother than any of her other children, unless it was Aunt Jennie Hubbard.⁴⁶

How Mama lived through the year of 1892 is yet a mystery to me. The whole town, or practically everyone in it, had the mumps during the Christmas holidays of 1891. They gave us two weeks out of school after the holidays were over, but of course we had to wait until this time elapsed before we began our siege and just at that time our brother, Joseph Hunter, was born in January.⁴⁷ We had been back in school only a few weeks when a measles epidemic struck the schools. This was a bad time for Mama, for we were all very sick; even Papa joined us. She alone escaped. I remember the first day I was able to get out of the house, the orchard was full of little bluets blooming everywhere. As if we had not been through enough that year in August we all had what was called "roseola." The worst feature of this disease was the itching.⁴⁸ You could do your work or play,

During this period I was learning to cook. Mama was in bed quite often for one reason or another. We had no recipe for biscuits; just a pinch of this and a pinch of that. After "sifting" the flour I would carry that and the salt and soda to Mama in bed; she would put in the right number of pinches. I thought I would never get the dough off my fingers and get it in a smooth mixture. However I heard no complaint from anyone. I had almost completed my tenth year, which I did on August 3. When Mama was sick, which seemed often that year, I had the care of our other younger children not counting the baby. We spent a lot of time in the beautiful woods back of the house. It was also my job to carry that monster cow to the pasture several block lengths from the house each morning and then go for her at noon to bring her back for water. One day in August when we had the "roseola" I put the baby, "Hunter," in the carriage and let "my baby," Numa, walk between the handles. He thought he was pushing the carriage. He was almost three years old. This was a daily routine. Sometime he would get tired and stop. If I walked on a little way without him he would remain just where he was. The cow was probably nibbling grass on the way and was no problem. When I stopped he would make a mark on the ground and pull me back to that point, when we would start all over again. He was a beautiful blond boy

with blue eyes and one of the most intelligent children for his age I have ever known. One day, Mrs. Abner Meador, a near neighbor, was heard telling Mama "that boy is certainly the apple of her eye." I was doubtful as to what she meant, but I will confess he was my special "pet," probably because he had been "my baby" for three years.

Another incident: Mama went uptown one morning and left the children in my care. Why I did what I did and how I did it I do not know, but when she came home I had every chick and child on top of the lattice porch between the main house and the kitchen. You may laugh, but I needed a spanking, which for some reason or none, I did not get. The roof of this porch was practically flat and not more than seven feet from the ground. The top of the well was about four feet high and was kept closed except when drawing water. This was about three feet from the roof of the porch and practically touched it. I do not remember how I got the children up there, which must not have been much trouble, but I do remember that when I saw Mama's face I expected all that was coming to me, and which I never got. I handed her the baby and got the others down.

One day I got a real switching, which I somehow felt I should not have had. Mama had me climb into a very high closet, or rather an open space above a closet, for something she wanted. There was a piece of an old pistol up there; it had no cylinder. I pointed it at her and said: "I'll shoot you." I told her I knew it would not shoot, but that made no difference. I really got a good one that time. She said in after years she was so frightened was the reason for the switching. Perhaps it taught me some kind of a lesson.

Perhaps, like the time when I was eight or nine, while living at Mobley's Store, and decided I would be smart and have a fried chicken for dinner. I had seen Mama kill them a great many times and had learned to dress and carve the chicken. She always let me learn to do things like that and was very patient in showing me how. I caught the chicken O.K., but when I held his head with one hand and put my foot on its feet and started sawing on his neck with the butcher knife, that was more than the chicken would stand for. He had more strength than I had, so it gave a flutter and was gone with the blood streaming from the cut on its neck. From that day until this all chickens have been safe from any malignant intentions on my part.

On August 12, 1892 "my baby" Numa and I made our usual noon trip to the pasture for the cow, I drew a tub full of water from the well for the cow. When she finished drinking I went on to confine her in the barn, leaving Numa by the well. While I was away he dipped his

head in the water left in the tub, perhaps several times. It was a terribly hot day and he was still covered with the "Roseola" rash. That night Mama awakened me saying "your baby is very sick and your father has gone for the doctor." He had to ride his bicycle at least two miles to the home of Dr. Matthews; then the doctor had to get up, hitch his horse to the buggy and drive to our house at the extreme end of Wentworth Street. He spent the rest of the night there. It seemed to me he stayed at our house all the time for several days and I am sure he did everything he knew to do, but "my baby" never regained consciousness. He had been stricken on his third birthday, August 12. Sometime before day on the morning of the 15th Mama called to tell me he was gone. I had never come in contact with death before and when I realized what it meant it nearly killed me. I was so depressed for sometime, Mama told me in after years, that she was terribly worried about me for a long time. He was scarcely cold in his grave when my brother Glenn developed typhoid fever. For weeks he lingered between life and death. At Christmas of that fateful year he was just beginning to walk.

Sometime during the summer of that year of 1892 Mama decided to go to church with Papa, which she rarely ever had an opportunity to do. She seldom left home for anything. She nursed the baby and put him to bed. Ordinarily he would have slept for hours, but this night he woke up before they returned. Everyone was asleep in the house; his crying awakened me. Grandma, being deaf, slept on. I was rocking him when I heard someone trying to open the blinds, which were hooked on the inside. The windows were raised to let in the air. This frightened me; the baby was crying, and so was I, when Papa and Mama came home. The next morning Papa found footprints under the window. Mama never left us again at night. Just a few days after this she was milking the cow in the stable when she heard an unusual sound and looked up. A black man was working his way through a narrow space between the stable and the fence back of it. She called to me to bring her pistol. By the time I got there he was gone. When Papa reported this to the police they said a convict had escaped and was hiding in the woods back of our house. There was no more playing in those woods for us. We moved our playground across the road in front of our house where there was a nice spring branch in which we could wade.

In mid-morning of February 2, 1894 Mama called me and told me to take the children to the home of our next door neighbor after I had kindled a fire in the stove and filled a pot with water. When this was done she told me to wrap myself up well and go as fast as I could up to

Mrs. Bob Oliver's on West Market Street and ask her to phone Papa to get Dr. Balsley and come as quickly as he could as she was very sick.⁴⁹ The ground was covered with snow, nearly to my knees. I had passed my eleventh birthday in August before and believe it or not had no idea what it was all about. I finally got there and the message was delivered to Papa, who said for me to come on to the store and stay while he was away; that he would get the doctor and come at once. When I got home that afternoon Mama showed me a little sister, Annie Myrtle. I did not understand why one side of her face and head were almost black. I wanted to ask questions but you did not do that in those days and Mama was quite ill. The baby died in the night on February 5 and I could not understand why everyone said "it was better so, but Rosa had been saved." There were no hospitals and nurses in those days and it seems no mid-wife in the community. If I remember correctly she weighed twelve pounds and was a month late in arriving.

In the summer of 1894 we suffered another loss. Papa left home one Sunday afternoon with our old dog Benson to visit a friend about three miles from home. When he missed Benson he thought he had returned home, but on the way back home he found him lying on the side of the road dead. Someone had shot him. The man said he thought he was a "mad dog." The poor thing was twelve years old; it was a hot summer day and of course his tongue was out and saliva dripping from it. Of course we were all terribly upset and had a good cry. Then we had a beautiful red setter. He knew when it was time for Papa to come home and went to meet him before he came in sight and brought the newspaper home. He developed the "black tongue" and could neither eat nor drink his water. Papa tried to feed him, but no good. He died. There were no veterinarians then. We wanted no more dogs.

At this time my father was making the magnificent salary of \$50 per month. Only he and Mr. Bruce Hurdle, bookkeeper for Robert Harris & Bro., tobacco manufacturers, were making such salaries. Both had finished a course with Bryant & Strattan, Papa through correspondence.⁵⁰ I do not know about Mr. Hurdle. How he managed, with a wife and six children and a mother and father part of the time; to feed and clothe has always been one of mystery. I have no idea whether Grandpa contributed to Grandma or not. I am sure but for the good management of my mother he could never have done it. With the orchard and its fruits; her bountiful garden; butter and milk from her cow, and the meat from two large hogs each fall, there was very little food to buy. She made all of our clothes, even Papa's shirts

and the materials cost next to nothing as we know costs today. Beautiful summer linen cost four or five cents per yard and the lace she used to trim them with cost two and three cents per yard. He knew she was a good manager and so gave her his check each month and thought no more about it. Charlie Penn and my father were very good friends.⁵¹ When Mr. Charlie wanted a sign painted for the whole length of a car of "Red Jay" tobacco he was shipping, probably as far as California, he would call on Papa who even painted two artistic Red Jays on the sign; one on each end of canvas. The length of canvas needed for each side of the railroad car was attached to the wall of the old Star Warehouse, then used as the shipping room for the F. R. Penn Tobacco Company's factory. Here he would work on the sign at night until it was completed. This was done as a favor to his friend. One day a few years before Mr. Charlie's death, when he and I were reminiscing, among other things he made this remark: "Fletcher's children were the healthiest, best looking, and best dressed children I ever knew." When I told him I suspected the reason we were so healthy was due to the good corn pones and the cabbage and turnip salad "potlicker," which we had each night for our dinner in the summer. He knew what I was talking about and got a big laugh out of it. When we had finished this meal before the sun had set we tumbled down most anywhere and went to sleep. Later Mama would sort us out and get us in our beds. That corn pone and ash cakes make me hungry even to remember them, but it is impossible to make it with the electrically ground stuff they call corn meal today. Our meal was water-ground in a mill in the country, that is the power was generated by the creek water passing over the enormous wooden wheel which ground the corn.

I started to school in the second grade in the fall of 1891 with Miss Eleanor Gladstone as my teacher.⁵² This graded school had been authorized by the legislature in the Spring of 1887. By the first of October of that year the school, built far out west on Lindsey Street was ready for use.⁵³ Two of my classmates at Miss Att Wray's private school of several years before were again with me.⁵⁴ They were Annie Womack and Mary Pierce. I really worked in school for I wanted to make the honor roll each month, as the names on this roll were written on the blackboard in the room and remained until the next month, when the new names were marked up. My chief competitors for first place were Katie Rominger, daughter of Dr. C. A. Rominger, dentist, who later joined the Zion City group near Chicago, and Bessie Staples, daughter of John G. Staples.⁵⁵ Each of us fought for first place. I never made first, but was always one of two in second place. Some-

times Katie was first; sometimes Bessie. I think this stopped with the fourth grade. I remember little about my third grade, except that Miss Emmett Harris, the daughter of Elder J. M. Harris was my teacher.⁵⁶



The West End Public School in Reidsville which Bettie Sue Gardner attended. The school located on Lindsey Street was in use until the new Franklin Street School was built in 1901. The present Franklin Street School was build in 1935. From The Reidsville Review, December 25, 1896.

The fourth grade was my most memorable year. Miss Lillian Watson was my teacher and all of us were wild about her. The water we drank was kept in a row of buckets on a shelf on the outside of the building, each bucket had a long handled tin dipper. You would drink and then place the dipper back in the bucket for the next person. One day at noon I ran up from playing, where she was forming our grade in line to march in. I was hot and wanted a drink. I said: "Miss Lillian can I get a drink of water?" She smiled and said: "You may try." I never forgot that correction. Our Superintendent at this time was J. T. Alderman and we all loved him as we did Miss Lillian, but proba-

bly not as much as he loved her. He spent a great deal of his time in our room. Back of the fourth grade room was a small room, in which Miss Dixie Leach had her "election" class each morning.⁵⁷ Mr. Alderman would take us, one at a time, into this room when not in use by Miss Dixie, and have us repeat our multiplication tables to him. I suppose he took each one on his lap, I know he did me, and was so kind and gentle we were not afraid. If it had been anyone else I would probably have been so scared I could not say them, although I knew them perfectly.

Our first lesson after lunch was geography. At this period Miss Lillian taught trigonometry to some high school pupils, just three who were ready for it: Cora Mae Gwynn, Annie Woltz and Fred Ford. During the winter she took them into the little room used by Miss Dixie each morning and Mr. Alderman taught our geography lesson in our room. In the fall and spring, when the weather permitted he would take us into Lindsey's grove near the school, where there was a large spring and teach us. Mr. Alderman would trace the water when it was taken as moisture into the atmosphere: told how the clouds and rain were formed; how the rain fell; soaked into the earth and finally got back to the spring. He treated every subject in the same narrative manner. When time was up he would carry us back to Miss Lillian. No other grade was so favored, but if there was ever any criticism I never heard it. They were married sometime during that year's vacation. He had been elected Superintendent of the schools in Henderson, North Carolina and remained there for over twenty years until death removed him. He was mourned by the whole community when he died.

When Mr. Alderman left us Mr. E. S. Sheppe was elected Superintendent of our schools.⁵⁸ He brought his bride to Reidsville and I saw them when they came into the Main Street M. E. Church on their first Sunday. She wore a floor length empire gown in the latest style. He was a dapper little man; always carried a small cane which he would twirl most of the time. We and especially the boys, wondered what he might do with it. He was twenty years ahead of his time in the educational field. We had always had the Bible read in the chapel each morning and sang some songs. Mr. Sheppe had large cards printed with such things as the 23rd Psalm, the Beatitudes, quotations from Proverbs etc. patriotic and sacred songs. When these were learned thoroughly by repetition each morning that card was placed in our desk and we were given another, etc. etc. Perhaps one morning he would give us a verse of some poem. This we would repeat each morning until anyone called upon could repeat it, then

he would give us another verse of the same poem or a different one. I think I remember them all.

As: What is so rare as a day in June?
 Then, if ever, come perfect days;
 Then heaven tries earth if it be in tune,
 And over it softly her warm ear lays;
 Whether we look, or whether we listen,
 We hear life murmur, or see it glisten;
 Every clod feels a stir of might,
 An instinct within it that reaches and towers,
 And, groping blindly above it for light,
 Climbs to a soul in grass and flower. . .⁵⁹

Quotations as this:

“Duty is the sublimest word in the English language.”

Robert E. Lee

“Labor to keep alive in thy bosom that little spark of
Celestial fire called conscience.”

Sometimes he would give a quotation from some of Shakespeare's works: the Merchant of Venice, Brutus and Ceasar. We were supposed to keep them in an exercise book and frequently he would check them. He was indeed many years ahead of his time.

I was interested in my school work and so was Robert Greenlow Lindsay Sloan.⁶⁰ We both had desk mates who were disturbing. There was only one desk, the last in a row in the back of the room. One day I moved back to this seat. The teacher, Miss Genie Nunnally, later Mrs. William Lindsey, said nothing. In a short while Rob joined me. The arrangement lasted through the fifth and sixth grades as I remember. We both did good work. He later married Margaret Womack of Reidsville. We were about thirteen years old, at least I was, but always felt Rob was older.

Miss Hunter Irvin was my teacher in the sixth grade and when we met on the first day of school in the seventh grade she told me she had been promoted also.⁶¹ Later one day when I asked her some question she told me she had to study as much as I did to keep ahead of us. She was a wonderful teacher and was much loved.

The next year I went upstairs from our basement seventh grade room to the eighth grade in the main auditorium where classes for the eighth and ninth grades were conducted. Professor W. C. Allen was our teacher. I still think he was a poor teacher. He could do no better teaching Latin than I could learning it. Mama became ill in

the beginning of my spring work in the ninth grade and I had to stop school, therefore did not finish the ninth grade. The next year they added the tenth grade.

In the early 1890's, just what year I do not remember, Papa got a bonus, I think with *The Review of Reviews*, a whole set of Charles Dickens books, in paper back. They were about 8½ by 11 inches; three columns to the page, and in miserable fine print, but I read every one of them. In after years I read many of those books in better print, but certainly not with as much pleasure as experienced when I read them the first time. I must admit that my earlier reading included Lena Rivers and some Louisa Alcott books.

In the Fall of 1900 I entered the old Normal and Industrial College at Greensboro in the freshman class after passing the entrance examination. That year Dr. J. Y. Joyner was my English teacher.⁶² He reminded me of Mr. Sheppe. We were supposed to close our eyes and visualize many things he read to us. He was good. When I entered the college I had hopes of finishing as a teacher of history, but thought it best to take the business course in four years, as was permitted. At Christmas time when I returned home I found Mama was not doing too well, although she insisted upon my returning. When I got back to school the more I thought about it the more I thought the wise thing to do would be to drop everything but my English under Dr. Joyner and math under Miss Laura Coit, and concentrate on shorthand and typing, which I did regretfully. I finished with a certificate of 110 per minute in shorthand under Professor E. J. Forney.

(Governor) Charles B. Aycock came to Reidsville in the summer of 1902, when he was making his fight for the schools, and made a speech at a big barbecue rally on the old Franklin Street School grounds.⁶³ John Oliver of the *Review* asked me to take the address. I promised to try. My table was at the foot of the platform with John and other reporters. He seemed to fly away with his speech. I asked him after it was finished if he always talked that fast. He said: "I saw you were taking what I said and as I am making the same talk over the state I did not want you to get it." I told him the circulation of the *Review* would not hurt him elsewhere. He laughed and proceeded to "chaw on his wad of tobacco."

[End of Manuscript]

NOTES

¹Bettie Sue's father was Fletcher Bascom Jones who was born in Rockingham County on January 7, 1856, the son of Richard Thomas Perryman Jones and Anne McCoy Jones.

²Dr. Joshua Smith was born February 26, 1844, the youngest child of Samuel and Ann Eliza Scales Smith. Dr. Joshua began to practice in Stoneville by 1872. He died December 26, 1907. His home still stands in Stoneville. See the June 1989 issue of *The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy*.

³Miss Fannie Scales and Mrs. Jessie Scales Smith were daughters of Dr. Richard H. and Sophia R. Penn Scales of the Spring Garden area of Rockingham County. Miss Fannie died in Reidsville on August 14, 1925, at age 81.

⁴On December 1, 1869, Capt. James M. Andrews married Sophia R. Scales, daughter of Dr. Richard and Sophia Penn Scales. The Andrews' daughter Evelyn married Francis B. Kemp, Sr. on November 22, 1898. Capt. Andrews moved to Reidsville about 1875. His two grandchildren, Francis B. Kemp II (1902-1950) and Evelyn S. Kemp Irvin lived in Reidsville.

⁵There were two James Thomases living in Mayo Township at this time who were father and son. This one is probably the older James Thomas (1789-1890 who was a son of Michael and Barbara Thomas.

⁶Bettie Sue is mistaken here as the Thomases lived on the north side of the river. It would not have been necessary to ford the river to go to Stoneville.

⁷Elizabeth ("Aunt Betsy") Kelly (1819-1890) lived in the Shiloh community between Wentworth and Stoneville near Wesley Chapel Methodist Church and was an active leader in that church. She was well known as a "shouting Methodist."

⁸Wesley Chapel Methodist Episcopal Church, South was organized in 1825 and was the first Methodist congregation to be organized in Rockingham County on the north side of the Dan River. The church disbanded by the 1890s. The site of the church and cemetery are located on the Godsey Farm Road (S.R. 2133).

⁹Mulberry Island Methodist Episcopal Church, South was organized in 1899 as a successor to Wesley Chapel Church. The cornerstone for the church was laid in the spring of 1901 and the sanctuary was located on Belton Road near the Thomas Settle plantation in the Shiloh community. The vacant church building is still standing. In an effort to strengthen the congregation the church was moved to the Stoneville-Wentworth Road in 1919 and the congregation was named "Centenary."

¹⁰Albert D. Ray of the Settles Bridge area was born January 25, 1845, the son of Pleasant J. and Mary D. Williams Wray. He was a merchant at Waddell's Post Office during the 1870s and 1880s. A Confederate soldier, he married Sallie Moore (1854-1918) on August 19, 1875. They had three children: Frank Wray, Mary Lily Wray Craddock and William P. Wray (died 1969) who lived at his father's homeplace. A. D. Ray died March 7, 1933.

¹¹Harvey Moore was born on June 15, 1801, the son of Thomas and Auvasti Moore (1775-1844). Harvey owned a 350 acre farm and gristmill on Wolf Island Creek, west of Salem Methodist Church. He was married twice: first to Mary Whitsett in 1834 or 1835; second to Mary McCollum (c. 1820-1903) in March 1837. Children by the second marriage were: David M., Rainey, Sallie M. Wray, Lou M. Gilliam. Two sons John and Jim died in the Civil War. Harvey died in the 1880s.

¹²Abner Meador was born March 21, 1835, the son of Wilson and Martha S. Wat-

kins Meador. He married Susan King (1843-1917) on December 24, 1857. She was the daughter of William M. and Catherine Y. Holman King. The Meadors are buried in the family cemetery on Wentworth Street in Reidsville.

¹³Bettie Sue was maybe mistaken about the first name of the Shreve who dug the well. He was probably a son or grandson of Elder Robert Shreve who lived between Salem Church and Wolf Island Creek.

¹⁴Minnie Lee Jones (b. 1884) was the second born child of Fletcher B. and Rosa Clark Jones. She married Fred Beziot who died in World War I.

¹⁵About 9:45 pm on August 31, 1886, and earthquake struck the eastern seaboard of the United States centering on Charleston, South Carolina, where many lives were lost. The effects of the quake were distinctively felt in Rockingham County.

¹⁶William Glenn Jones (1836-1945) was the third child of Mr. & Mrs. Fletcher Jones. He married Myrtle Wooten and after her death he married Clyde Munden.

¹⁷Laura Powell (1878-1972) was the daughter of Mr. & Mrs. Robert S. Powell of Mecklenburg County, Virginia, who moved to Reidsville in 1880. In 1918 Laura Powell opened her own insurance company in Reidsville, becoming one of the city's business leaders.

¹⁸Mary (or Mollie) and Delilah were daughters of A. J. Hudson (1820-1898) and Mary A. V. Shreve Hudson (1829-1908). Mary Hudson (1857-1932) married Martin J. Durham in November or December 1886. Delilah Hudson (1869-1913) married R. J. C. Stone on October 15, 1888. Members of the Hudson and Durham families are buried at Wolf Island Primitive Baptist Church Cemetery near Reidsville. Mrs. Will Duke was Jennie F. Nance (1873-1947). She was a daughter of John T. Nance (1820-1881) and Emily Martin Nance (1828-1892). Jennie Duke's brother Jim Nance married Will Duke's sister; thus their children were double first cousins.

¹⁹Mary Mathews (Mamie) Jones was born in 1887 and was the fourth child of Mr. & Mrs. Fletcher Jones. She married C. R. Powell.

²⁰George W. Johnson was born March 13, 1834, the son of Woodson Johnson (ca. 1781-ca. 1862) who married Charlotte Hamrick during October 1814 in Pittsylvania County, Virginia. The Johnsons settled two miles west of Reidsville in 1849. In March 1857 George W. Johnson married Elizabeth Lindsey (1842-1910), the daughter of John Lindsey (1795-1851) and Talitha Rawley Lindsey (1805-1887). George died August 3, 1913, and was buried beside his wife at Greenview Cemetery in Reidsville.

²¹Salem Methodist Episcopal Church was organized in 1799 on the present-day Penn Farm-Old Wentworth Road, two miles west of Reidsville. The congregation replaced the frame 1833 sanctuary in 1892 with the present sanctuary, located near Chinqua Penn Plantation. A log schoolhouse existed at Salem as early as the 1840s. See Frances R. Brown, "History of Salem United Methodist Church 1799-1986," *Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy*, December 1986.

²²Richard Allen "Dick" Stokes (1862-1906) was the son of William Allen Stokes who married Elizabeth S. Johnston on December 18, 1856. "Dick Stokes married on October 24, 1888, Zena Miller (1869-1932), the daughter of G. A. and Mattie Miller. In September 1897 "Dick" purchased the 365 acre John H. Nunnally farm two miles northeast of Ruffin. His widow spent her last years in Ruffin. The couple had no children, "Dick" is not to be confused with his nephew "Dick" Stokes who married Frances Rawley of Reidsville. Andrew Lee Hannah (1864-1937) married Martha Gibson (1878-1958) of Ruffin. Hannah was a noted fox hunter of the Ruffin area. He purchased a 70 acre farm near Ruffin in 1905.

²³"Little" Rawley Johnson was the son of Rawley Green Johnson, Sr. (1817-1900)

by his second wife Margaret Irvin. They married on November 17, 1868. Rawley, Sr. was a son of Woodson Johnson and brother of George W. Johnson. "Little" Rawley's mother was the daughter of George and Margaret Irvin and sister of Col. James and Capt. John W. Irvin. "Little" Rawley died young of Typhoid Fever.

²⁴"Aunt Pattie" Powell was obviously a close relative of Laura Powell. The Powells lived at the old Thomas Roach place.

²⁵Rev. W. P. Ware was a successful merchant in Reidsville, operating a general store on Southwest Market Street. He served as a local pastor in the Methodist Episcopal Church, South and was the founder of Ware's Chapel Church near Reidsville Cotton Mills in 1892. Following the dropping of charges of "dissention" against Ware by the Methodist Church he left the denomination in 1905 and united with the Pilgrim Holiness movement which later became the Wesleyan Methodist Church.

²⁶Henry Augusta Clark (1859-1930) was a native of Pittsylvania County, Virginia, whose sister Rosa married Fletcher Jones and was the mother of Bettie Sue Gardner. H. A. Clark married Ella Jones, a sister of Fletcher Jones, in 1883. Clark served as a Republican Sheriff of Rockingham County from 1908-1910.

²⁷William J. Clark (1862-1922) was a brother of H. A. Clark and Rosa C. Jones. He married Lula Bennett and resided in Reidsville where they reared nine children, the youngest of whom was the late Phoebe C. Wagoner of Reidsville.

²⁸Probably the Tyree Glenn who served as postmaster in Greensboro, North Carolina, from 1898-1906.

²⁹Marion Butler (1863-1938) was a noted agrarian leader in North Carolina and served as U.S. Senator from North Carolina (Populist) from 1895-1901.

³⁰William Littleton Gardner was born in Virginia April 16, 1848, the son of Nathaniel W. and Martha H. Cobb Gardner. He married Mary C. Blair (1843-1910) in Caswell County on June 8, 1875. The couple moved from Pittsylvania County, Virginia, to the Oregon Hill section of Rockingham County about 1881. The family later moved to Reidsville where W. L. Gardner died February 24, 1928. He was an uncle of Bettie Sue's husband.

³¹Joseph Holderby (1803-1875) was a native of Brunswick County, Virginia, who moved to Rockingham County settling first in Wentworth and then in Reidsville, promoting development in both towns. His daughter Mary Louisa married James Henry Bennett and from which union was born Lula Bennett (1865-1963). Lula Bennett married William J. Clark and they are buried in the Bennett family cemetery on the north side of Reidsville. Holderby moved to Reidsville about 1855.

³²Willialm Pinnix was born near Pelham, Caswell County, on February 5, 1861, the son of A. K. Pinnix. He married Sallie A. Burton (1861-1902) of Rockingham County on December 6, 1883. She was the daughter of James Franklin Burton (1830-1891) and Eliza F. Courts Burton (1841-1916) and granddaughter of "Uncle Billie" Burton. Will Pinnix died in Danville, Virginia, on June 20, 1938, and was buried in the Courts-Burton Cemetery near Stacey.

³³Dolly Ellington (1879-1948) was the daughter of James and Melissa Carter Ellington and married Zeb Price on March 25, 1896.

³⁴Richard Wray (1825-1907) was the railroad depot agent in Reidsville for a number of years. He married Lucy Burton in 1859. His later home on Reidsville's Main Street is now the home of Mr. & Mrs. William E. Felts.

³⁵In the early 1900s Miss Annie Womack served as bookkeeper at Price and (H.A.) Clark's Department Store in Reidsville.

³⁶Fred DeGrotte owned and operated the Reidsville Coca-Cola franchise for many

years succeeded by his son-in-law, John Oscar Busick II, who continues to operate the business today. DeGrotte was the son of Edd and Frances Ellington DeGrotte. He died in 1952 at age 69.

³⁷ Calvin Washington Mobley (1838-1918) was a resident of the Berry community, northeast of Wentworth. A leader in the Bethlehem Methodist Church, he served in the Confederate Army and was a Mason. He was twice married, and the ruins of his home are located on Ashley Road near Roselawn Cemetery.

³⁸ Numa Fletcher Jones was born August 12, 1889 and died August 15, 1892.

³⁹ John Will Mobley was a son of Calvin Washington and Mary Irvin Mobley. John Will and wife, Clay Mobley, left the Berry area and later lived in Charlotte, North Carolina, where he had a successful career.

⁴⁰ William Meador was a son of Abner and Susan King Meador. He married Wilma L. Harrison on November 15, 1892. She was a daughter of William M. and Mary Harrison.

⁴¹ The Norfolk & Western Railroad which runs through Stoneville, Mayodan and Madison was chartered as the Roanoke & Southern in 1887 to connect Roanoke, Virginia, and Winston (Salem), North Carolina. Completed in 1891 the line was sold to the Norfolk & Western Railroad in 1892. It is doubtful that livestock was ever shipped down the river by bateaux.

⁴² It appears that for a long period Madison had the nickname "Hogtown". The actual Hogtown was at the Leaksville Boat Landing on Dan River in present day Eden.

⁴³ R. P. Jones (1820-1900), a private school teacher, and his wife Annie McCoy Jones (1828-1906) lived in the Folk Hill area near Wentworth and were active in the Wentworth Methodist Church.

⁴⁴ John Early Field (1856-1903) was a son of Rev. Daniel E. Field (1831-1916) and his first wife, Jane Lane Field. He was a dry goods merchant in Leaksville according to *Branson's Business Directory for 1897*.

⁴⁵ The precise location of the state's first public school which was in Rockingham County remains unknown to this day. Tradition places the school in the Williamsburg community but no record has been located to prove this claim.

⁴⁶ Jennie Lee Jones (1870-1946) was a daughter of R. P. Jones who married Felix Hubbard of Reidsville. They reared two children, Ruth and Helen.

⁴⁷ Joseph Hunter Jones (1891-1968) became a druggist in Haw River, North Carolina.

⁴⁸ Roseola can be any of several common rashes.

⁴⁹ Bob Oliver (1862-1931) married Ida Lee Oliver (widow of his brother Charles R. Oliver) in 1893. The Oliver family founded *The Reidsville Review* in 1888. Dr. Turner Balsley (1857-1917) lived on Main Street in Reidsville near the Main Street Methodist Church. He married Ida Motley, daughter of local tobacco manufacturer A. H. Motley.

⁵⁰ Bruce L. Hurdle was the son of James M. and Margaret F. Hurdle of Alamance County. On June 6, 1888 at age 28 he married Annie Walker of Rockingham County. The Hurdles were prominent in the Reidsville Primitive Baptist Church. Robert Harris (1847-1925) of the Robert Harris & Bro. Tobacco Company in Reidsville was married twice. First to Ella C. Lea and second to Nettie Reid, the daughter of Hugh K. Reid (1817-1897) and wife Caroline Graves Reid. Robert's brother and partner in the factory was Hassel C. Harris who died in 1911 at age 59. The Harris Tobacco Factory was closed in 1913. The Harrises were sons of John Wharton Harris.

⁵¹ Charles Ashby Penn was born at Penn's Store, Patrick County, Virginia on

November 29, 1868 the oldest of eleven children born to Frank and Annie Spencer Penn. In 1874 F.R. Penn moved his family to Reidsville and began to manufacture tobacco. Over the years the business expanded and became the nucleus of the American Tobacco Company. In 1916 Charlie Penn perfected the new cigarette "Lucky Strike" and became vice-president in charge of manufacturing for the American Tobacco Company. His wife was the former Stella Edrington of Fort Worth, Texas. He died on October 22, 1931. His brother, T. Jeff Penn (1875-1946) built Chinquapenn Plantation near Reidsville.

⁵² Eleanor Gladstone was a daughter of R. G. Gladstone, a local tinsmith in Reidsville.

⁵³ Reidsville Graded School was located on West Lindsey Street and was used until the completion of Franklin Street School in 1901. The site of the school, now a vacant lot, is located next door to the homeplace of local attorney James M. Sharp.

⁵⁴ Miss Attie Wray was the daughter of Richard Wray of Reidsville. She is listed as a Reidsville public school teacher in 1897.

⁵⁵ Dr. C. A. Rominger and his wife Nevada moved to Reidsville by 1885 where he was a practicing dentist until his removal to Zion City in 1904. Zion City was founded in 1901 by Rev. John A. Dowie who prohibited doctors, tobacco, liquor, dancing and cards. Dr. Rominger's sister married David W. Johnson, son of Rawley G. Johnson, Sr. of Rockingham County. John G. Staples was the son of Dr. W.C. and Ann Penn Staples. John was married twice; first to Lucy Watt and second to Ella Holt of Graham, North Carolina. Bessie was from the second union. The Staples were cousins to the F.R. Penn family.

⁵⁶ Elder J.M. Harris was born June 12, 1840 the son of Edwin Ruffin Harris (1812-1890) and Bethania Shelton Harris (1812-1910). He married Anne E. Robertson on November 6, 1864. He owned a block of buildings in Reidsville which burned during the "Big Fire of 1887." His wife died in March 1911 at age 68. He was a Primitive Baptist minister and served several churches in Rockingham County including Dan River and Wolf Island. His daughter, Emmette Harris, married on June 22, 1898, Elder Posey Lester, a noted Primitive Baptist minister of Floyd, Virginia.

⁵⁷ Miss Dixie Leach was an amateur artist who painted scenes in Rockingham County which apparently have been lost.

⁵⁸ Prof. E.S. Sheppe was the popular Superintendent of the Reidsville City Schools in the early 1900s.

⁵⁹ This poem is from "The Vision of Sir Launfal" by James Russell Lowell (1819-1891).

⁶⁰ The Sloans were a Guilford County family who lived for some years in Reidsville.

⁶¹ Miss Mary Hunter Irvin (1865-1944) was a daughter of Col. James Irvin (1819-1894) and Lucy V. Dalton Irvin (1833-1909). Col. Irvin was a merchant and Clerk of Court in Wentworth just prior to the Civil War. He later purchased a farm just west of Reidsville.

⁶² Dr. J. Y. Joyner (1862-1954) was Professor of English and Dean of State Normal and Industrial College. He also served as State Superintendent of Public Instruction and was a leading advocate for improvement in education.

⁶³ Charles Brantley Aycock (1859-1912) was Governor of North Carolina (1901-1905) and long remembered for his great emphasis on education on all levels in the state. His visit to Reidsville in May 1902 attracted much attention and encouraged the local movement for better education.

THE EARLY HISTORY OF REIDSVILLE

by

Bettie Sue Gardner

Editor's note: This article was Bettie Sue Gardner's first published work. While the history is traditional in nature, it contains much information not found elsewhere. The history fails to give proper credit to Joseph Holderby for founding the Town of Reidsville. In 1855 Holderby purchased the Reuben Reid farm and in 1863 he hired a surveyor to lay out the Town of Reidsville. The first lots were sold in August 1863. Mrs. Gardner apparently was unaware of this fact. The history first appeared in *The Reidsville Review* on November 9, 1923. She rewrote the article for a special issue of the *Review* which was published on December 24, 1923. The second version of the history was used for this article. Some notes have been added into the text of the history to make corrections and update some information. A special thanks to Bettie M. Pearson of Reidsville who transcribed the article and to Michael Perdue who helped with the notes. The editor has taken the liberty of omitting some portions of the article.

* * * * *

The particular Reid who came here in 1815 or 1816 was Reuben Reid, with his wife Elizabeth Settle Reid and their little son, David Settle Reid, who was probably about a year old. He had been born just east of Reidsville on what we know as the McKinney place or Settle place now owned by H. R. Scott. Mr. Reid purchased his farm from a man named (Edward) Newnam. It extended from Mrs. J. W. Peay's southern line on what is now Main Street as far north probably as Wentworth Street; west from the Irvin land certainly as far east as the railroad and probably extended some distance beyond. This is approximately its dimensions. His home was situated on what is now (in 1923) the Methodist parsonage lot on Main Street. A few years ago Mr. Hugh Hamlin bought the old Reid home and moved it to Lindsey Street and remodeled it for his own home (demolished in 1980).

When Mr. Reid bought his farm Reidsville was not even a village, just a place on the Danville to Salisbury (road...) There was in the rear of the house and a little to the south, just in the rear of where Walter Irvin and Henry Hines live, a considerable pond of water in

which there were many fish and the turtles use to catch the young ducks of Mrs. Reuben Reid. The doctor advised Reuben Reid that the water in this pond might stagnate and produce sickness and he had it drained and the neighbors came in and carried off fish by the basketfull. Of course there is no sign of this pond now. A little bit later there was at Reidsville a district muster ground where militia assembled yearly and spent two or three days marching, drilling and hearing speeches by distinguished men. David S. Reid was Colonel of the regiment. The people came in wagons and on horses. They played marbles, drank cider and "other things;" had barbecues and a good time generally. There was a race track, which extended from about the Methodist Church on Main Street straight up what is now Main Street to about the front of the residence of H. R. Scott and on this track on these muster day occasions the people were in the habit of running both horse and foot races.

In this new home of the Reid's, in 1817 was born a son, Hugh Kearns Reid. I suppose we should give him the honor of being the first child born in what is now the town of Reidsville. Reuben and Elizabeth Reid had two daughters born here also, Frances Reid, who married Samuel Adams and Rhoda Reid, who married William Scott. The latter were the mother and father of our townsman, Hugh Reid Scott.

David Settle Reid, while yet a boy, went to Wentworth to live with his uncle, Waddell Ellington, (or Robert Martin) and help him in his store. After saving a little money he came back home and he and his father, Reuben Reid, built and operated a little store on what we know as the H. C. Harris lot, on the corner of Main and Settle Streets. The post office was in their store and David S. Reid was appointed postmaster at Reidsville October 24, 1829. This was the first official recognition of the town of "Reidsville," He served as postmaster until the appointment of his father, Reuben Reid, on September 5, 1836, which position he held until his death on June 22, 1852, when Robert P. Richardson was appointed postmaster on July 9th of that year. I suppose the office was then moved from Reid's store to Wright's store or Wright's Inn, where Mr. Richardson looked after the interests of Mr. Wright in his large country store, which was situated at the "cross roads." At that time there was a road coming from the east, leaving the main road just north of J. F. Watlington's home running on west until it reached the Reidsville Iron Works road at Wright's Inn, which stood on the hill just this side of Little Troublesome Creek (more popularly called Richardson's Creek) and a part of which is still standing. After leaving Wright's Inn this

road run in a (north) westerly direction on to Wentworth, running just south of the Anderson place. You can still follow the old roadbed in places.

On April 26, 1853, Victor M. Holderby was appointed postmaster and the post office was probably in the store of Wm. Lindsey & Co.; this store being the building in which Misses Brent and Irvin afterwards opened their school for girls, probably 20 years later. Messrs. William Lindsey, Hugh K. Reid and Col. James Irvin being the members of the firm of William Lindsey & Co.

The next year 1854, on May the 27th, Marcus C. Holderby (1829-1869) was appointed postmaster.

He was followed by William Lindsey, who received appointment on December 17, 1858. Mr. Lindsey being postmaster until February 5, 1866, when Mrs. Sarah Lindsey received appointment as postmistress. Mrs. Lindsey served only a few months, as it was about this time that the United States Government required those applying for appointment to swear they had given no aid to the Confederacy. Of course Mrs. Lindsey could not do this, and on April 19, 1866, Stephen F. Terry was appointed as postmaster.

When Reuben Reid died in 1852 his farm was divided and his son, Hugh K. Reid bought all of the different shares. As a great many of us know Hugh K. Reid was the father of Mrs. Carrie Reid Thompson and Mrs. Bettie Lee Reid Overman; also the grandfather of Miss Nettie Harris. His home on Main Street is now owned by R. B. Chance.

It is interesting to know that his home was first intended as a girl's seminary, William Lindsey and Hugh K. Reid having built it for Misses Brent and Irvin, as their school for girls had outgrown the little store house. But about the time it was completed Miss Mollie Irvin decided it would be more pleasant to keep house, and so she married Bedford Crafton. Mr. Reid then bought Mr. Lindsey's interest in the house and lot, remodeled the house and about 1875 moved his family from the country to Reidsville and this was his home until his death.

Up to 1863 this place was scarcely worthy of the name "village," but this year '63 marked the most important step in the growth of what was afterwards to be our little city, for the Piedmont Air Line Railroad was built, or at least started, this place becoming the principal station between Danville and Greensboro, which position we have retained. The railroad from Danville to Greensboro being built under the supervision of the Confederate Government in order to link the North Carolina Railroad at Greensboro with the Richmond and

Danville Railroad, which then stopped at Danville. This enabled the Confederate Government to furnish more rapid transit for supplies between the Southern ports and Lee's army in Virginia. About this time Joseph Holderby bought from Hugh K. Reid a tract of land, covering what is now a considerable part of the town, expressing his belief that the place, on account of its location, high elevation, healthful surroundings and accessibility to a large back country, would some day be quite a town. (Editor's note: Joseph Holderby purchased the Reuben Reid farm from Hugh K. Reid in 1855).

In 1866 Major Mortimer Oaks, who was an official of the Piedmont Air Line Railroad, was attracted by the natural advantages of the place. He bought a lot and built a hotel just where the boiler room of the plug factory of the American Tobacco Company now stands. Being an official of the railroad he used his influence with the company and the trains were stopped here for two meals each day. The (later) home of Major Oaks still stands in the grove just across the railroad opposite the office of the Edna Cotton Mills.

Up to this period there was only one business house here. This was a general mercantile store, the original owners of which were William Lindsey, Hugh K. Reid and Col. Jim Irvin. But Col. Irvin, who was the father of our townsmen, George Lee and Eugene Irvin, did not remain in the business long. This business was conducted under the firm name of Lindsey & Reid and Martin Cox was bookkeeper and general manager. The store room occupied by this firm was constructed from material used in the old Windsor factory at Lawsonville. Hugh Reid bought this old factory, tore it down and hauled it to Reidsville and built his store. A few years before his death, R. R. Saunders pointed out on the streets of Reidsville an old mule, owned at the time by some black man in the country, and said he knew that mule was as old as he was (I think he said he was forty-nine); because in 1876 when Hugh Reid moved the old Windsor factory from Lawsonville to Reidsville, that mule, did the hauling, and he was not a colt then. This store of Lindsey & Reid stood right on the corner of West Market Street and the old market and city hall square and faced the railroad.

When they moved from the store, at what is now the intersection of Lindsey and Main Streets, into their new and more commodious store near the old city market Col. Irvin sold his interest to his partners and the new firm was known as Lindsey & Reid.

Mr. Lindsey also had a factory and blacksmith shop in addition to the store. This factory and shop were situated on the north side of what is now Settle Street between Main and Scales Streets. In this

factory Mr. Lindsey manufactured tobacco; his chief brand being "Lindsey's Level Best." Some years later he had a contention with a Winston firm about this brand, but won his case by proving that he had "first used this brand in 1858." He continued to use it until his death and his sons after him for a number of years. Joseph Lindsey says he well remembers, "as a lad, slipping across the road to this old factory for licorice, which was much sought by the young ones just after the war and in the early seventies." His father had bought the old Reid home.

In the fall of 1867 a small store was built and opened by Oaks, Smith & Co. The "knockers" who it seems have always been with us, thought this the greatest piece of folly, as one mercantile business in the place was fully able to take care of the section. But Major Oaks insisted, with much earnestness, that all that was needed to make the place a flourishing town was energy and capital.

So fully and earnestly did Major Oaks believe that the village was destined to become a town of importance that in 1870 he purchased one hundred acres of land from William Lindsey. The first thing he then did was to sell for a nominal sum, a site for a second hotel, which was built by Dr. John W. Smith, a brother of Mrs. Fannie Smith Swann, in 1871. This hotel was built on the present site of the Piedmont Hotel, in fact the present Piedmont Hotel is only the old one added to and remodeled. Major Oaks then built the house which is now the A. H. Motley home a few doors south of the Piedmont Hotel on East Market Street, which he occupied for a time. His son, Charlie Oaks, who lives just north of town, says he was born in this house, but moved into the home across from the Edna Cotton Mills before he was old enough to remember.

About this time P. Lorillard sent a Mr. Zieglar here to buy tobacco. At the same time a blind man named Harrison came. There was a little store some where in the block just northwest of and across West Market Street from the old freight station, about where the black people now have their picture show. I think Zieglar used the basement of this store and Mr. Harrison had his store on the ground floor. Miss Ida Samuels was Harrison's secretary and Alvis Montgomery, father of our townsmen Robert and Alvis Montgomery, clerked for him.

The village has been steadily growing and there were a number of children of school age, but there was no school. Mr. Lindsey, Mr. Reid, Col. Irvin and some others got together and decided to build a school house. They went about a mile north of the station, to what is now known as the R. H. Wray place, and built a brick schoolhouse

and announced that they had secured the services of a Wake Forest graduate, F. P. Hobgood, as teacher, and then commenced to drum the neighbors for pupils.

It may be of interest to know who some of the first pupils were. I asked one who attended the school if he remembered some of them and he recalled the following: H. R. Scott, Bob Lindsey, R. T. Williams, Fleming Terry, James Holderby, Oregon Watkins, Bob Johnson (brother of P. B. Johnson), Will and John Y. Stokes, sons of Young Stokes; W. B. Wray, Reuben Reid, son of Governor Reid, who then lived up on the river; S. S. Harris, Joe and Albert Rawley, Zilman Griffin, R. P. Richardson, Jr., S. C. Penn, P. D. Spencer, A. D. Schoolfield and Azariah Graves. The girls were: Misses Anna Wray, now Mrs. Will Womack; Anna Richardson (Mrs. E. M. Redd); Bettie Lee Reid (Mrs. C. H. Overman); Carrie Reid (Mrs. N. C. Thompson); Nannie Robertson (Mrs. James McAllister); Alice Robertson (Mrs. Bob Lindsey); Mollie Bennett (Mrs. Will Osborne) and Sallie Holderby (Mrs. Ruf. Smith).

Mr. Hobgood taught the boys and his wife taught the girls the first year. The next year, Mrs. Hobgood finding she would not be able to assist her husband, arrangements had to be made for the girls. Mr. Hobgood secured the services of Miss Mariah Boner (or Bonner?), of the Salem Female Academy to teach the girls. Miss Boner taught them one year. She boarded at R. H. Wray's on Main Street and Mrs. E. M. Redd says they used to stop for her on their way to school in the old rock-a-way. She also recalls that the girls had memory strings, which they wore around their necks. These memory strings were made by stringing buttons, each friend giving you a button. She also remembers that they were very anxious for Hugh Scott to give them a button, because he brought such beautiful colored ones from his father's store in the country.

Miss Boner did not return for the next term, and that fall Miss Sallie Brent and Miss Mollie Irvin opened a school for the girls in a little store house, which stood at about the intersection of Lindsey and Main Streets.

But to go back a little. Just after the war, when the question of postmaster came up, there was no one who could qualify for the position. The applicant had to swear that he had in no way aided the Confederacy and there was no one who could do this, Fleming Terry, just a boy, received the appointment on April 19, 1866, and assumed his duties as such in September, 1866. The postoffice at the time occupied the little store house mentioned above in which Misses Brent and Irvin afterwards opened their school for girls. Between

April 19, 1866, and January 6, 1876, when Richard H. Wray was appointed postmaster, there had been two other appointees: Richard H. Wray who held it for six months, from May 31, 1872 to November 29, 1872, when Dr. John W. Smith was appointed and held it until April 10, 1874. Mr. Terry was again appointed and held it until the appointment of Mr. Wray in 1876, having had the office really for about eight years of these ten.

About 1870, probably a little earlier or perhaps a little later, we do not know the exact year, a young man named White came here from the Company Shops (Burlington) or Graham and opened the first drug store in a little wooden building owned by William Lindsey, and situated on what is now West Market Street, just opposite the station and better known to us in latter years as the "rat hole." And the first physician in the village was Dr. Jeff Scales, a son of Peter Scales of near Madison. He lived for a while at Harris' Hotel downtown, the hotel built by Major Oakes, but afterwards came uptown and lived at Aunt Peggy Williams, whose house is still standing just north of the post office beyond the office of the Review Company. But at that time it stood just where the post office is now situated.

Hugh Scott remembers that when he was attending Mr. Hobgood's school, about 1870, one morning Mr. Young Stokes, Col. David Settle and others, with their pack of hounds, were chasing a fox over about where the Reidsville High School now stands on Franklin Street. They had been chasing it for some time; the fox was broken down and came up the path (now Morehead street) in front of the dogs a few yards, when the fox got in front of Mrs. Williams' cottage her little house dog ran out and caught the fox and everybody had a good laugh at the fox hunters, telling them that their fox hounds could not catch the fox until they were helped by Mrs. Williams' little house dog. Of course there were no houses in that locality then, except Mrs. Williams' cottage.

Another boarding house or what I believe was called then a club house, was conducted by Aunt Charlotte Matlock on the east side of and at the north end of Arlington Street. Some of the boys who attended Hobgood's boarded with Aunt Charlotte at the club house. Some of them boarded at R. H. Wray's, living in the house which was moved from the present site of the home of H. R. Scott (1989 home of Mrs. W. S. Hester).

And it was in this house (1989 home of Mr. & Mrs. Wm. E. Felts) in 1859 that W. B. Wray came to live when only a few months old, and as Mr. Wray has lived here continuously ever since, I do not think we can find another citizen who has lived here as many years, though

Fleming Terry certainly runs a close second.

There was no church in Reidsville up to this time. The Methodist church nearest the village was Salem Church, about three miles to the northwest and the nearest Baptist church was Hogan's Creek Church, east of the McKinney place and about three miles from the village. The Presbyterians were at Speedwell Church (southwest of town).

Mrs. Mortimer Oaks was a very enthusiastic worker and believed equally, with her husband, in the future of the community. She was very anxious for the Baptists to come to the village. Mr. Lindsey offered to give a lot for any denomination, either black or white, who would build a church here, so Mrs. Oaks went to work and they raised enough money to build the walls of the church, then their finances gave out. The walls stood one winter without a roof. The next spring Hugh K. Reid came up from his home in the country and helped get together funds and men enough to put the roof on. The church was finally completed in 1871 as near as I can ascertain. The Baptists worshipped here for probably ten years. This church was situated just one door north of the corner of Gilmer and Scales Street, on the west side of Scales. The office of F. B. Kemp and the store of Somers, White & Cummings are within the old church walls, which are still standing. After about ten years, owing to its location the number of barrooms and store rooms around it and also owing to the fact that they had their meetings on Saturday as well as Sunday, they decided the location with its surroundings was not the best, and decided to sell the church and build elsewhere. Hugh K. Reid gave them a lot on what is now the corner of Main and Piedmont Streets, providing particularly that this lot should never be used for anything but a church. This is the present home of the Baptist Church, where they are planning at an early date to construct a beautiful new main auditorium to replace the one which has been outgrown. (This plan was later rejected).

In 1871 Major Oaks and James Dalton, father of our townsman, William Reid Dalton, began the manufacture of tobacco in a small building situated on the west side of the railroad just below the old freight depot. The trouble and inconvenience of buying tobacco at the barn suggested to Major Oaks the establishment of a leaf market in Reidsville. Although he had no money, he had an abundance of energy combined with his great confidence in the future of his town. Against the advice of friends and amidst the jeers of those who could not understand how a tobacco market could be a success without a bank, buyers or manufacturers, Oaks decided in the fall of 1871 to

build a warehouse. On January 19, 1872, Major Oaks and James Allen, a brother of our Major W. S. Allen, opened the Piedmont Warehouse, just about where Gardner's Market now stands on West Market Street below the depot. This building was close to his tobacco factory. It is interesting to know that this wooden building, the first warehouse in Reidsville, is still standing, though not on its original site. It was moved to the back end of the lot in after years and is now the home of W. T. Wootton's concrete plant.

Business was so good the first year that in 1873 Oaks and Allen put up a brick building, larger and better, to meet the demands of the trade. This building stood on West Market Street about opposite the north end of the old freight depot and was known as Piedmont Warehouse and, after standing for fifty years, was burned about a year ago.

This building was really the foundation of the growth and prosperity of our town. Business men were attracted to the place and her progress was assured. People began to think with Major Oaks that the town really had a future and that the tobacco business had possibilities. In April, 1872, the Farmer's Warehouse was opened by Smith, (Major W. S.) Allen & Co. Their place of business was on the corner of what is now West Market and Gilmer Streets, and was later burned.

The town was growing so rapidly that it needed some form of municipal government. "An Act to Incorporate the Town of Reidsville, Rockingham County" was ratified on the 22nd day of December, 1873. And under that act the following officers were nominated and appointed: Mayor, M. Oaks; Town Commissioners, W. S. Allen, J. M. Harris, D. Barnes, William Lindsey and Robert T. Williams; and Constable, James Williams. James was the son of Aunt Peggy Williams and an uncle of our townsman, Turner Ingram.

Only two of the town's first officers are now living (1923) Maj. W. S. Allen and D. Barnes, the latter now a citizen of Raeford, N.C.

The corporate limits as designated were: "Making Morehead Street where it crosses the railroad the central point, extending one hundred and sixty-one poles north and the same number south, and eighty poles east and eighty poles west from said center." The corporate limits have been changed to enlarge the town twice since, I believe.

In 1874, the tobacco trade increasing, Dr. John Redd, brother of E. M. Redd, and some others, probably his brother-in-law, Francis Wootton, built a warehouse about the center of the block between Morehead and Gilmer Streets, facing West Market Street. Afterwards it was extended through to Scales.

It was also in this year of 1874 that F. R. Penn and S. C. Penn,

brothers, came from Henry County, Virginia, to Reidsville to begin the manufacture of tobacco. They first started in a small frame building on the east side of the railroad. Their venture was a success from the start and each year found them enlarging their plant and employing more people. Of course this helped the growth of the town, and as their business grew and demanded more employees so the town very naturally grew. As more people came they needed homes, and more business enterprises of every kind. The people of course demanded churches, and schools, and we grew in every way as a city, for the faster the Penn Tobacco Company grew the faster the town developed. And while other manufacturers came and went the Penns stayed and worked and added to their plant and kept growing. And really the City of Reidsville owes its continuing growth as much to the growth and prosperity of the F. R. Penn Tobacco Company as any other one source, probably more. After a few years their business having increased to such an extent they built a branch factory across the railroad on the site of the present plug department, I believe, of the American Tobacco Company. This branch factory was known as Watt, Penn & Co. J. N. Watt being associated with F. R. and S. C. Penn. After some years the factory on the east side of the railroad was used entirely for the manufacture of smoking tobacco, their most famous brand being "Gold Crumbs," and the factory on the west side used for the stemmery and plug manufacture. This factory kept growing and growing and being added to and in fact has never stopped growing and has never stopped being the chief factor in the prosperity and growth of Reidsville, and is really a monument to these men who ventured into a new community and by tireless effort and persistence laid the foundation for a business that has become mammoth. And while this plant was sold a few years ago to the American Tobacco Company, a Penn is still looking after the interests of Reidsville. C. A. Penn being a vice president of the A. T. Company.

Besides the F. R. Penn Tobacco Company and William Lindsey & Co. back in the early days there were two other manufacturing plants that kept growing and expanding: R. P. Richardson, Jr. & Co., Inc. manufacturers of the famous "Old North State" smoking tobacco. This business started on a small scale back in the days when Reidsville was just beginning to realize that "tobacco" spelled growth and prosperity for her. It has developed and branched out until it is a business that the Richardson family and those who have been connected with it for years may well be proud of. R. P. Richardson, who was no doubt proud of his business, left more than this as a heritage to his children. He was a big hearted, liberal man and not only to his home church,

the Presbyterian, but all schools and orphanages and many small churches of this denomination have known and appreciated his liberality. The outside world never knew the many, many kind things he did. Is it any wonder that he prospered?

Another tobacco plant of those days was Robt. Harris & Bro. This firm was composed of Robert Harris and his brother, H. C. Harris. This firm also started on a small scale, manufacturing and hauling their tobacco south and selling it. They kept growing and adding to their business until the death of H. C. Harris a few years ago and the failing health of Robert Harris when there was a dissolution of the business. At this time they occupied a large brick factory, just back of the home of Robert Harris.

During the seventies and eighties there were a number of tobacco manufacturing plants in Reidsville that stayed in business, some for a number of years and some for a shorter period. Among those were: H. Sampson & Co., A. H. Motley & Co., D. Barnes & Co., O. L. Bailey & Co., R. A. Ellington & Sons, R. P. Richardson, Sr.; Denny, Lyle & Co., smoking tobacco, Watt Bros., and Johnson Bros.

Perhaps we do not know, but Danville, Va. was one of the first cities of the South to install the electric lighting system on her streets. Mr. Rierson, a brother-in-law of F. R. and S. C. Penn, who was interested in the company in Danville, came to Reidsville and organized (in 1888) the first electric light company in Reidsville. A black man, Harden Davis, was the "lamplighter," that is, he went his rounds in the morning disconnecting the carbons and at night he again went the rounds connecting them. Some time later the city purchased the plant from this company.

As I have before mentioned the Presbyterians up to this time had had no church here, having attended at Speedwell, which was some distance away and rather out of the immediate community. They accepted Mr. Lindsey's gift of a lot and built their church on the corner of what is now Main and Gilmer Streets, on the north side of Gilmer. This church was organized on the 15th day of January, 1875. Recently the business portion of the town so crowded the Presbyterian Church that the church sold the old one and have built a handsome modern church on Main Street on the lot where formerly stood the residence of W.C. Harris, and the site of the old Presbyterian Church on the corner of Main and Gilmer, is not occupied by the Belvedere Hotel.

The Methodist Episcopal people had no church in the town as yet, though they had organized their church the previous year, in 1874. They had been holding their services, through the kindness and cour-

tesy of the Baptist friends, in the Baptist Church. When the Presbyterians completed their church they made definite arrangements that the Methodist brethren should use their church until the Methodist Church could be built which was not until 1878. This church dedicated on November 24, 1878, stood on the west side of Scales Street near the center of the block between Gilmer and Settle Streets.

This was the home of the Methodist people for some years, but having outgrown their home it was necessary either to remodel their church or build a new one. Mrs. Sarah Holderby Lindsey, the mother of Mrs. E. D. Watt; T. E. Balsley and Mary Parish, gave to the church lots on Main Street, upon which they built the present church (during 1890-1893).

The Episcopal Church was organized and built in 1881 on the west side of the railroad about two blocks south of Settle Street. This was their home for a number of years. Then they bought a lot and built on Lindsey Street. After a few years they built a beautiful little brick church (about 1915), which is their present home.

The Primitive Baptist had purchased from the Methodist their first home when they completed their new church, and worshipped in this for a great many years. A few years ago they sold this lot and bought a lot on the corner of Lindsey and Irvin Streets, on the south of Lindsey and built a beautiful, (brick) modern church. (Built in 1920).

In 1878 the Eagle Warehouse was built on the site of the Farmer's Warehouse, which had been burned on the corner of Gilmer and West Market streets. The Star Warehouse was built in 1882 on the present site of the plug factory of the American Tobacco Company.

The first leaf sales in 1872 were handled in a building 40 x 69 feet. As previously stated the first tobacco manufactured here was by Oaks & Dalton in 1871 in the basement of a storeroom. But the foundations of the first factory was laid by D. Barnes, a brother-in-law of William Lindsey, and Bedford A. Crafton, father of our Mrs. R. R. Ratliffe, in July, 1871. This building was 34 x 52 feet and was only a frame building with a capacity of fifty thousand pounds per year, but looked large then.

The demand for leaf increased so rapidly that the manufacturers had buyers on other markets. With such a rapid growth in the sale and manufacture of tobacco, of course the mercantile interests had to keep pace. They were, about the middle eighties, doing a thriving business in Reidsville, something like twenty-five dry goods and grocery stores, four drug stores, three hardware and one furniture store, five confectionary stores, two jewelry and three millinery establishments. There were three hotels, a number of boarding houses,

three steam sawmills, two grist mills, one shuttle block factory, two steam box factories, two lumber yards and three livery stables. A female seminary was conducted by Miss Emma Scales, a kinswoman of the Galloways and Montgomerys, and the Reidsville Male Academy was conducted by F. P. Hobgood. (Hobgood conducted the academy between 1869-1871).

In 1884 (the correct date is 1887), I believe it was, a district was laid off and steps taken to establish a graded school. This plan was successful a few years later and led to the wonderful work being done in the four schools we now have. There were two weekly papers, quite a nice opera house and "a handsome brick market and town hall." The "town hall" has not yet served its day? There were six churches, four for white people and two for the black.

Reidsville's estimated population at this time was between three thousand and thirty-five hundred. But with so many thriving businesses, and I did not mention that at one time there were twenty bar rooms here at the same time, (note: It is doubtful if there were ever over five to ten bars at one time) and so much money being handled, the Bank of Reidsville, which has been established in 1882 with Col A. J. Boyd as president and Robert M. Sloan, father of Mrs. P. D. Watt, as cashier, had its hands full.

In 1885 another bank was chartered to be known as "The Citizens Bank." This bank was organized by H. R. Scott, a young attorney, who had been practicing his profession at Wentworth for several years. He came to Reidsville to live, organized the bank, built its first home and was elected its first president, which position he held until his resignation about 1909. Martin Cox, who had been with Lindsey & Reid as manager and bookkeeper in the first store in Reidsville was made cashier of this bank.

The Bank of Reidsville and the Citizens Bank (this bank failed during the Depression), have both thrived and are still in operation, being now far more extensive than they were in former years, and besides there is now in successful operation the First National Bank.

The End

BETTIE SUE GARDNER: A SHORT SKETCH

by

Robert W. Carter, Jr.

Bettie Sue Jones Gardner, local Rockingham County historian of Reidsville, was born in Rockingham County on August 3, 1882, the daughter of Fletcher B. Jones (1856-1938) and Rosa A. Clark Jones (1857-1926). Her father was a native of Rockingham County and her mother was born in Charlotte County, Virginia. Her parental grandparents were Richard T. P. Jones (1820-1900) and Annie E. McCoy Jones (1828-1906) of Rockingham County.¹

Bettie Sue attended public school in both the county and in Reidsville and took advanced courses at Woman's College of The University of North Carolina in Greensboro.² On October 26, 1904 she was married to Lytt Irvine Gardner, a Reidsville merchant.³ Lytt was born October 24, 1872 in Pittsylvania County, Virginia, the son of Joseph Cobb Gardner (1839-1911) and Martha E. Howard Gardner (1842-1876). His mother was a member of the prominent Howard Family of Caswell County, North Carolina.⁴ About the year 1875 his father moved the family from Virginia to Reidsville where he followed the trade of butcher and fresh meat dealer.⁵

Lytt I. Gardner followed several different occupations during his lifetime. As a young man he was a policeman and at one time was a merchant. Later he operated a successful coal and wood yard on Southeast Market Street in Reidsville.⁶

For many years Lytt and Bettie Sue lived on South Main Street in Reidsville. Their home was the old Fillman house which they had purchased on February 19, 1915.⁷

Lytt Gardner developed Bright's disease and died from its complications on July 11, 1928. He was 56 years old.⁸ Despite her husband's death Bettie Sue was able to provide her children with excellent college educations. The Gardner's three children were: Dillard Scott Gardner, who became North Carolina Supreme Court Reference Librarian and died in 1964 at age 56; Rosalyn Howard Gardner, Ph. D. (1910-1975), who was the head of the Romance Language Department at Gallaudet College, Washington, D.C.; and Dr. Lytt I. Gardner, Jr., (1917-1986), a professor at the Medical School of New York State University at Syracuse.⁹

About 1903 Bettie Sue became the private secretary of Hugh Reid Scott, a prominent Reidsville attorney.¹⁰ She continued in the job for approximately twenty-five years. After her husband's death she operated the coal and wood yard for a period of time.¹¹ In 1933 a new opportunity became available for her. On August 28th of that year she was appointed Deputy Collector of the Stamp Office of the Department of Internal Revenue at Reidsville.¹² Her office was located in the old post office building at the corner of Scales and Morehead Streets.¹³ She continued in this position until 1952 when she retired.

In 1939 Bettie Sue purchased land on South Park Drive in Reidsville and had an attractive two-story brick home built.¹⁴ She was to reside here until shortly before her death.

Bettie Sue was active in politics and for nine years was vice-chairman of the Rockingham County Democratic Executive Committee. She was a member of Main Street Methodist Church and was its historian for many years. Bettie Sue served as president of the Reidsville Business and Professional Woman's Club. She was a member of both the United Daughters of The Confederacy and the William Bethell Chapter of The National Society, Daughters of The American Revolution. During the Civil War Centennial she served on both the North Carolina Confederate Centennial Commission and the Rockingham County Commission.¹⁵

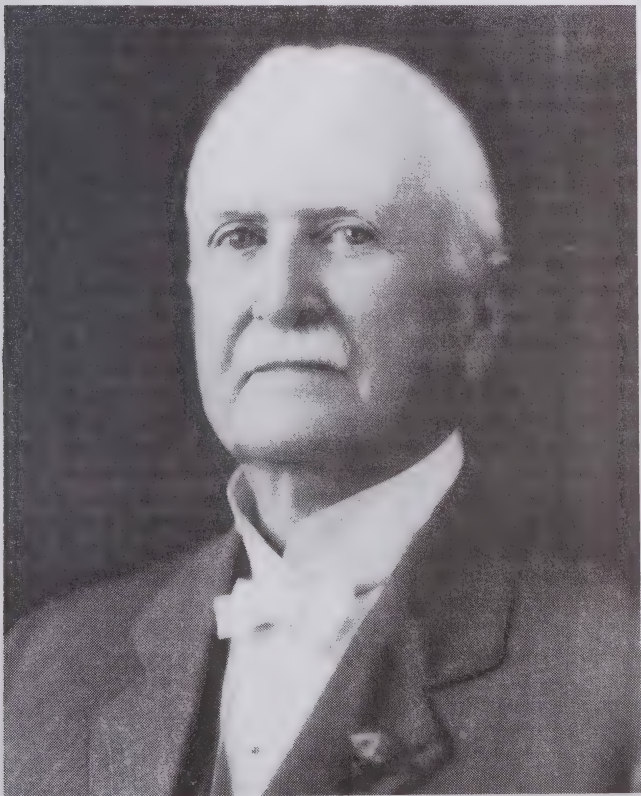
There is little doubt that Bettie Sue's interest in Rockingham County history developed because of her long time association with her employer, Hugh Reid Scott. Mr. Scott was born January 9, 1855, was a nephew of Gov. David Settle Reid and was related to several prominent families in the county. According to Bettie Sue he ...never forgot anything told him by his forefathers; and since his greatest pleasure was found in talking about these things to those who were interested, I have always felt, and still feel, that what I learned from him was as authentic as it is possible to make our traditions..."¹⁶

In one of her first published booklets entitled *Rambles Through the County of Rockingham* written in 1950, she makes the following statement in the introduction. "...The greater amount of the local information (for this booklet) came from one source. Sometimes it was given to me in direct dictation; at other times from reminiscing conversations between the donor and some old friends, from which I made notes over a period of twenty-six years. As many of them have been misplaced in their travels to boys in the University of North Carolina, to teachers, and to others inside of and outside of Rockingham County, who wanted such information, I have decided to put together

what remains in this rambling record, with thanks to my personal friend and counselor for more than forty years.

Hugh Reid Scott

A loyal friend, a lawyer of ability, and a banker and business man of sagacity and prudence."¹⁷



Hugh Reid Scott (1855-1947), prominent Reidsville citizen and long-time attorney in Rockingham County. Bettie Sue Gardner served as legal secretary for Mr. Scott for a number of years and it was Mr. Scott who fostered and encouraged Mrs. Gardner's interest in county history.

Photo courtesy of Mrs. Cecelia Scott Hester.

In addition to sharing her information with teachers and students she furnished material to newspaper writers. On a newspaper clipping of 'In the Historic Valley of The Dan', written by Cecil Jones and published in *The Greensboro Daily News* on June 2, 1935, she wrote "Most of the information given here was from articles, notes, etc. I lent him - preserved through the years. B.S. G."¹⁸

Bettie Sue's first published article was printed in *The Reidsville Review* on November 9, 1923. The article was entitled 'Facts About The Early History of Reidsville.' The work was one of the first efforts to preserve the early history of Reidsville and no doubt most of the information came from her friend, Hugh Reid Scott. A little over a month later the editor of *The Review* decided to print a special issue of the paper and asked her permission to use the article again. She rewrote part of the article and in a new introduction stated that it was "...best to make a few corrections and add too some facts, which have come to me since the first issue." The rewritten article appeared in *The Review* on December 24, 1923 and the title was changed to 'Historical Facts About The Town of Reidsville Which Is Now Fifty Years Old.' When the editors of *The Review* published their Fiftieth Anniversary Edition of the paper in 1938 they used the November 9, 1923 article and not the corrected copy of December 24, 1923.¹⁹

As Bettie Sue approached retirement age she became interested in preserving her collected information in printed form. She chose to use the Rockingham County Fine Arts Festival as her vehicle to present the material. Her first entry in the Festival "Rambles Through The County of Rockingham" won the Rockingham County Literature Cash Prize in 1950. Over the next eleven years she won numerous awards in the category of Rockingham County history, and twice won the Festival Cup for the best entry in all classifications. Her winning papers included: "Schools of The Rockingham County Administrative Unit", winner of the Literature Cup in 1951; "The Saura Indians of Rockingham County", winner of the Lillian Smith Pitcher Award as the most outstanding entry in 1953; "Historical Map of Rockingham County, North Carolina With Guide Book", winner of the cup in the history category in 1957; "Early Methodism and Three of Its Earliest Churches in Rockingham County", winner of the history cup in 1958; "Rockingham County, Here and There", the winner of the Festival Cup in 1959; "Main Street Methodist Church, Reidsville, N.C." won first place in 1960. Her festival entry in 1961 was "In Memory of The Confederate Veterans of Rockingham County." The paper was first place winner in the county history category.²⁰ After that year Bettie Sue no longer submitted her

articles to the Fine Arts Festival. Soon thereafter the festival dropped the history category.

In 1962 Bettie Sue wrote *Alexander Martin and James Hunter of Rockingham County, North Carolina*. During 1963 she completed *To The Students of Rockingham County: Do You Know This About Your Home County*. Her final work was *Educational and Cultural Developments in Rockingham County, North Carolina*, which was copyrighted in 1964.

Bettie Sue was always interested in sharing her knowledge of the county's history with school students. As there was no published history of the county at the time, several of her historical articles were printed in mimeographed form through the efforts of Allen Lewis, Superintendent of the County School System. These booklets were placed in the school and public libraries of the county to aid students and others in their research. In 1964 several of the booklets were combined into a single 37 page volume entitled *History of Rockingham County, North Carolina*. This book was the only available history of the county until Dr. Lindley S. Butler's *Our Proud Heritage* appeared in 1971.²¹

During her lifetime Bettie Sue was recognized as the leading county historian. Of course, being born in 1882, she remembered many events which occurred during the 1880s and 90s. Her love of local history and dedication to the subject are still remembered today by Allen Lewis, former Superintendent of the Rockingham County Schools, who was a boarder in her home for seventeen years. In a recent interview, Mr. Lewis stated that: "On long winter evenings we would often discuss local history and anecdotes about people she had known, until near the midnight hour. I wish I could recall more of the stories that she told."²²

By publishing her findings Bettie Sue preserved many of the traditions and portions of the county's history that would have otherwise been lost. She found through her many years of research that the unavailability of resource materials was a serious hindrance to documenting the county's history. In the nearly twenty-five years since her death many previously unknown sources have become available to researchers and have led to many new discoveries concerning the county's past. Because of her initial research and dedication, Bettie Sue deserves to be remembered as the first local historian to attempt to preserve the history of Rockingham County.

One of Bettie Sue's most lasting contributions was her leadership in forming the Rockingham County Historical Society in 1954. She stated on several occasions that the destruction of the last covered

bridge in the county was the impetus that led to the formation of the society.²³ In 1950 a new bridge was built over Dan River above the old Settles Bridge. Bettie Sue and several residents of Reidsville and Wentworth wanted to see the 1870 covered bridge preserved as a historical landmark. She, Allen Lewis and others went before the County Commissioners in an effort to save the bridge but little local support could be raised for the project.²⁴ As late as June, 1951 there seemed to be a possibility of saving the bridge. Local officials of the State Highway Department assured Bettie Sue that the structure could be saved but then suddenly an order came from Raleigh that the bridge must be demolished immediately. Bettie Sue never forgave the local officials whom she believed had broken their promise to her.²⁵

The destruction of Settles Bridge late in 1951 and early in 1952 led numerous people in the county to realize that a historical society should be in place to deal with similar emergencies which might arise. During 1954 several organizational meetings were held in the county and on September 30, 1954 the Rockingham County Historical Society was formed with Bettie Sue as its first president.²⁶ She served a two year term and was a guiding force in the society the remainder of her life.²⁷

In the fall of 1964 Bettie Sue suffered a stroke and moved to Syracuse, New York to live with her son Dr. Lytt Gardner. She died on March 13, 1965 at her son's home at age 82. The burial took place in the Gardner family plot at Greenview Cemetery in Reidsville.²⁸

Notes

¹ Jones Family information from Dr. James Elwood Carroll's, *Genealogical Notebook on Some Descendants of The Carroll and Jones Families of Rockingham County, North Carolina*. Hereinafter cited as *The Carroll and Jones Families*.

² *History of North Carolina*; (New York: Lewis Historical Publishing Company, 1956), Vol. IV, page 521. A sketch of Bettie Sue Gardner's life written in 1956. Hereinafter cited as *History of North Carolina*.

³ *The Greensboro Daily News*, March 14, 1965. Bettie Sue Gardner's obituary. The *Reidsville Review* is missing for this period.

⁴ Information furnished by Mark Littleton Gardner of Reidsville, October 31, 1989.

⁵ Federal Census; Rockingham County, 1880.

⁶ Federal Census, Rockingham County, 1900, 1910, *History of North Carolina*, Vol. IV, page 521.

⁷ Rockingham Deeds; Book 184, page 196.

⁸ Rockingham Death Records, 1928. *The Reidsville Review*; July 13, 1928.

⁹ *The Greensboro Daily News*; March 14, 1965. *Carroll and Jones Families. History of North Carolina*, Vol. IV, page 521.

¹⁰ Conversation with Mrs. William S. Hester (daughter of Hugh R. Scott) on October 25, 1989. One record indicates that she was employed by Mr. Scott before she was married.

¹¹ Conversation with Allen Lewis, December 6, 1989.

¹² *History of North Carolina*, Vol. IV, page 521.

¹³ Conversation with Allen Lewis, December 6, 1989.

¹⁴ Rockingham Deeds; Book 320, page 561.

¹⁵ *History of North Carolina*, Vol. IV, page 521. *The Greensboro Daily News*, March 14, 1965.

¹⁶ Letter from Bettie Sue Gardner to Mary Ann Martin, dated 8-6-1952 in the files of the Eden Public Library.

¹⁷ Bettie Sue Gardner, "Rambles Through The County of Rockingham."

¹⁸ Files of the Learning Resources Center, Rockingham Community College.

¹⁹ *The Reidsville Review*, November 9, 1923; December 24, 1923; Anniversary Edition, 1938.

²⁰ Information from copies of The Fine Arts Festival entries in the Eden Public Library.

²¹ Files of the Learning Resources Center, Rockingham Community College. Conversation with Allen Lewis, December 6, 1989.

²² Conversation with Allen Lewis, December 6, 1989.

²³ Conversation with the late William P. Wray, Stoneville, R.F.D., January 6, 1965.

²⁴ Conversation with Allen Lewis, December 6, 1989.

²⁵ *The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy*, Vol. VII, number 1, pages 14, 18.

²⁶ Learning Resources Center, Rockingham Community College. *The Madison Messenger*, 1954.

²⁷ Conversation with Allen Lewis, December 6, 1989.

²⁸ *The Greensboro Daily News*, March 14, 1965.

INDEX FOR 1989 June and December Issues by Donald W. Hoover

—A—

Adams, Samuel	89
Aiken, Jane R.	33
Aiken, Mary H.	34
Alderman, J.T.	79, 80
Allen, James	96
Allen, Valentine	35
Allen, W.C.	81
Allen, W.S., Maj.	96
Amos, Isham	33
Amos, Miss	8
Amos, Susan	33
Anderson, Len W.	17, 35
Anderson, Pat	17
Andrews, E.M., Capt.	59
Andrews, Evelyn	83
Andrews, James M., Capt.	83
Aycock, Charles B.	82, 87
Ayers, John	36
Ayers, Mary	36
Ayers, Pleasant	20
Ayers, Samuel P.	36

—B—

Bailey, O.L.	98
Balsley, T.E.	99
Balsley, Turner, Dr.	86
Barnes, D.	96, 98, 99
Baughn Henry	1, 41
Beard, Miss	20
Bennett, Courts	66
Bennett, James Henry	85
Bennett, Lou Holderby	66
Bennett, Lula	66, 85
Bennett, Mollie	93
Bethel, Jane	33
Benziot, Fred	84
Bingham, Easter	61
Bingham, Wash	61
Black, Cassandra	33
Black, Charlotte G.	33
Black, Elizabeth	32, 33

Black, Ellen	33
Black, Emily	33
Black, Frederick	32
Black, James Madison	33
Black, Julia A.	33
Black, Mariah Ann	33
Black, Marshall	33, 37
Black, Mary Kenna	33
Black, Mash	26
Black, Matilda	33
Black, Pleasant ... 3, 15, 32, 33, 35, 37	
Black, Pleasant Sawney	3-5, 32
Black, Thomas	33
Black, "Trader"	33
Blair, Mary C.	85
Boner, Mariah	93
Boyd, A.J., Col.	100
Brent, Miss	90
Brent, Sallie	93
Brown, Claudia Roberts	56
Brown, Frances R.	84
Burton, Billie	66, 85
Burton, Eliza F. Courts	85
Burton, Frank	67
Burton, James Franklin	85
Burton, Johnny Al	67
Burton, Jones W.	43, 45
Burton, Lucy	85
Burton, Mary Fannie	43
Burton, Mary Smith	55
Burton, Rev.	55
Burton, Sallie A.	85
Burton, Samuel Smith, Rev.	43
Burton Squire	43
Busick, John Oscar, II	86
Butler, Lindley S., Dr.	56, 105
Butler, Marion	66, 85

—C—

Cardwell, Elizabeth	29
Cardwell, Elizabeth Martin Dalton	37
Cardwell, Joe	34
Cardwell, Joel	34, 38
Cardwell, Joseph Henry	11, 34, 35

Cardwell, Maria Louise	37
Cardwell, Mariah	31, 38
Cardwell, Mariah Henrietta Scales	34
Cardwell, Mary	28, 37
Cardwell, Miss	30
Cardwell, Rebecca M.	38
Cardwell, Richard Henry	37
Cardwell, Richard Perrin	37
Cardwell, Richard, Judge	28
Carroll, James Elwood, Dr.	56, 106
Carter, Bob	40, 46, 48, 50
Carter, Nelie	63
Carter, Robert W., Jr.	39, 101
Carter, William B.	33
Chance, R. B.	90
Cheney, John L.	54
Clark, Gus	65
Clark, Henry Augusta	85
Clark, Rosa	85, 101
Clark, Walter	56
Clark, William J.	63, 85
Clarke, Joseph	66
Clemmons, Mary P.	38
Coit, Laura	82
Cox, J. Martin ...	25, 26, 27, 37, 91, 100
Craddock, Martha B.	55
Craddock, Mary Lily Wray	83
Crafton, Bedford A.	90, 99
Crowder, John M.	23, 37

—D—

Dalton, Charlotte G.	37
Dalton, Elizabeth	37
Dalton, Ewell Gallahue	29, 37
Dalton, James	29, 95
Dalton, James Hunter	37
Dalton, John	29, 37
Dalton, Leander Hughes	37
Dalton, Lee	29
Dalton, Matilda	33
Dalton, Nancy Kinner	36
Dalton, Nicholas	29, 37
Dalton, Pleasant Hunter, Rev.	29, 35, 37
Dalton, Robert	25, 26
Dalton, Robert J.	33
Dalton, Robert, Dr.	29, 37, 54
Dalton, Sam	29
Dalton, Samuel, II	37
Dalton, Samuel, III	37

Dalton, William Reid	95
Deems, Charles F., Rev.	14, 35
DeGrotte, Edd	86
DeGrotte, Frances Ellington	86
DeGrotte, Fred	67, 85
Delancey, Sallie Bet	63
Deschweinitz, Mr.	22
Devereux, Thomas P.	32
Dick, James F.	53
Doll, Jacob, Rev.	10, 12, 34, 35
Domo, Major	11
Dowie, John A., Rev.	87
Duke, Will, Mrs.	63, 84
Durham, Martin J.	84
Durham, Mollie	63

—E—

Edrington, Stella	87
Ellington, Dolly	67, 85
Ellington, E.P.	47
Ellington, James	85
Ellington, Melissa Carter	85
Ellington, R.A.	98
Ellington, Waddell	89

—F—

Fels, Isaac	20, 21, 36
Fels, Samuel	36
Felts, William E.	85, 94
Fewel, Sarah Jane	34
Fewell, Eleanor	36
Fewell, William	36
Field, Daniel E., Rev.	86
Field, Jane Lane	86
Field, John Early	73, 86
Fillman	101
Fitts, Rivers Ivie, Mrs.	54, 55, 58
Fontaine, Martha	35
Ford, Fred	80
Forney, E.J.	82
Foushee, Ola Maie	57
Fretwell, Carrie W.	34
Fries, Francis Henry	32

—G—

Gallaway, Charles, II	43
Gallaway, Robert Richard	43

Galloway, Sarah W. Michaux	43	Harris, Nettie	90
Galloway	100	Harris, Robert	77, 86, 98
Galloway, Robert, Dr.	13, 34	Harris, S.S.	93
Galloway, Susan	34	Harris, W.C.	98
Gardner, Bettie Sue	59, 85, 88	Harrison	92
Gardner, Bettie Sue Jones	101-106	Harrison, Mary	86
Gardner, Dillard Scott	101	Harrison, William M.	86
Gardner, Joseph Cobb	101	Harrison, Wilma L.	70, 86
Gardner, Lytt I., Dr.	101	Harte, O.L.	33
Gardner, Lytt Irvine	101	Hay, Cora Scales	38
Gardner, Mark Littleton	59, 106	Hay, Pleasant, Dr.	30, 38
Gardner, Martha E. Howard	101	Hay, R.D., Dr.	55
Gardner, Martha H. Cobb	85	Hayden, Nannie	45
Gardner, Nathaniel W.	85	Hempstead, Mr.	17
Gardner, Rosalyn Howard, Ph. D.	101	Henage, Locksley Anne	59
Gardner, William Littleton	66, 85	Henderson, Archibald	33
Gibson, Martha	84	Henderson, Effie Hamilton	33
Gilliam, Lou M.	83	Hensley, Lutie	67
Gladstone, Eleanor	78, 87	Hensley, Nora	67
Gladstone, R.G.	87	Hester, Cecelia Scott	103
Glass, Mr.	70	Hester, W.S., Mrs.	59, 94
Glenn, Robert B., Gov.	45	Hester, William S.	106
Glenn, Tyree	66, 85	Hines, Henry	88
Goin, John	71	Hobgood, F.P.	93, 94, 100
Graham, Nettie	44	Holderby, James	93
Gravely, Mattie	53	Holderby, Joseph B.	66, 85, 88, 91
Gravely, W.L.	53	Holderby, Marcus C.	90
Graves, Azariah	93	Holderby, Mary Louisa	85
Greaves, Emily	44	Holderby, Sallie	93
Griffin Zilman	93	Holderby, Victor M.	90
Gwynn, Cora	40	Holt, Ella	87
Gwynn, P.H., Rev.	53	Hood, H.	18, 35
—H—		Hoover, Donald W.	59, 107
Hagewood, William	33	Hubbard, Felix	86
Hagood, William	5, 8	Hubbard, Helen	86
Hairston, Peter	35	Hubbard, Jennie	74
Hairston, Samuel	16, 35	Hubbard, Ruth	86
Hall, James	5, 33	Hudson, A.J.	84
Hall, Sarah Ann	33	Hudson, Delilah	63, 84
Hamlin, Hugh	88	Hudson, Fannie	63
Hamrick, Charlotte	84	Hudson, Mary A.V. Shreve	84
Hannah, Andrew Lee	64, 84	Hudson, Mollie	63
Harris, Bethania Shelton	87	Hunter, Alexander, Capt.	39
Harris, Edwin Ruffin	87	Hunter, James, Col.	29, 37, 105
Harris, Emmette	79, 87	Hunter, Rachel	29, 37
Harris, Hassel C.	86, 89, 98	Hurdle, Bruce L.	77, 86
Harris, J.M.	79, 87, 96	Hurdle, James M.	86
Harris, John Wharton	86	Hurdle, Margaret F.	86

—I—

Ingram, Turner 96
 Irvin, Eugene 91
 Irvin, Evelyn S. Kemp 83
 Irvin, George 85
 Irvin, James, Col. ... 8, 33, 85, 87, 90, 91
 Irvin, John W., Capt. 85
 Irvin, Lucy V. Dalton 87
 Irvin, Margaret 85
 Irvin, Mary Hunter 81, 87
 Irvin, Miss 90
 Irvin, Mollie 90, 93
 Irvin, Walter 88
 "Isaac" ... 1-6, 8-11, 13-23, 25-31, 42, 44
 Ivie, Fitts 52
 Ivie, George Lawson 52
 Ivie, George M., Dr. 52
 Ivie, Lawson 53
 Ivie, Rivers 52, 53
 Ivie, Sallie Scales 52
 Ivie, William S. 52
 Ivy, Mr. 13
 Ivy, Stinson, Rev. 12, 34

—J—

Jackson, Andrew, Gen. 32
 Johns, 49
 Johns, A.B., Sr., Dr. 45
 Johns, Sarah 45
 Johnson, Bob 93
 Johnson, Cora 31
 Johnson, David M. 87
 Johnson, Eugene 67
 Johnson, George W. 63, 84, 85
 Johnson, P.B. 93
 Johnson, Rawley 64, 84
 Johnson, Rawley Green, Sr. ... 84, 85, 87
 Johnson, Woodson 84, 85
 Johnston, Elizabeth S. 84
 Jones, Annie McCoy 83, 86
 Jones, Cecil 104
 Jones, Dick 73
 Jones, Elizabeth 71
 Jones, Ella 85
 Jones, Fletcher Bascom ... 83, 84, 85,
 101
 Jones, Glenn 63, 76
 Jones, Jennie Lee 86

Jones, Joseph Hunter 86
 Jones, Mamie 63
 Jones, Mary Matthews 63, 84
 Jones, Minnie Lee 61-63, 84
 Jones, Nathaniel 64
 Jones, Numa Fletcher 67, 86
 Jones, Numa 75
 Jones, Richard Perryman 71, 86
 Jones, Richard Thomas Perryman ...
 83, 101
 Jones, Rosa A. Clark 84, 101
 Jones, Vernie 64
 Jones, W.C. 30
 Jones, William Glenn 84
 Jones, Zylphia 64
 Jordan, W.T., Jr. 56
 Joyce, Caroline Matilda ... 32, 41, 54
 Joyner, J.Y., Dr. 82, 87

—K—

Kelley, Betsy 60
 Kelly, Elizabeth T. 60, 83
 Kemp, F.B. 95
 Kemp, Francis B., II 83
 Kemp, Francis B., Sr. 59, 83
 Kemp, J.F., Sr. 56
 King, Catherine Y. Holman 84
 King, Susan 84
 King, William M. 84

—L—

Lawson, Family 49
 Lawson, Ann Johns 43, 45
 Lawson, Francis I. 43, 45
 Lawson, Mary J. 45
 Lawson, Sarah E. 43
 Lea, Ella C. 86
 Leach, Dixie 80, 87
 Lee, George 91
 Lester, Posey, Elder 87
 Lewis, Allen 105, 106
 Lewis, Guy V. 57, 58
 Lewis, J. 34
 Lindsay, Joseph 92
 Lindsay, Reubin 41
 Lindsay, William 5
 Lindsey, Bob 93
 Lindsey, Bob, Mrs. 93

Lindsey, Elizabeth	84
Lindsey, John	84
Lindsey, Sarah Holderby	90, 99
Lindsey, Talitha Rawley	84
Lindsey, William ...	90-92, 94, 96, 97, 99
Lindsey, William R.D.	33
Lindsey, William, Mrs.	81
Long, Jim	8, 9
Lowe, Avila Lindsay	54

—M—

Malletta, Jim	63
Martin, Alexander	105
Martin, Harriet M.	42
Martin, Hugh	36
Martin, James, Col.	39
Martin, John Julius	36, 37
Martin, John Mrs.	20
Martin, Mary Ann	106
Martin, Nancy K. Dalton	36, 37
Martin, Robert	41, 89
Matlock, Aunt Charlotte	94
Matthews, Dr.	76
Maxwell, Emmett	67
Maxwell, Rawley	67
May, Adeline H.	38
McAllister, James, Mrs.	93
McCollum, Mary	83
McCoy, Annie E.	86, 101
McCoy, Elizabeth	71
McGehee, Charley	20, 36
McGehee, Martha Venable	36
McGehee, Micajah	36
McGehee, Mollie Beard	36
McMichael, C.O.	32
Meador, Abner	83, 86
Meador, Abner, Mrs.	75
Meador, Martha S. Watkins	83
Meador, Susan King	62, 86
Meador, Susie	69
Meador, William	70, 86
Meador, Wilson	83
Mebane, Annie Cummings	34
Mebane, David	34
Mebane, W.N.	32
Mebane, William N., Rev. ...	11, 13, 34, 35
Miller, G.A.	84
Miller, Mattie	84
Miller, Polk	65

Miller, Zena	65, 84
Mitchell	22
Mitchell, J.G.H.	36
Mitchell, Joyce	1
Mobley, Calvin Washington	86
Mobley, Clay	86
Mobley, John Will	67, 68, 86
Mobley, Mary Irvin	86
Mobley, Olivia Smith	55
Mobley, R.R.	44
Mobley, Wash	67
Moir, R.L., Capt.	44
Montgomery	100
Montgomery, Alvis	92
Montgomery, Robert	92
Moore, Auvasti	83
Moore, David M.	83
Moore, Harvey	61, 83
Moore, Jim	83
Moore, John	83
Moore, Rainey	61, 62, 69, 83
Moore, Sallie	83
Moore, Thomas	83
Morehead, J.M.	2, 3
Motley, A.H.	86, 92, 98
Motley, Ida	86
Motley, Tom	70
Munden, Clyde	84

—N—

Nance, Emily Martin	84
Nance, Jennie F.	84
Nance, Jim	84
Nance, John T.	84
New, Jack	18
New, John	7
New, John M.	36
New, Mr.	19
New, Permelia	36
Newnam, Edward	88
Norcom, Annie Rush	43
Nunnally, Genie	81
Nunnally, John H.	84

—O—

Oaks, Charlie	92
Oaks, Mortimer, Major ...	91, 92, 95, 96
Oaks, Mortimer, Mrs.	95

Oliver, Bob	86
Oliver, Bob, Mrs.	77
Oliver, Charles R.	86
Oliver, Dr.	56
Oliver, Ida Lee	86
Oliver, James L.	44
Oliver, John	70, 82
Oliver, Mary E.	44
Oliver, Minerva	70
Oliver, Nettie	44
Oliver, Samuel S., Rev.	44
Oliver, W.S.	44
Oliver, William W., Dr.	44
Osborne, Peggy	49
Osborne, Will, Mrs.	93
Overman, Bettie Lee Reid	90
Overman, C.H.	93

—P—

Parish, Mary	99
Pearson, Bettie M.	88
Peatross, Phil A.	47
Peay, J.W.	88
Penn, Annie Spencer	87
Penn, Charles Ashby	78, 86, 87, 97
Penn, E.V.	6
Penn, Frank R.	78, 87, 96-98
Penn, S.C.	93, 96-98
Penn, Sophia R.	83
Penn, T. Jeff	87
Perdue, Michael	59, 88
Pickett, Nat M.	1, 32
Pierce, Mary	67, 78
Pinnix, A.K.	85
Pinnix, William	66, 85
Pitcher, Lillian Smith	104
Porter, Durval	47
Powell, C.R.	84
Powell, Laura	63, 84, 85
Powell, Pattie	64, 65
Powell, Robert S.	84
Pratt	1
Pratt, Charles Benton	32
Pratt, Thomas Ruffin	32
Price, John H.	50
Price, Zeb	67, 85

—R—

Raines, Isaac	33
Raines, James	8
Raines, William	8
Ratliffe, R.R.	99
Rawley, Albert	93
Rawley, Frances	84
Rawley, Joe	93
Ray, Albert D.	60, 61, 83
Ray, B.W.	47
Ray, Berta King	57
Reed, E.M.	93, 96
Redd, John, Dr.	96
Reid, Bettie Lee	93
Reid, Caroline Graves	86
Reid, Carrie	93
Reid, David Settle	88, 89, 93, 102
Reid, Elizabeth Settle	88, 89
Reid, Fletcher, Rev.	14, 15, 35
Reid, Frances	89
Reid, Hugh K.	86, 89, 90, 91, 95
Reid, Nettie	86
Reid, Reuben	88-90, 93
Reid, Rhoda	89
Reynolds, Charlie Albert	10, 33
Reynolds, Eleanor	36
Reynolds, James T.	21, 36
Reynolds, John Fewell	34
Reynolds, Mrs., Dr.	10
Reynolds, Thomas, Dr.	34
Richardson, Anna	93
Richardson, R.P.	89, 97, 98
Richardson, R.P., Jr.	93
Rierson	98
Roach, Thomas	85
Robertson, Alice	93
Robertson, Ann E.	87
Robertson, C.P.	52
Robertson, Nannie	93
Robertson, Thomas H.	36
Rodenbough, Charles D.	1, 7, 14, 24, 32, 42, 55, 56
Rodenbough, Jean	56
Rominger, C.A., Dr.	78, 87
Rominger, Katie	78, 79
Rominger, Nevada	87

Roseboro, Thomas, Mrs.	29
Roseborough, Thomas	19, 36, 37
Ruffin, Thomas Jr., Judge	41
Russell, Daniel	10

—S—

Sampson, H.	98
Samuels, Ida	92
Saunders, R.R.	91
Scales, A.M., Gov.	9, 10
Scales, Adeline H.	38
Scales, Alfred Moore	33
Scales, Ann Eliza	40, 42
Scales, "Bug"	10
Scales, Calvin H.	30, 38
Scales, Caroline Matilda Joyce	34, 35, 41
Scales, Charlotte Dalton	29, 33
Scales, Cora	30, 38
Scales, Cornelia	6, 30, 33, 38
Scales, Elizabeth	43
Scales, Emma	42, 100
Scales, Fannie	44, 59, 83
Scales, Jackson	15, 33, 35
Scales, James	37, 41
Scales, Jeff	94
Scales, Jessie	44
Scales, John P.	38
Scales, Joshua	49
Scales, Junius Irving	9, 33
Scales, Maj.	31
Scales, Maria	15, 35
Scales, Mary P.	38
Scales, Nancy Allen,	33
Scales, Nat Box	50
Scales, Nath.	54
Scales, Nathaniel	32, 33, 35, 41
Scales, Nathaniel, Jr.	41
Scales, Peter	94
Scales, Pleasant	33
Scales, R.M.	33
Scales, Randal Duke	1, 4, 36
Scales, Rebecca Cardwell	34, 38
Scales, Richard H., Dr.	83
Scales, Robert, Dr.	10, 33
Scales, Ruth	42
Scales Samuel	42
Scales, Sophia R. Penn	83
Scales, Susan H.	43

Scales, Walter	49
Scales, William L.	1, 6, 15, 26, 30, 32, 34, 38
Schooifield, A.D.	93
Schweinitz, Emil Adolphus	36
Schweinitz, Lewis David von	36
Schweinitz, Robert William de	36
Scott, Hugh R.	32, 88, 89, 93, 94, 100, 102-104, 106
Scott, William	89
Settle	2
Settle, David, Col.	94
Settle, Thomas	83
Sharp, James M.	87
Sheppe, E.S.	80, 87
Shook, Henrietta Hall	34
Shook, Lewis Hall, Dr. 10, 15, 21, 34, 37	
Shreve, Jim	82
Shreve, Elder Robert	84
Sloan, Robert Greenlow Lindsay ..	81
Sloan, Robert M.	100
Smith	96
Smith, Nat	42
Smith, Adam	18
Smith, Ann Eliza Scales	39, 44, 83
Smith, Annie L.	43, 45, 47, 53
Smith, Benjamin R.	44
Smith, Caroline M.	43
Smith Charles Rice	35
Smith, Drury	30, 38
Smith, Eliza	48, 49, 55
Smith, Eliza "Lizzie"	44
Smith, Elizabeth	35
Smith, Emma	43
Smith, Fannie	52
Smith, Guy A.	44
Smith, Hattie	42
Smith, Jennie	43
Smith, Jessie Scales	44, 83
Smith, John	39
Smith, John W., Dr.	55, 92, 94
Smith, Joshua R., Dr.	39-41, 44, 49, 52, 59, 83
Smith, Manie	52
Smith, Mary	43, 45, 48, 49, 51, 53
Smith, Mary Lawson	57
Smith, Mattie	52, 53
Smith, N.K.	44
Smith, N.S., Jr., Dr.	52

Smith, Nat ...	32, 43, 45-48, 50, 51, 53
Smith, Nat Scales	1, 39, 40, 41, 43, 44, 49, 52, 57, 58
Smith, Professor	47
Smith, Reuben	35
Smith, Rice	15
Smith, Ruf., Mrs.	93
Smith, Rufus H.	42, 44, 50
Smith, Sam Burton	53
Smith, Samuel	30, 35, 38-41, 44, 45, 48, 52, 54, 55, 83
Smith, Samuel, Jr.	34, 44
Smith, Thomas L. ...	40, 41, 51, 52, 53
Smith, Walter R., Dr.	42, 55
Smith, Zell	53
Sneed, William L.	33
Spencer, P.D.	93
Spencer, Samuel, Dr.	34
Staples, Ann Penn	87
Staples, Bessie	78, 79
Staples, John G.	78, 87
Staples, W.C., Dr.	87
Starling, Mary	43
Stephens, Lucy M.	49, 57
Stokes, Dick	64, 84
Stokes, Richard Allen	84
Stokes, Will	93
Stokes, William Allen	84
Stokes, Young	93, 94
Stone, Delilah	63
Stone, R.J.C.	84
Stone, Robert L.	57
Swann, Fannie Smith	92

—T—

Tatum, J.W.	55
Terry, Fleming	93-95
Terry, Stephen F.	90
Thomas, Barbara	83
Thomas, James	60, 83
Thomas, Michael	83
Thompson, Carrie Reid	90
Thompson, N.C.	93
Throckmorton, Charlie	63
Throckmorton, Mrs.	63
Tidball, Maria	28-31
Tidball, William B., Rev.	37
Turner, Harry O.	32

—V—

Vance, Robert	12, 34
Vance, Zebulon B., Gov.	34
Vaughn, Joe	21
Vaughn, Joseph M.	33, 34, 36
Vernon, Linda C.	54, 55, 59

—W—

Waddill, Beckie	67
Wagoner, Pheobe C.	85
Walker, Annie	86
Walker, Marjorie T.	55, 56, 58
Wall, James	54
Wall, Sam	14
Wall, Zell	53
Ware, W.P., Rev.	65, 85
Watkins, Benjamine	33
Watkins, John D.	36
Watkins, Nancy	1, 55, 56
Watkins, Oregon	93
Watlington, J.F.	89
Watson, Lillian	79
Watt, E.D.	99
Watt, J.N.	97
Watt, Lucy	87
Watt, P.D., Mrs.	100
Watts, Judge	2
White,	94
Whitsett, Mary	83
Williams, James	96
Williams, Mrs.	94
Williams, Peggy	94, 96
Williams, Robert T.	93, 96
Willis, Betsy	55
Willy, H.A., Rector	53
Wilson, Agnes John Peter	35
Wilson, Mrs.	23
Winston, John R., Col.	35
Woltz, Annie	80
Womack, Annie	67, 78, 85
Womack, Margaret	81
Womack, Will	93
Woodburn, Mayor	19
Wooten, Myrtle	84
Wooton, Francis	96
Wootton, W.T.	96
Wray, Anna	93

Wray, Attie	67, 78, 87
Wray, Frank	83
Wray, Mary D. Williams	83
Wray, Pleasant J.	83
Wray, Richard H.	67, 85, 87, 92, 93, 94
Wray, Sallie M.	83
Wray, W.B.	93, 94
Wray, William P.	83, 106
Wright, Mr.	89

—Z—

Ziegler, Mr.	92
-------------------	----

The Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

Officers

President	Jamie C. Smith, Stoneville
Vice-President	George A. Atkins, Eden
Recording Secretary	Mrs. Cora Ann Turner, Eden
Corresponding Secretary	Michael Perdue, Wentworth
Treasurer	Wayne Parleir, Eden

Directors

Robert W. Carter, Jr.	Reidsville
Mrs. Robbin G. Dodson	Stoneville
Don Hoover	High Point
James R. Meador	Wentworth
Mrs. Lib Meador	Wentworth
Mrs. Peggy Osborne	Eden
Mrs. Zelma Scott	Stoneville
Rich Seybert	Ruffin
Mrs. Linda C. Vernon	Stoneville
Lindley S. Butler	Wentworth
Mrs. Lillian Coleman	Reidsville
Mrs. Lucy M. Rankin	Reidsville
Charles D. Rodenbough	Madison
V. Siler Rothrock	Reidsville
Mrs. Jerri Griffin	Madison
Mrs. Barbara Joyce	Madison

Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

P. O. Box 84

Wentworth, North Carolina 27375

Forwarding and Return

Postage Guaranteed

ADDRESS CORRECTION REQUESTED

Non-Profit Organization

BULK RATE

U. S. POSTAGE

PAID

PERMIT NO. 2

WENTWORTH, N. C.

John

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy



The Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

VOLUME XV

NUMBER 1

JUNE, 1990

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy

The journal is published semiannually in June and December by the Rockingham County Historical Society, Box 84, Wentworth, N. C. 27375. Members of the society, for which the annual dues are \$8.00 for an individual and \$12.00 for a family membership, receive the journal. Single issues may be purchased for \$4.00 per number plus 50 cents mailing charge.

Editorial Policy

The publication committee is interested in receiving articles on the history and genealogical source materials of Rockingham County and the adjacent area. The historical articles must be well written and thoroughly documented. Genealogical articles should consist of previously unpublished primary source materials pertaining to Rockingham County, such as abstracts of local records and edited diaries, letters, or church records. Papers on family history should not be submitted. All copy, including footnotes, should be typed double-space. Articles and correspondence should be sent to the editor: Robert W. Carter, Jr., Route 2, Box 762, Reidsville, N. C. 27320.

Cover Illustration

This reconstructed Dan River net-impressed pottery vessel was excavated at Upper Saratown. Its surface finish and shape are typical of late prehistoric ceramics. The height of the vessel is approximately 20 inches.

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy

VOLUME XV

JUNE, 1990

NUMBER 1

CONTENTS

The Indian in North Carolina by Dr. Joffre L. Coe.....	1
<i>"Curiosities worthy a nice Observation"</i> Archaeological Investigations of Siouan Villages Sites in the Dan River Drainage by Richard A. Seybert.....	5
Chronological Chart of Projectile Point Types in Piedmont North Carolina	44

EDITOR'S NOTE

The second article in this issue of the journal describes Native American life from approximately AD 1000-1700. Indians inhabited the Piedmont and Rockingham County for many millenia prior to that time. For those unacquainted with the early prehistory of North Carolina, the initial article by Dr. Joffre L. Coe offers a very brief summary of aboriginal occupation from its beginnings. It is reprinted from *The North Carolina Historical Review*, Volume LVI, Number 2, April, 1979. Other books describing Indian life in North Carolina, and which are available in our local libraries, include:

Indians in North Carolina

by Stanley A. South

Native Carolinians; the Indians of North Carolina

by Theda Perdue

The American Indian in North Carolina

by Douglas L. Rights

The Southeastern Indians

by Charles Hudson

The Formative Cultures of the Carolina Piedmont

by Dr. Joffre L. Coe

The Catawbas - (in the *Indians of North America* series)

by James H. Merrell

The Indian in North Carolina

By JOFFRE L. COE*

Two hundred and seventy-eight years ago John Lawson left Charles Town, South Carolina, traveled into the Piedmont toward present-day Charlotte, then through what is now Salisbury, Hillsborough, and down the Neuse River to New Bern. He was delighted with the land, fascinated by the natives, and dreamed of the bounty awaiting the English colonist. Lawson was puzzled, however, by the diversity of customs among the natives, their languages, and even their physical appearances. He observed "that every dozen miles you meet with an Indian town, that is quite different from others you last parted withal" and concluded that "In short, they are an odd sort of people." Lawson tried to account for these differences by suggesting the ravages of "continual wars," but he also thought in terms of "Ancient Dwellers" who were different from the contemporary Indians. In these last thoughts he came close to the truth as we know it today.

Fifteen thousand years before Lawson's journey this land that is now North Carolina was anything but "goodly." Most of Canada was still under the ice of the last glaciation, and the climate east of the Appalachian Mountains was moist, cold, and inhospitable. Vegetation was tundra-like, and many of the animals then living, such as the American elephant, were those that had survived the late Pleistocene. Even though life at that time was difficult, there were people living here in small family groups, gathering plants, and hunting the large animals that were soon to become extinct. They had little in the way of worldly goods besides their tools and weapons. They had fires and wore skins for warmth and built primitive windbreaks for shelter. This is the period that archaeologists call *Paleo-Indian*, meaning the oldest Indian.

In time, all things change. The climate became warmer, the forest thickened, and small game was plentiful. As the food resources increased, so did the population of hunters and gatherers dependent upon them. The small family groups consolidated into bands and established regular cycles for exploiting the natural foods of the forest and waterways. This way of life is called the *Archaic*, and it existed for over 300 generations until about 2000 B.C.

During this long period of time there was slow and, at times, almost imperceptible change in the habits and cultures of these people. The bands tended to return to favored locations from year to year, and debris of everyday life became trampled underfoot. Where oysters, clams, or freshwater mussels were eaten, the shells accumulated rapidly and frequently reached the depth of several feet. These locations became their base camp or "home," and the dead were buried in

*Dr. Coe is professor of anthropology and director of the Research Laboratories of Anthropology at the University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill. His presentation was made at the morning meeting of the North Carolina Literary and Historical Association.

pits around the hearths where they had lived. Personal adornment such as carved bone hairpins and shell beads became common. Woodworking tools were made by grinding stone into sharp cutting edges. Stone axes were formed with an encircling groove to aid in the attachment of a wooden handle. The spear thrower, or atlatl, became their most efficient weapon, and many were constructed with a ground-stone weight. These weights were once called "bannerstones" but are now known to be a functional part of the atlatl.

This was a period of close identity with the land. The native bands claimed the right to exploit the resources within their own area and defended this right with force when necessary. Their home was still little more than a rock-lined hearth protected by a lean-to or windbreak. They learned much about the efficient exploitation of the food resources in their local area, however, and this formed the essential base upon which the succeeding cultures were built. This more settled life has been designated *Woodland* and is considered to have begun with the first manufacture of pottery about 2000 B.C. In North Carolina, however, these innovations came slowly. The *Archaic* way persisted in some areas until very late. The Red Carolinians were never a part of the cultures that developed the magnificent art and complex priesthood in the Ohio Valley. They did engage in trade with the Ohio Valley Indians, however, and supplied them with mica, marine shells, copper, and other minerals. By the end of this period, A.D. 1000, the Ohio Valley influence was diffusing into the mountain and piedmont areas. This is best seen in certain styles that were adopted by our local potters and pipe makers.

The final cultural influence affecting our native Indians is represented by a complex society known as *Mississippian*. This society belonged to people who first became known when they inhabited an area near St. Louis in the Mississippi Valley. By A.D. 900 they had built a large community called Cahokia, and they introduced many new ideas to the Indians of the Eastern Woodland. The most important introduction appears to have been the seed and the knowledge required for the extensive growing of maize (Indian corn). An important part of this system was the location of farmsteads in an area surrounding a religious and market center. The major feature of this center was a townhouse or temple erected upon an earthen platform facing an open plaza. The knowledge required for growing maize spread throughout most of the Eastern Woodland area, and the concept of a related religious and market center also diffused into many parts of the Southeast. In North Carolina the Cherokee were the first to develop centers with townhouses on earthen platform mounds. By the middle of the fifteenth century another group of Indians developed a similar complex in the Pee Dee Valley of south central North Carolina. This center is known today as the Town Creek Indian Mound and has been the subject of research and restoration since 1937. It is currently being maintained by the State Division of Archives and History.

This very brief outline of prehistoric cultural development in North Carolina was only intended to emphasize the diversity represented by many people through a long period of time. When the first Indians were hunting elephants in what is now North Carolina, our own ancestors were painting the pictures of similar animals in the caves of southern France.



The Town Creek Indian Mound, located near Mount Gilead in southern Montgomery County, was a ceremonial center for Indians that inhabited the area in the mid-fifteenth century.

John Lawson and other colonists soon discovered that "the Indian" was in reality many autonomous peoples who differed physically, culturally, and linguistically. Those with whom they first came in contact lived along the shores of the landlocked sounds of the tidewater region and spoke dialects of a language that is now known as Algonquian. Further inland the Tuscarora Indians lived along the Neuse River and, like the Cherokee in the mountains to the west, spoke a dialect of the Iroquoian language. Between the Tuscarora and the Cherokee, on the Piedmont Plateau, there lived twenty-four other tribes who are believed to have spoken Siouan languages. Thus, by the beginning of the eighteenth century the traders and explorers were acquainted with over thirty different tribal dialects spoken in the Carolina area. Although these dialects have been classified as belonging to only three major linguistic families, the Algonquian, the Iroquoian, and the Siouan, many of those in the same family were not mutually intelligible. The Tuscarora could not understand his linguistic cousin the Cherokee, and the Tutelo language showed a greater similarity to the western Dakota than to its neighbor, the Catawba.

The physical appearance of the Indians was equally as diverse as their language. The Algonquian speakers along the coast have been given the racial variety name of *Lenapid*. These Indians were of medium stature with long heads and rugged facial features. In many respects, they resembled the west European of the eighteenth century. The Indians of the Piedmont who spoke a Siouan language have been classified as the *Iswanid* type. These people were small of stature with rounded heads and small gracile facial features. The Iroquoian-speaking Cherokee of the mountain area were of medium stature but rugged in body build. Their heads were round, but artificial deformation emphasized this trait even more. Their faces were large with rugged features, and they are known today as the *Walcolid* variety.

In summary, the Indians of North Carolina at the time of John Lawson did indeed comprise an "odd sort of people" that were representative of three racial varieties and three major language families. Culturally, they represented vestiges of all periods of development from the *Archaic* to *Mississippian* with the simplest forms of societies in the coastal areas and the most complex in the mountains.

“Curiosities worthy a nice Observation”

ARCHAEOLOGICAL INVESTIGATIONS OF SIOUAN VILLAGE SITES IN THE DAN RIVER DRAINAGE

by

Richard A. Seybert

PREFACE

This essay, the second of a two part study, presents a summary of archaeological excavations and analyses of village sites located in the Dan River drainage and focuses upon the seventeenth century Sara tribe. The reader is referred to Volume XIII, Number 2 of this journal for a discussion of historical references to the Sara.

Fortunately, our area of the state has received more attention from archaeologists than other regions. Subsequently, a significant amount of information about the Sara Indians has accumulated. Several thousand pages of theses and dissertations have been produced along with numerous papers for presentation at professional meetings.

Research of native cultures in the Dan River drainage began in 1938 with a limited excavation at Lower Saratown. Initially thought to be the site of the Sara village mentioned by William Byrd, II during his survey of the North Carolina - Virginia boundary, further analysis has revealed that the pit features excavated were the product of a late prehistoric occupation. Following an extended hiatus, professional excavations resumed during the 1970s at the Upper Saratown complex of sites near Walnut Cove in Stokes County. The impetus for this research was the imminent destruction of village sites by local relic collectors. Excavations continued during the 1980s as part of a larger study known as the Siouan Project, comparing the Sara and other Siouan speaking tribes inhabiting neighboring river drainages. These efforts in combination with ethnohistoric accounts have begun to elucidate cultural change among the seventeenth century Sara resulting from contact with Euramerican cultures.

Unfortunately, many of these archaeological reports remain unpublished and generally unavailable to the interested lay reader. This essay presents a brief and simplified synthesis of the results of these scientific endeavors.

The reader will be acquainted with archaeological field techniques and, hopefully, have an increased awareness of the need for preservation of our archaeological heritage. In the space of one article it is difficult to adequately address the subjects introduced here. The reader with more than a casual interest in these topics will find detailed information among the works cited in the notes.

HISTORY UNDER FOOT

The science of archaeology is often poorly understood by lay observers. Archaeologists are commonly viewed as mere antiquarians who dig with an apparently irrational meticulousness for material treasures which are hoarded into museums and occasionally dusted off for exhibit in glass cases. Actually, archaeologists are more interested in the specific location of an artifact within a feature, structure, or village site than the artifact itself. They are more interested in behaviors involved in the production, use, and disposal of artifacts than the aesthetic values of the artifacts. Scientific excavation of a site results not only in the recovery of artifacts, but also recognition of features containing or associated with the artifacts, and retrieval of minutiae overlooked or ignored by untrained "amateurs." Hence, archaeologists are afforded the opportunity to postulate and test a series of ideas about the past which would be otherwise impossible.

It is the ability to infer behavioral activity from the location of material evidence which leads detectives to meticulously preserve and record crime scenes. Similarly, the archaeologist's knowledge of the CONTEXT of an artifact is far more valuable than the mere finding of the artifact. Detailed contextual information is requisite to any reconstruction of past behaviors and models of cultural change.

Unfortunately, many individuals irreparably damage archaeological sites by digging for artifacts as collectible items. In some instances they are simply ignorant of the damage being done. In other instances the greed for possession of artifacts leads to a malicious disregard for the contextual information forever lost to archaeologists, historians, and the lay public as a result of their looting activities. The Dan River valley is no exception to this scenario:

All three of these sites [the Upper Saratown complex] have been the scene of intensive pot-hunting since the middle 1960s.... Of these three sites, 31Sk6 has been all but destroyed, and 31Sk1 has practically suffered the same fate.¹

It is unfortunate, and a limiting factor, to this study that 22 of the burials or 25 percent of the sample [at 31Sk1a] has been vandalized by modern day pothunters.²

Concern for continuing damage to archaeological sites resulted in the enactment of two important North Carolina laws in 1981: *The Archaeological Resources Protection Act* and the *Unmarked Human Burial & Unmarked Human Skeletal Remains Act*, sponsored by our local representative, Bertha Holt. These laws have been employed recently in the successful prosecution of several individuals for looting activities. While this action undoubtedly has some deterrent effect, the best opportunity for protection of our archaeological heritage is public education, site identification and registration through channels such as the Archaeological Society of North Carolina, The Office of State Archaeology and our local historical society.

Tis a great Misfortune, that most of our Travellers, who go to this vast Continent in America, are Persons of the meaner Sort, and generally of a very slender Education; who being hir'd by the Merchants, to trade amongst the Indians, in which Voyages they often spend several Years, are yet, at their Return, incapable of giving any reasonable Account of what they met withal in those remote Parts; tho' the Country abounds with Curiosities worthy a nice Observation.

—John Lawson, 1701³

during his travels among the
Indians of the Carolinas

The archaeological sites in the Dan River drainage represent an “unwritten book” of Indian cultural change through time. This archaeological book is necessarily fragmented. Missing are the pages represented by artifacts fashioned from organic material, making it impossible to study the methods of manufacture or changes in styles of clothing, fabrics, basketry, wooden utensils or other items which have decayed. Religious beliefs and social customs are not preserved in the archaeological record and may only be glimpsed through the few cursory ethnohistoric accounts made by early explorers and traders. While many details of native life will never be known, it is still possible for archaeologists to assemble enough artifactual letters, words, and phrases to make the past increasingly legible to present observers.

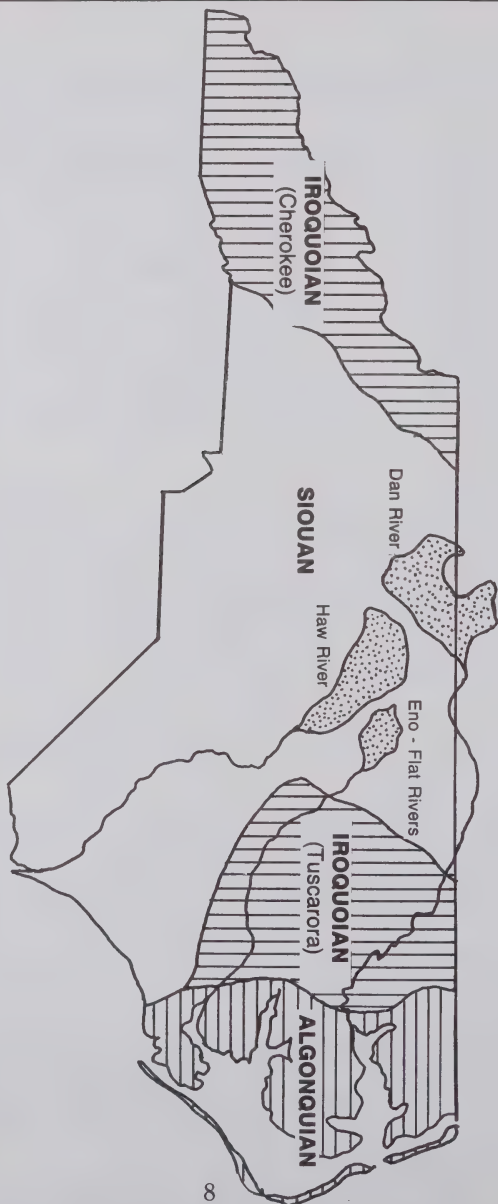


Figure 1. Map of North Carolina showing major linguistic divisions and principal study areas of Piedmont Siouan tribes by the University of North Carolina's Research Laboratories of Anthropology.

A LAND OF MANY TONGUES

. . . the Difference of Languages, that is found amongst these Heathens, seems altogether strange.

—John Lawson⁴

Although the variety of languages and dialects observed by Lawson bewildered him, historians and archaeologists have cast a sense of order upon this linguistic diversity. There are three major linguistic divisions among the late prehistoric period inhabitants of North Carolina (see Figure 1). These language groups correspond roughly with the major physiographic regions within the state. Algonquian speaking groups inhabited the Coastal Plain along with the Iroquoian speaking Tuscarora Indians. The mountains were occupied by people speaking variations of Iroquois. The Sara, along with several dozen other small tribes, inhabited the Piedmont region of North Carolina and Virginia and are presumed to have spoken dialects of Siouan. There are no written records of words spoken by most of these small tribes. Their inclusion in the Siouan language stock is based upon their eventual association with tribes such as the Catawba and Tutelo whose linguistic affiliation is more clearly defined.

Among the Siouan speaking tribes, archaeologists generally recognize a northern and southern division. This dichotomous clustering of tribes is founded in the movement of tribes during the early decades of the eighteenth century to two principal enclaves. Tribes such as the Tutelo, Saponi, Occaneechi, and Stukanox applied to the government of Virginia for protection from Iroquoian Indians and were settled at Fort Christanna on the Meherrin River in 1714. The Eno, Keyauwee, Shakori, Pee Dee, Congaree, Wateree, Santee, and the northernmost tribe, the Sara, eventually incorporated themselves into the Catawba nation, and these tribes form the southern division. In the absence of archaeological data it is difficult to discern whether these perceived groupings reflect actual differences in linguistic or cultural patterns.

THE WOODLAND PERIOD

To understand changes in seventeenth century Sara culture, a knowledge of native Siouan cultures in the centuries preceding European contact is helpful. We must rely entirely upon archaeology to form a basic outline of these earlier chapters of prehistory. The years AD 1000-1550 encompass the period archaeologists refer to as terminal or late Woodland. Woodland

Generalized Siouan Chronology	Dan River Drainage Archaeological Phases	Associated Archaeological Sites
1740 LATE CONTACT	ABANDONMENT	Sara move south to Yadkin River & unite with the Keyauwee; eventually establish village near present Cheraw, SC and by mid 1700s move to Catawba River drainage and unite with Catawba tribe
1710 MIDDLE CONTACT	LATE SARATOWN	31Sk1a Upper Saratown 31Rk6 Madison 31Sk6 Klutz High mortality from widespread European epidemics Much direct trade with English
1670 EARLY CONTACT	MIDDLE SARATOWN	31Rk1 Lower Saratown second occupation Limited trade with English through Indian middlemen
1620 PROTOHISTORIC	EARLY SARATOWN	31Sk1 Early Upper Saratown Changes in ceramics may indicate Sara enter Dan Valley from the Catawba drainage
1525 LATE PREHISTORIC	1450 LATE DAN RIVER	First appearance of trade items, limited to decorative beads, etc. 44Hr3 Belmont 44Hr6 Koehler 44Ha23 Leggett 31Rk1 Lower Saratown first occupation Coalescence into palisaded villages
1300 PREHISTORIC AD 1000	EARLY DAN RIVER	44Hr1 Leatherwood Creek 31Rk5 Powerplant Villages of a few scattered households, 25 - 50 people each No palisades or formal village structure

Figure 2. Archaeological chronology for the Dan River drainage. The first two digits in site numbers represent the state; two following letters are county abbreviations; final digits are site numbers by order they are discovered and recorded. Thus, Lower Saratown (31Rk1) is the first recorded site in Rockingham County, NC and Belmont (44Hr3) is the third recorded site in Henry County, VA.

Indians practiced a mixed economy of seasonal hunting, fishing and shell collecting, gathering wild plant foods, and agriculture. At the beginning of the Woodland Period (ca. 500 BC) there is little evidence of domesticated plant foods in Piedmont North Carolina. As time passed, three major domesticates (squash, beans, and maize) and a host of lesser domesticates were added to the diet. It is during the Late Woodland Period that these domesticated foods assumed a significant role in native economies.

Analysis of archaeological data from sites in the Dan River drainage suggests the following seasonal patterns. During the summer growing season, natives relied primarily upon corn and bean agriculture for subsistence. This diet was supplemented by fishing, collecting shellfish and turtle, and harvesting wild plants such as berries, fruits and seeds. With the arrival of fall emphasis shifted to nut gathering and turkey hunting. White-tailed deer, beaver, and raccoon were hunted mainly in the winter. Deer was the most important protein source for natives, but also had great value for the skins and numerous tools (awls, scrapers, projectile points, fish hooks, etc.) fashioned from the skeletal remains. The age and sex composition of archaeological deer remains suggests that they were hunted by stalking rather than communal drives to water or fire drives common on the Coastal Plain. Stored nuts and crops were an important supplement to the diet during winter. Spring brought preparation of fields for domesticated crops and reliance upon small game capture.⁵

DAN RIVER PHASE

In the Dan River valley, archaeologists have identified two phases which correspond to the Late Woodland Period; Early Dan River (AD 1000-1300) and Late Dan River (AD 1300-1450).⁶ The Early Dan River site at Leatherwood Creek (44Hr1) is a small cluster of circular and rectangular houses with associated storage and burial pit features.⁷ The circular houses ranged from 16-18 feet in diameter with centrally located hearths, while the rectangular houses measure approximately 20 x 13 feet. Nine burials were excavated at the site.⁸ The bodies were placed in a flexed or fetal position with the heads and long axes of the bodies aligned toward the east. While some bodies were buried in simple pits, several others were interred in shaft and chamber type pits, a form common at later sites in the Dan Valley. Most of the burials were adorned with ornamental shell beads in the form of necklaces, bracelets, or embroidered garments. One burial included four small ceramic vessels, a ladle, and shell gorget as grave associations.



Figure 3. *Reconstructed cord-marked pottery vessel from the 1988 excavation at the Powerplant site (31Rk5). Cord-marking is one of the earliest forms of ceramic decoration in Piedmont North Carolina and is common on Early Dan River phase sites. Vessel is approximately 8 inches in height.*

Ceramics from the Leatherwood Creek site relate typically to the Dan River Series as described by Coe and Lewis in 1952.⁹ Native Americans manufactured pottery vessels by forming a discoidal clay base. Upon this base they stacked annular rings in the desired shape of the finished vessel. These clay strips were then bonded and the joints obliterated by malleating the exterior surface with wooden paddles while applying pressure to the interior surface with a stone or wooden anvil. Paddles were carved with various designs or covered with materials such as cord, fabric, or fish nets. On occasion, objects such as corn cobs were used as decorative tools after paddling.

At Leatherwood Creek, the majority of vessel exteriors were net-impressed, with cordmarked, corn cob impressed, and smoothed finishes present to a lesser degree. Interiors were commonly scraped with a serrated tool or notched mussel shell (see Figure 4). Rims were frequently decorated by pinching or finger nail punctations. Coarse sand and small quartz fragments were used as tempering agents in the paste. Typical vessel forms from this period are illustrated in Figure 5.

Stone tools include small, triangular projectile points, polished celts, hammerstones and digging tools. Both corn and beans have been recovered from the site. In addition to these domesticates, food remains include acorns, tortoise shell, abundant deer bone, rabbit, raccoon, opossum, beaver, turkey and other bird bones and large quantities of fresh water mussel and snails.

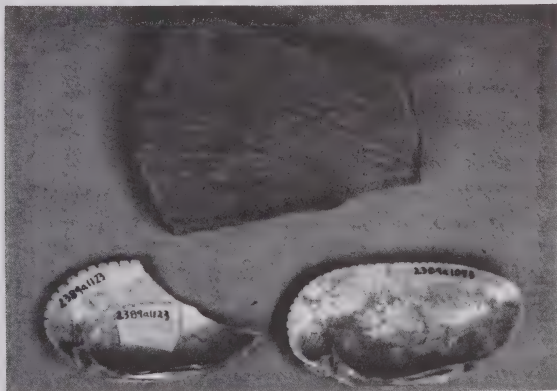


Figure 4. *Notched mussel shell believed to have been used as a scraping tool producing the distinctive striations seen on the interior of many Dan River pottery vessels.*

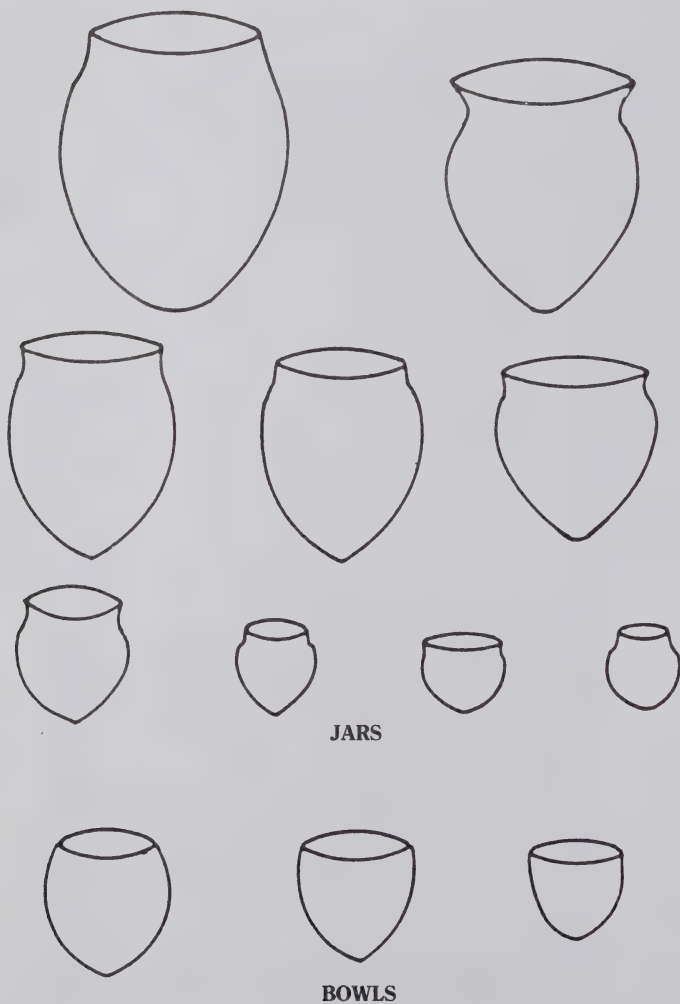


Figure 5. *Typical forms of Dan River phase ceramics, from reconstructed vessels.*

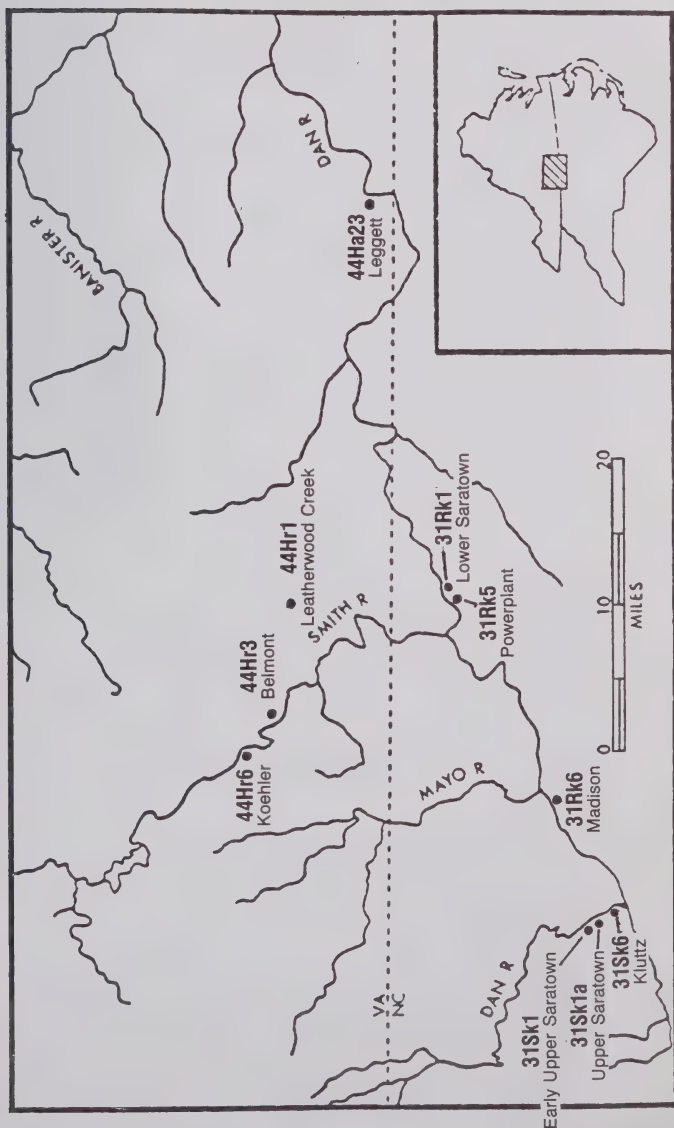


Figure 6. Map of the Dan River drainage showing the location of selected archaeological sites mentioned in the text.

Another Early Dan River phase site, Powerplant (31Rk5), was excavated during the summer of 1988 in response to concern over continuing erosive damage. The site consists of scattered pit features which archaeologists believe may have been associated with a linear pattern of households along the terrace of the Dan River (see Figure 7). Ceramic material recovered from the pit features includes an abundance of cord marked and net impressed wares. Cord marking is one of the earliest forms of pottery decoration in the southeastern United States. Malleation of vessel exteriors with net-wrapped wooden paddles was an extremely popular form of decoration in the Dan River drainage. Net impressed pottery has been collected on the surface of most alluvial bottoms along the Dan and its major tributaries. This fact suggests that although Dan River phase villages consisted of just a few households, (perhaps representing several extended families) the villages were numerous. Archaeologists believe that the population of the Dan River valley exceeded that of neighboring river drainages.¹⁰

The succeeding Late Dan River phase witnessed changes in village structure. Late Dan River sites such as Belmont (44Hr3) and Koehler (44Hr6) exhibit a more formal arrangement of house patterns surrounding a central plaza. The villages are enclosed by circular patterns of post holes, indicating the presence of defensive palisades. These villages contained 15-25 households and suggest a steadily increasing population. Intensified agricultural cultivation of maize, beans, squash and other crops with concomitant population increases may have led to competition for arable lands and account for the defensive palisades. Another possible factor contributing to the appearance of defensive village sites is the periodic incursions of Iroquoian raiding parties. This pattern of conflict with northerly Indians began prior to European contact and persisted until amalgamation of the Sara with the Catawba in the mid eighteenth century, long after the Dan River valley had been abandoned by native cultures.

While the exact number of Indians in the Dan River drainage immediately prior to the European discovery of America can never be known, it is possible to offer a tenable estimate. By 1715, a South Carolina census including the Sara Indians placed their number at 510.¹¹ European epidemic diseases which periodically affected American Indians were smallpox, measles, influenza, bubonic plague, diptheria, typhus, cholera, and scarlet fever. Documented epidemics in the southeast which probably affected Piedmont tribes include: smallpox (1665-1667, 1696-1699) and influenza (1696-1698).¹² Many other epidemics likely occurred but were never documented by explorers or traders. Mortality in these epidemics was generally high; rates

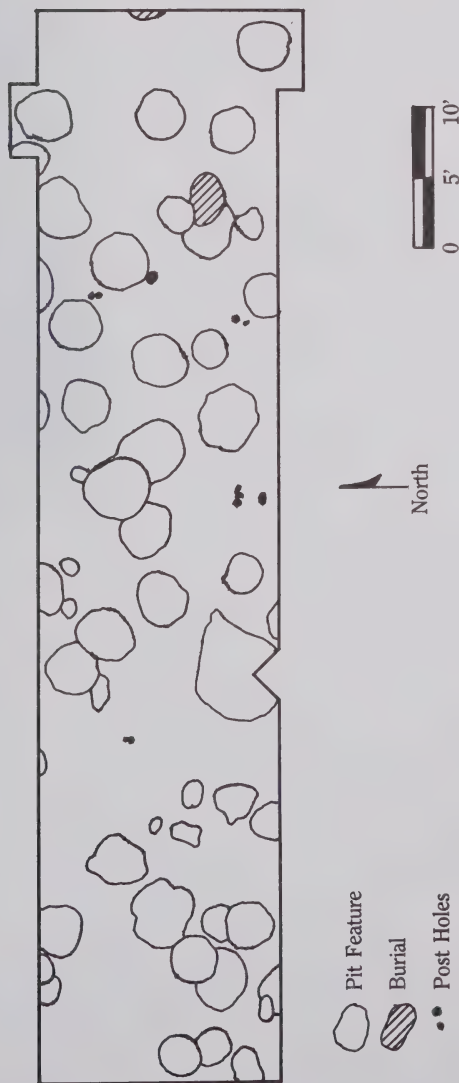


Figure 7. Map of the 1988 excavation at the Powerplant site (31Rk5). The numerous pit features and lack of structural post holes lead archaeologists to believe that the village consisted of several households scattered along the terrace of Dan River.

associated with smallpox possibly exceeding fifty percent. Application of mortality estimates associated with the epidemics to the historic Sara census would indicate a pre-contact population figure of several thousand for Rockingham County and perhaps ten thousand or more for the entire Dan River drainage in North Carolina and Virginia.

SARATOWN PHASE

In the Dan Valley the Early Saratown phase (1450-1620) is marked by an apparent decline in the number of village sites, but communities probably were larger. Tributaries were largely abandoned as smaller villages coalesced near the mouths of major tributaries such as Town Fork Creek and the Mayo & Smith Rivers. This cycle of population contraction and coalescence occurred repeatedly during the final century of native occupation of the Dan Valley.

Early Upper Saratown (31Sk1) is located near Walnut Cove in Stokes County along the Dan River immediately upstream from its confluence with Town Fork Creek. The site covers approximately 2.5 acres, and exhibits a thick midden (level of soil containing decayed organic material resulting from occupation) rich in artifacts. Numerous pit features, burials, two house patterns, and a probable segment of palisade wall were uncovered during limited excavations in the early 1980s.¹³ These factors suggest that the population of Early Upper Saratown was substantially greater than that of earlier Dan River phase villages.

Few items of European origin have been recovered at Early Upper Saratown. These include: two glass beads, a piece of brass scrap, peach pit, and copper or brass bar gorgét associated with a burial. It is now believed that some of these items may be associated with the nearby Late Saratown phase site, 31Sk1a.¹⁴ The paucity of European items indicates there was little, if any, direct contact with colonial traders. During this period and the following Middle Saratown phase, most trade to the remoter interior tribes was controlled by Indian middlemen such as the Occaneechi. The initial trade items consisted of decorative, non-utilitarian items. The inventory of trade goods recovered at such protohistoric sites reflects the strategy of European traders and native middlemen. Initially, remote tribes such as the Sara could be satisfied with "small Looking-Glasses, Pictures, Beads and Bracelets of glass, Knives, Sizars, and all manner of gaudy toys and knacks for children. . . ." ¹⁵

Although some Dan River Series pottery traits persisted into the protohistoric and historic periods, the Early Saratown phase witnessed the

appearance of several new ceramic styles also found in the Catawba River drainage. This complex of new vessel forms, surface finishes and decorative elements is referred to variously as the Stokes Variety Group¹⁶ or Oldtown Series.¹⁷ Changes associated with the Oldtown Series include the following:

- Use of very fine sand as a tempering agent in the paste with some vessels being untempered
- Smoothed rather than scraped interiors
- New exterior finishes including smoothed, burnished, simple stamped, check stamped, and complicated stamped
- New decorative elements including applique strips and reed punctations
- Appearance of hemispherical and cazuela bowl shapes

Do these changes in pottery mark the movement of the Sara tribe from the Catawba River drainage to the Dan Valley? James Mooney (1894)¹⁸ and John Swanton (1946)¹⁹ produced publications for the Smithsonian Institution's Bureau of American Ethnology which dealt with the problems of identity and location of the Sara tribe. Spanish accounts of the de Soto and Pardo expeditions refer to a village identified variously as Xuala, Juada, or Joara. Mooney employed linguistic transformations to equate these Spanish references with the later English references to the Sara, Saura, or Cheraw tribe. The mid sixteenth century location of their village was thought to be in northern South Carolina. The recent controversy surrounding the location of the de Soto expedition's route has generated research which places Xuala on the Catawba River near present Marion, North Carolina, a site much closer to the seventeenth century Sara communities in the Dan Valley.²⁰

The cumulative evidence of two decades of intensive archaeological research in the Dan Valley offers an interesting alternative to the above hypothesis: the possibility that the Sara inhabited the Dan Valley for several centuries prior to European contact and the new pottery styles represent a rapid technological development resulting from some form of trade or other intertribal contact. The persistence of various traits from the Dan River phase sites to the Saratown phase sites supports the notion of Sara continuity in the Dan River drainage. These traits include:

- Circular house patterns
- Circular, palisade enclosed villages
- Shaft and chamber type burial pits

Hopefully, continued archaeological research will permit ever clearer glimpses of this chapter of Sara history and allow us to determine if the

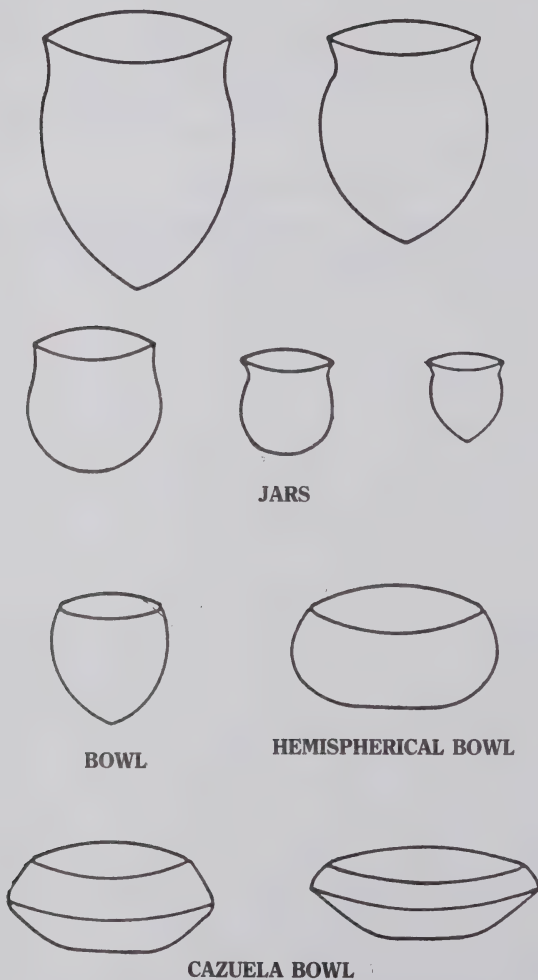


Figure 8. *Typical forms of Saratown phase ceramics, from reconstructed vessels. Note the addition of hemispherical and cazuela bowl shapes.*

earlier Dan River phase sites were the product of Sara occupation or some other unidentified Siouan tribe.

THE HOLE TRUTH

One of the most ubiquitous features encountered on archaeological sites is holes. The Sara dug holes of many shapes and sizes, serving a wide variety of functions. Careful observation of the sometimes obvious, but often subtle, patterns left in the soil reveal as much about Sara life as the artifacts recovered from village sites. The detection and recording of these holes, along with analysis of their fill, is a very slow and painstaking process, the importance of which is often ignored or unappreciated by casual observers.

Many of the Dan River sites are located in bottom lands and are thus covered by a layer of soil disturbed by modern cultivation. This plow zone is removed with shovels and sifted through one half inch mesh screen to retrieve all artifacts from the unit being excavated, generally ten foot squares. The final inch or two of plow zone is removed with flat ended shovels revealing undisturbed soil from the Sara occupation. Unavoidable soil disturbances left by shovelers are removed as archaeologists assemble in a line and use highly sharpened trowels to slice across the excavation unit exposing a completely fresh surface. Spraying a fine mist of water across the surface enhances contrast between the organic decay in holes or pits and adjoining sterile subsoil, or village midden. The size, location and elevation of the holes are plotted on maps. The excavation units are then photographed in black & white and color. The redundancy of recorded information is important because the process of archaeological excavation results in the complete and permanent destruction of the site. When feasible, archaeologists prefer to leave a portion of the site unexcavated in the event that future improvements in excavation or analytical techniques would permit a more accurate study of the remaining portion of the site. The tremendous potential for loss of information is one of several reasons that anyone willing to withstand the rigors of fieldwork is encouraged to dig **ONLY** in a volunteer capacity under the guidance of qualified professional archaeologists.

Application of these rigorous field techniques during excavations at Lower Saratown (31Rk1) in the summer of 1988 resulted in the discovery of two house patterns and a portion of palisade wall (see Figure 11). One house was sub-rectangular shaped with maximum dimensions of 19 x 23 feet. Another circular house of approximately 18 feet diameter was enclosed within the other structure and indicates that the structure was probably rebuilt at

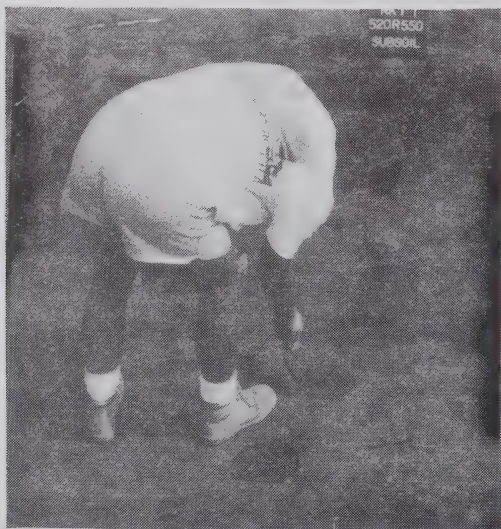


Figure 9. *Top photo - archaeologists use sharpened trowels at base of plow zone to slice away soil revealing post hole and pit features. Bottom photo - features are marked, photographed, and mapped prior to excavation of their contents.*

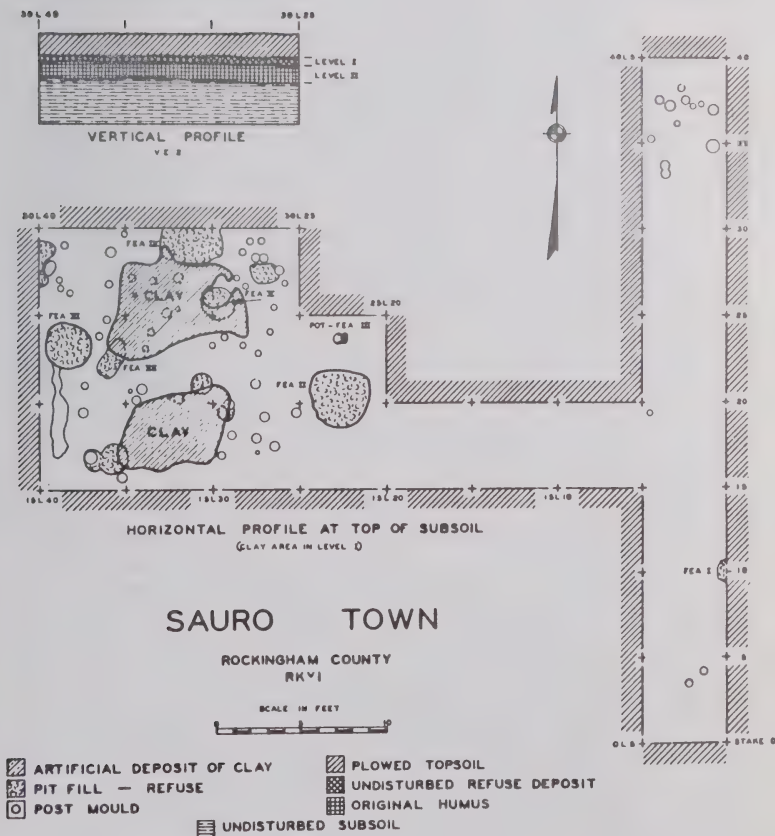


Figure 10. Map of the 1938 excavation at Lower Saratown on the Dan River near Eden. These scattered pit features, once thought to be part of the historic period village mentioned by William Byrd, II are now known to be the product of a late prehistoric period occupation, probably prior to AD1500.

some time. Absence of central support posts in this house and structures from both earlier and later sites indicates a bower type construction similar to that used by other Siouan tribes as described by John Lawson in 1701:

These Savages live in Wigwams, or Cabins built of Bark, which are made round like an Oven, to prevent any Damage by hard Gales of Wind. They make the Fire in the middle of the House, and have a Hole at the Top of the Roof right above the Fire, to let out the Smoke. . . . The Bark they make their Cabins withal, is generally Cypress, or red or white Cedar; and sometimes, when they are a great way from any of these Woods, they make use of Pine-Bark, which is the worser sort. . . . The Cabins they dwell in have Benches all round, except where the Door stands; on these they lay Beasts-Skins, and Mats made of Rushes, whereon they sleep and loll. In one of these, several Families commonly live, though all related to one another.²¹

It is estimated that the Lower Saratown village covered an area of 1.5 acres. It is tentatively dated to the Middle Saratown phase (1620-1670) which was a period of limited but gradually increasing trade with Europeans. Trade items recovered from a burial and other pit features include glass beads and rolled tubular copper beads.²²

As the Sara entered the final decades of their existence in the Dan River basin, two distant events combined to accelerate the pace of cultural change. The first was the establishment of Charles Town on the South Carolina coast. Fear of colonial South Carolina's economic expansion prompted a renewed interest by Virginia authorities in westward expansion and development of trade. Several expeditions were soon dispatched (Lederer 1669-1670, Batts & Fallam 1671, Needham & Arthur 1673-1674).

The second event was the defeat of the Occaneechi by colonial forces during Bacon's Rebellion in 1676. This action effectively removed the Occaneechi as middlemen in the Indian trade. Thus, the Great Trading Path was opened to a flood of direct and very destructive commerce with the colonists. Writing in 1728 during his survey of the North Carolina - Virginia boundary, William Byrd, II described the trade:

The trading path above-mentioned receives its name from being the route the traders take with their caravans when they go to traffic with the Catawbas and other southern Indians The goods for the Indian trade consist chiefly in guns, powder, shot, hatchets (which the Indians call tomahawks), kettles, red and blue planes [plain cloth], Duffields [coarse woolen cloth], Stroudwater blankets, and some cutlery wares, brass rings, and other trinkets.

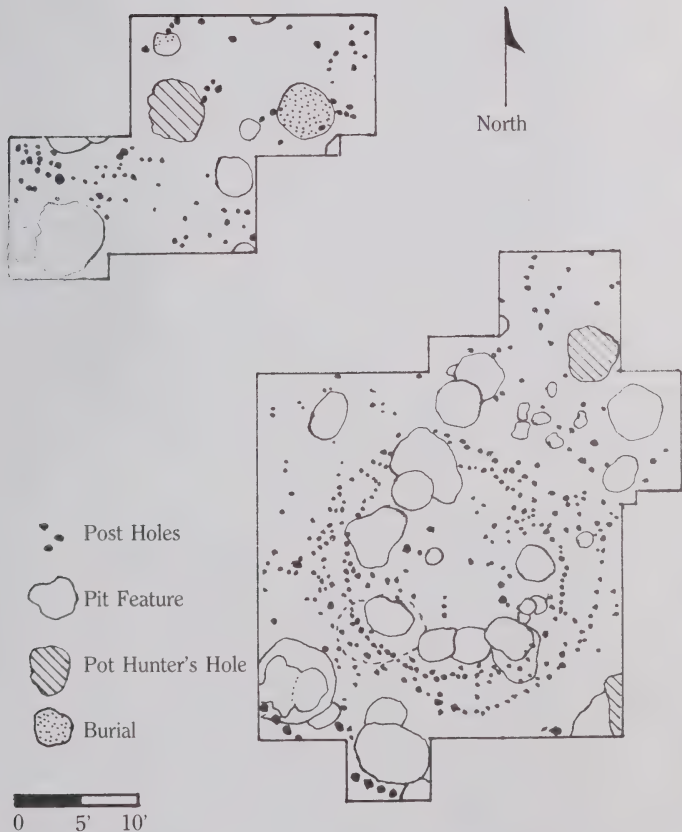
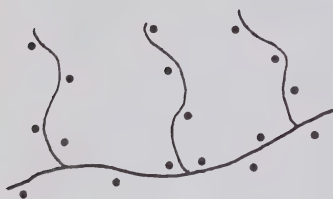


Figure 11. Map of 1988 excavation at Lower Saratown. Note the circular and sub-rectangular house patterns believed to represent a structure which was rebuilt. Storage pits line the walls of the structures. Also a small section of Palisade wall is revealed by postholes at lower left of map. Defensive, palisade enclosed villages are typical of the Saratown phase.



EARLY DAN RIVER
AD 1000 - 1300



LATE DAN RIVER
1300 - 1450



EARLY SARATOWN
1450 - 1620



MIDDLE SARATOWN
1620 - 1670



LATE SARATOWN
1670 - 1710

Figure 12. Diagrammatic drawings of the Dan River drainage showing archaeologists' conception of depopulation during the period AD 1000 - 1710.

These wares are made up into packs and carried upon horses, each load being from 150 to 200 pounds, with which they are able to travel about twenty miles a day if forage happen to be plentiful. Formerly a hundred horses have been employed in one of these Indian caravans under the conduct of fifteen or sixteen persons only, but now the trade is much impaired, insomuch that they seldom go with half that number.²³

The most dire consequence of Colonial interaction was the spread of epidemic diseases to Indians having little or no biological immunity. Hence the Late Saratown phase (1670-1710) is marked as a time of death. While journeying through Carolina in 1701, John Lawson noted "The Small-Pox and Rum have made such a Destruction amongst them, that, on good grounds, I do believe, there is not the sixth Savage living within two hundred Miles of all our Settlements, as there were fifty Years ago."²⁴

This picture of widespread death is reinforced by extensive archaeological excavations at Upper Saratown (31Sk1a). Although only one fourth of the site has been excavated to date, 111 burials have been discovered. Analysis indicates that approximately 28% of the population died before age five and 50% never lived beyond the teenage years.²⁵ Life expectancy at birth was 19½ years.²⁶

The Madison site (31Rk6) produced 120 burials. It has been suggested that the site represents a cemetery area possibly associated with one of the epidemics dated to the Late Saratown phase.²⁷ It should be noted that in spite of the tremendous social trauma occurring at this time, native customs prevailed. Most burials at both Madison and Upper Saratown were made in the traditional flexed position with the head oriented toward the east. Other evidence for attention to ceremonial detail is abundant. Grave offerings were numerous and included items of both native and European manufacture. Among the trade goods were glass beads, metal tools and ornamental brass items. In many instances the brass artifacts formed copper salts which acted to preserve organic materials in the burial pits. Thus, archaeologists know that pits were lined with bark, bodies carefully wrapped in matting made of split cane, and graves covered with logs placed on earthen ledges at the sides of the pits.²⁸ Red ocher and vermilion were found in many burials at both Madison and Upper Saratown.

While some bodies at Upper Saratown were interred in simple oval pits, the predominant forms are shaft and side chamber or central chamber (see Figure 14). A large shaft was first excavated to a depth of several feet. A smaller chamber was then dug at the bottom or side of the shaft, leaving

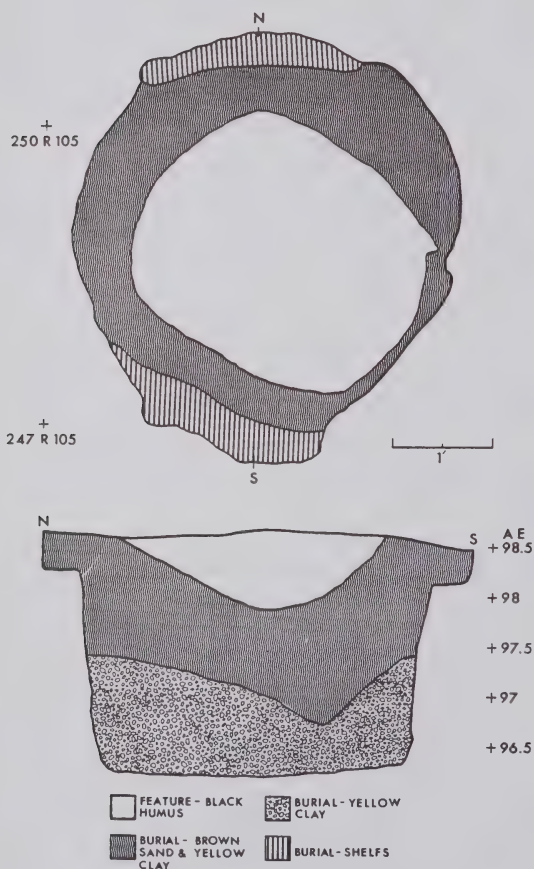


Figure 13. *Drawing of a typical Sara Indian shaft and central chamber burial pit from the Upper Saratown site (31Sk1a). Note the earthen ledges midway along pit walls which supported log coverings placed over the carefully wrapped bodies.*



Figure 14. Map of the Upper Saratoun site excavated during the 1970s and 1980s. Note the numerous circular house patterns and palisade segments along the perimeter of the village.

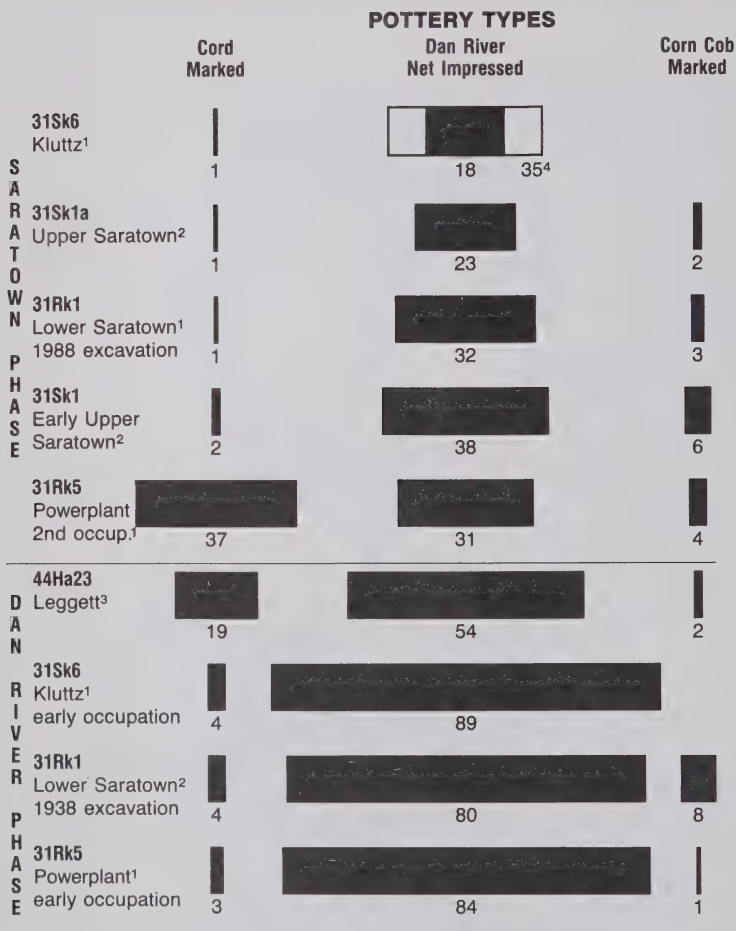






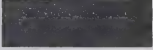





























Figure 15. Seriation chart of the relative frequencies of principal ceramic types at selected sites in the Dan River drainage. Note the addition of new types during the Saratown phase, the trend toward smooth finishes, and the diversity of types at the Kluttz site.

NOTE: Frequencies do not total 100% in all cases due to the omission of minor pottery types.

Plain or Smoothed	POTTERY TYPES				
	Brushed	Burnished	Simple Stamped	Check Stamped	Complic. Stamped
 32	 1	 2	 5	 21	 1
 34	 12	 19	 2	 3	 3
 56	 5		 1	 2	
 21	 1	 22	 8		 2
 7	 3	 12	 1	 2	
 3	 1				
 4	 2				
 3	 4				
 10	 1				

¹ Unpublished frequencies furnished by Research Labs of Anthropology

² from Jack H. Wilson, Jr., "A Study of the Late Prehistoric, Protohistoric and Historic Indians of the Carolina and Virginia Piedmont," Ph.D. Dissertation - UNC, (1983).

³ from Paul S. Gardner, "An Analysis of Dan River Ceramics from Virginia and North Carolina," M.A. Thesis - UNC, (1980).

⁴ A new type of pottery, Oldtown Net-Impressed, occurs at the Klutz site with a frequency of 17%, making the overall percentage of net-impressed pottery 35%.

earthen ledges which supported the log covering placed over the body following interment. These shaft and chamber pits, similar to prehistoric burial pits, again indicate the persistence of traditional customs in spite of changes being wrought by Euramerican contact.

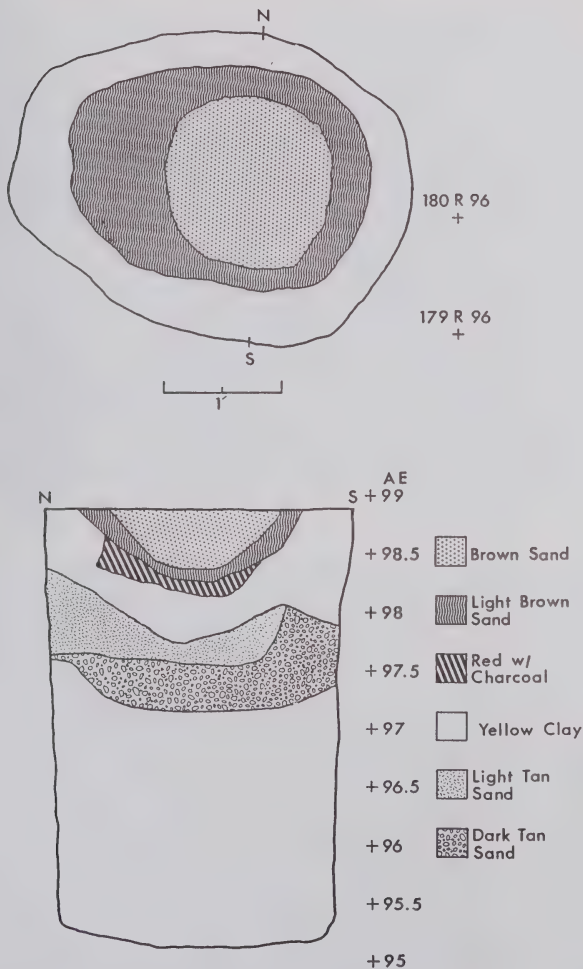
Burials at Upper Saratown were placed throughout the village, some within houses and others outside; a burial pattern similar to earlier village sites. Excavations during the mid 1980s at the Fredericks site, a historic period contact site at Hillsborough on the Eno River, reveal the presence of a separate cemetery area outside the palisade wall.²⁹ Two Dan Valley sites, Madison (31Rk6) and Kluttz (31Sk6), exhibit similar cemetery areas. The reason for this change in burial patterns remains unclear to archaeologists at present.

In addition to the burial pits and structural post hole patterns mentioned earlier, researchers have identified regularities in form and function of other subterranean pit features. The most common feature in seventeenth century Sara villages is circular holes having straight or slightly undercut sides producing a bell-shaped profile. The average dimensions of these features are three feet in diameter and three feet in depth. It is believed that these pits may have served as storage chambers for food or valuables.³⁰ An ethnographic source demonstrates such use among the nearby Powhatan Indians of the Virginia coast:

Their corne and (indeed) their copper, hatchetts, howses [hoes], beades, perle, and most things with them of value, according to their owne estymacion, they hide, one from the knowledge of another, in the grownd within the woods, and so keepe them all the yeare, or untill they have fitt use for them . . . ³¹

One study proposes that the Sara may have abandoned their villages during the fall and winter to participate in seasonal deer hunts.³² At such times, these pits would have safely hidden small quantities of seeds or nuts until their return. Ethnographic evidence indicates that interior tribes such as the Sara began receiving metal tools and firearms during the late 1600s. Substantial quantities of deerskin were required as payment and these tribes became increasingly dependent upon deer hunting. Abundant skeletal remains of deer and stone tools and projectile points at Upper Saratown attest to the growing importance of, and dependence upon, the deerskin trade.

After being contaminated by spoiled food remains or vermin, storage pits served another function; garbage disposal. The fill was generally not stratified and, thus, was probably deposited in a brief period of time.³³



FEATURE 23 PROFILE. TOP OF SUBSOIL.

Figure 16. Drawing of a storage pit at the Upper Saratow site (31Sk1a). Some storage pits have straight sides while others flare outward at the bottom producing a bell-shaped profile. Most storage pits have an average depth and diameter of three feet.

Despite the widespread use of the term “trash pit” in archaeological literature, it appears that very few pit features were initially constructed for that sole purpose.

Another common feature at Late Woodland sites is the shallow basin-shaped pit. These pits vary greatly in size. They are referred to as borrow pits and are interpreted to be the remains of mining activity to obtain clay used in the manufacture or repair of wattle and daub palisade and/or house walls.³⁴ This construction method involves the weaving of vines, small branches, or reeds around larger wooden support posts and plastering the surface with clay.

Shallow oval or circular pits of large diameter (greater than four feet) are believed to be earthen ovens.³⁵ These features are rich with remains of wood charcoal, carbonized plant material, animal bone, and fire-cracked rock. They show evidence of having been used on multiple occasions.

FILLING HOLES IN THE PAST WITH THE FILL OF PAST HOLES

Careful analysis of the fill in pit features aids archaeologists in determining the functions they served in aboriginal times. Pit fill is removed separately by discernable levels. Each level represents a separate activity or disposal; the remnant of an action frozen in time.

Feature fill is subjected to a process known as water screening. The soil from each level is placed in a sluice with running water and passes through a series of screens ranging from one half to one sixteenth inch mesh. The screens separate archaeological and artifactual remains from the soil. Screen contents are dried, labeled and stored for shipment to labs where animal bone, plant remains, stone tools, pottery and other items can be identified and analyzed at a later time.

Because some very tiny or fragile remains may be lost or damaged during water screening, some pit fill is processed by a flotation method, very gently agitating soil in a shallow tray to float small plant seeds or carbonized food remains out of the fill. Use of this technique at Upper Saratown indicates the addition of the following European cultigens to Sara subsistence: peach, watermelon, cucumber, and muskmelon.³⁶ It is now apparent that despite increasing emphasis upon hunting and the deerskin trade, Sara agricultural practices were not adversely affected by contact with Euramerican cultures. Indeed the use of traded metal implements such as iron hoes and axes, and the addition of the above mentioned plant foods likely enhanced agricultural production.

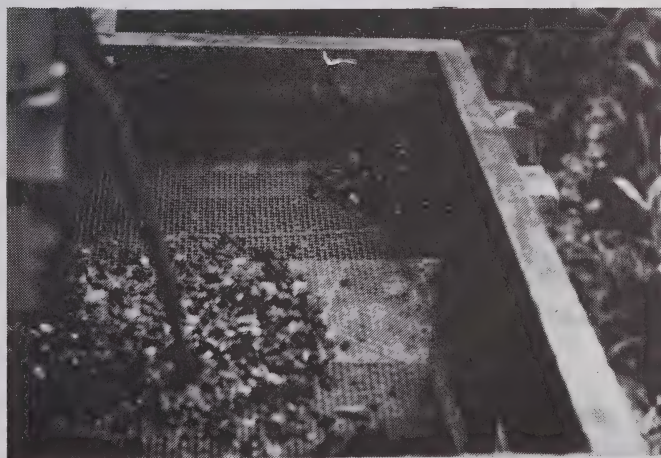
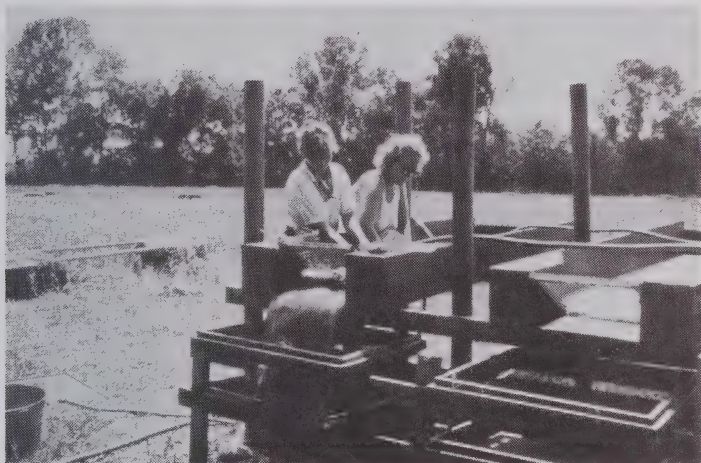


Figure 17. *Top photo - Workers at the water screening station take soil from excavated pit features and wash it through a series of screens which catch a wide variety of archaeological remains - bottom photo.*

In addition to the processes used above, soil samples are taken from each level of pit features. This allows lab workers to conduct chemical or pollen analyses at a later date. The combination of these techniques allows the assembly, "letter by letter," of the smaller elements of unwritten Sara history. The extraordinary duration and extent of excavations at Upper Saratown resulted in a much more detailed analysis of Sara activity than would be possible with crude collecting practices used by pothunters.

Excavations during the summer of 1988 focused on a later village site in the Upper Saratown vicinity, the Kluttz site (31Sk6). The site is notable for a number of unusual features. The first of these is the presence of an extremely large pit (feature no. 10), possibly a large borrow pit. The dimensions of the pit were approximately 12 x 17 feet with an average depth of three to four feet. Discarded in this pit was an unusually large quantity of pottery vessels. There is great diversity of surface finishes and design elements on these ceramics suggesting that peoples with increasingly different cultural patterns were being forced to merge for their survival. Most burials at the Kluttz site were made in what appears to be a separate cemetery area in very shallow pits which had been partially destroyed by modern cultivation. There were relatively few artifacts included as grave offerings at the Kluttz site. One interment was made as a bundle burial; perhaps the victim of increasingly frequent Iroquoian raiding warfare returned to the village for burial? A bundle burial is a secondary type burial where the bones are disarticulated and wrapped in a tight bundle for burial at a time much later or place distant from the death. Such burials are rare in the Dan River drainage.

One individual had been buried in a traditional central chamber pit separate from the other burials. There were numerous European trade items including a large pistol, knife, and brass buttons, perhaps attached to deer-skin leggings. These factors indicate that this individual may have attained a special social status and, hence, was accorded unusual funeral treatment.

To date, no evidence of a palisade or house structures has been found at the Kluttz site. It appears that the settlement consisted of households scattered over an area of approximately six and one half acres. The disruption of traditional patterns of village structure, burial, and ceramic manufacture leads archaeologists to the conclusion that the Kluttz site may be one of, or possibly the final, site occupied by the Sara prior to their abandonment of the Dan Valley.

In little more than 150 years, the combined destructive forces of European epidemic diseases, the exploitative deerskin trade, and Iroquoian warfare had reduced the thousands of Native Americans inhabiting every niche

of the Dan River drainage to perhaps a single village of just a few hundred people.

On the surface, the history of the Piedmont Indians during the Contact period is a history of abrupt and devastating changes. However, upon closer inspection, the story becomes much more complex. . . . People did die violent deaths and did so in increasing numbers; strangers were forced to become friends and to live together; and the White man's weapons and tools were grafted onto the native technology. Yet the basic necessities of life, the game that was hunted and the crops that were planted, remain unchanged. Knives and guns were no doubt prized possessions, but stone tools continued to be manufactured and the bow and arrow remained a deadly weapon. Copper kettles were available but they did not replace the clay pot. And although [burial patterns changed with the passage of time] they still began their journey to the Other World in the security of traditional beliefs and rituals.³⁸

EPILOGUE

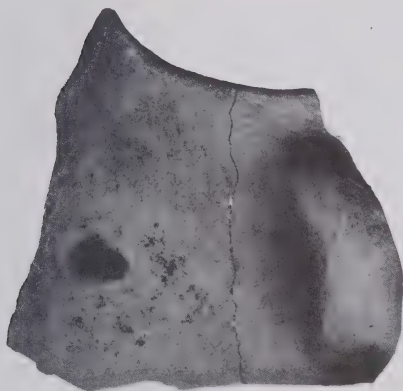
By 1710 the remnant Sara population had begun their odyssey southward along the Yadkin River to their mid eighteenth century home at Cheraw, South Carolina. After adopting several smaller fragmentary Siouan tribes and leaving the Yadkin Valley, the Sara themselves were absorbed by the Catawba tribe. Sara tribal identity was officially obliterated with the establishment of reservation status for the Catawba nation in 1761.

There is a tendency for students of Indian history to feel a profound sense of sorrow and pity toward the groups they study. The archaeological record demonstrates that the seventeenth century Sara proved to be a highly adaptive people who steadfastly maintained their social customs, spiritual beliefs and ethnic identity in spite of the unprecedented forces of change which enveloped them. As John Lawson noted nearly three centuries ago, perhaps our pity is misdirected:

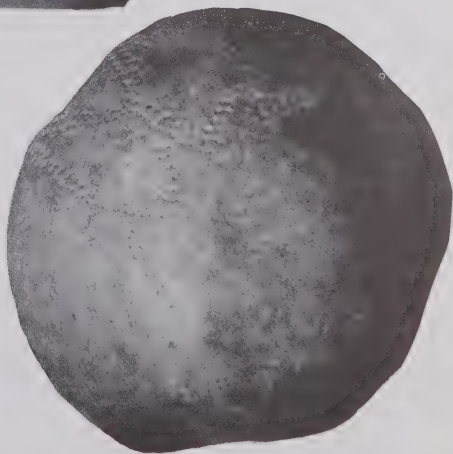
We reckon them slaves in Comparison to us, and Intruders, . . . far from being Intruders upon us, we have abandon'd our own Native Soil, to drive them out, and possess theirs; . . . we trade with them, it's true, but to what End? . . . we have furnished them with the Vice of Drunkenness, which is the open Road to all others, and daily cheat them in everything we sell . . . all the Wars, which we have had with the Savages, were occasion'd by the unjust Dealings of the Christians towards them. . . .



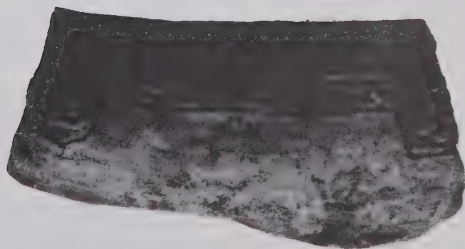
Figure 18. *The diversity of pottery types at the Klutz site (31Sk6) includes: net-impressed - A & B, simple-stamped - C, check-stamped - D, smoothed rim sherd with strap handle - E, basal portion of smoothed vessel with reed punctation design - F, and rim sherd of cazuela bowl with incised design - G.*



E



F



G

They are really better to us, than we are to them; they always give us Victuals at their Quarters, and take care we are arm'd against Hunger and Thirst: We do not so by them (generally speaking) but let them walk by our Doors Hungry, and do not often relieve them. We look upon them with Scorn and Disdain, and think them little better than Beasts in Humane Shape, though if well examined, we shall find that, for all our Religion and Education, we possess more Moral Deformities, and Evils than these Savages are acquainted withal.³⁹

MORE CLEARLY NOW

This article is presented in the sincere hope that it will soon be rendered obsolete by new excavations and innovative interpretations of data already gathered. Identification, registration, and protection of sites by local citizens combined with scientific excavation guided by professional archaeologists will allow us to assemble more elements of the "unwritten book" of Sara history.

Dr. Joffre Coe initiated study of the Sara with his work at Lower Saratown in 1938.⁴⁰ In a 1983 summary of the development of North Carolina archaeology, Dr. Coe noted the fragmentary nature of the archaeological record and cited a biblical analogy:

*For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.
But when that which is perfect is come, then that
which is in part shall be done away.
When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood
as a child, I thought as a child: but when I
became a man, I put away childish things.
For now we see through a glass darkly;
but then face to face.*

I Corinthians xiii: 9-12

He then observed: "We can never see the total reality of the past face to face, but we can, in time, see through the glass more clearly."⁴¹

While many questions remain unanswered and research constantly generates new questions, the painstaking efforts of the Research Laboratories of Anthropology at the University of North Carolina allow us to look through the archaeological glass and "read" about the final centuries of Sara occupation of the Dan River drainage somewhat more clearly now.

ACKNOWLEDGMENT

The author would like to express appreciation to Drs. Stephen Davis, Jr., Trawick Ward, and Vin Steponaitis of the Research Laboratories of Anthropology for making artifacts, slides, and copies of unpublished papers available for use in this article. Dr. Davis also read a preliminary draft of this paper and offered many helpful suggestions for revision.

NOTES

¹ Jack H. Wilson, Jr., "A Study of the Late Prehistoric, Protohistoric, and Historic Indians of the Carolina and Virginia Piedmont: Structure, Process, and Ecology" (Ph.D. Dissertation, The University of North Carolina, Chapel Hill, 1983), p. 378. Hereinafter cited as Wilson, "Indians of Piedmont."

² Liane Navey, "An Introduction to the Mortuary Practices of the Historic Sara" (M.A. Thesis, The University of North Carolina, Chapel Hill, 1982), p. 11. Hereinafter cited as Navey, "Mortuary Practices."

³ John Lawson, *A New Voyage to Carolina*, ed. Hugh Talmage Lefler (Chapel Hill, N.C.: The University of North Carolina Press, 1967), p. 5. Hereinafter cited as Lawson, *New Voyage*.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 233.

⁵ Gregory A. Waselkov, "Prehistoric Dan River Hunting Strategies" (M.A. Thesis, The University of North Carolina, Chapel Hill, 1977), pp. 100-102.

⁶ Most chronological information throughout this study is derived from R. P. Stephen Davis, Jr. and H. Trawick Ward, "The Evolution of Siouan Communities in Piedmont North Carolina," *Southeastern Archaeology*, in press. Hereinafter cited as Davis & Ward, "Siouan Communities."

⁷ A brief report on the archaeological excavations at Leatherwood Creek was made by Richard P. Gravelly, Jr., "The Leatherwood Creek Cite, 44Hr1," *Eastern States Archaeological Federation Bulletin* 30 (1971), p. 11.

⁸ For a complete report on the skeletal material from Leatherwood Creek Site see H. H. Wilson et. al., "Analysis of Nine Burials from the Leatherwood Creek Site (44Hr1), Henry County, Virginia," in *Skeletal Analysis in Southeastern Archaeology*, ed. Janet E. Levy, North Carolina Archaeological Council Publication No. 24 (Raleigh, 1986), pp. 49-60.

⁹ Joffre L. Coe and Ernest H. Lewis, "Dan River Series Statement," in *Prehistoric Pottery of the Eastern United States*, ed. James B. Griffin, (Museum of Anthropology, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, 1952).

¹⁰ R. P. Stephen Davis, Jr. and H. Trawick Ward, "Diversity and Change in Community Pattern Among Late Prehistoric and Historic Siouan Tribes in Piedmont North Carolina," (Unpublished manuscript on file at the Research Laboratories of Anthropology, University of North Carolina, Chapel Hill, 1990), p. 5.

¹¹ Chapman J. Milling, *Red Carolinians* (Columbia: University of South Carolina Press, 1969), p. 222.

¹² Henry F. Dobyns, *Their Number Become Thinned* (Knoxville, The University of Tennessee Press, 1983), Essay One.

¹³ For a detailed description of excavations at Early Upper Saratown, see Wilson, "Indians of Piedmont," pp. 378-413.

¹⁴ R. P. Stephen Davis, Jr., personal communication, June 1990.

¹⁵ William P. Cumming, *The Discoveries of John Lederer* (Charlottesville: University of Virginia Press, 1958), p. 42.

¹⁶ Paul S. Gardner, "An Analysis of Dan River Ceramics from Virginia and North Carolina" (M.A. Thesis, The University of North Carolina, Chapel Hill, 1980), Chapter III. The reader should be aware that the Stokes Variety Group description is based upon a surface collection of sherds from the Kluttz Site (31Sk6). Field work in the summer of 1988 demonstrated that there were several occupations at this site and Gardner's analysis probably included sherds from an earlier time period.

¹⁷ Wilson, "Indians of Piedmont," pp. 425-454.

¹⁸ James Mooney, *The Siouan Tribes of the East*, Bureau of American Ethnology Bulletin No. 22 (Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution, 1894).

¹⁹ John R. Swanton, *The Indians of the Southeastern United States*, Bureau of American Ethnology Bulletin No. 137 (Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution, 1946), p. 46. Hereinafter cited as Swanton, *Southeastern Indians*.

²⁰ Chester Depratter et. al., "The Route of Juan Pardo's Explorations in the Interior Southeast, 1566-1568," *The Florida Historical Quarterly* 62 (1983): 125-158.

²¹ Lawson, *New Voyage*, pp. 180-182.

²² Davis and Ward, "Siouan Communities."

²³ William Byrd, "A Journey to the Land of Eden Anno 1733," in *The Prose Works of William Byrd of Westover*, ed. Louis B. Wright (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1966), pp. 307-308.

²⁴ Lawson, *New Voyage*, p. 232.

²⁵ Navey, "Mortuary Practices," p. 77.

²⁶ Homes Hogue Wilson, "Human Skeletal Remains from the Wall and Fredericks Sites," in *The Siouan Project: Seasons I and II*, eds. Roy S. Dickens, Jr., H. Trawick Ward, and R. P. Stephen Davis, Jr., Research Laboratories of Anthropology, University of North Carolina, Monograph Series No. 1 (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina, 1987), p. 119.

²⁷ Richard P. Gravely, Jr., "The Madison Cemetery," *Eastern States Archaeological Federation Bulletin* 27 (1969), p. 11.

²⁸ Richard P. Gravely, Jr., "Prehistory in the Upper Dan River Drainage System," in *Piedmont Archaeology*, eds. J. Mark Wittkofski and Lyle E. Browning, Archaeological Society of Virginia Special Publication No. 10 (1983), p. 122; Navey, "Mortuary Practices," p. 160.

²⁹ Dickens et. al., *The Siouan Project*, p. 15.

³⁰ H. Trawick Ward, "A Review of Archaeology in the North Carolina Piedmont: A Study of Change," in *The Prehistory of North Carolina*, eds. Mark A. Mathis and Jeffrey J. Crow (Raleigh: North Carolina Division of Archives and History, Department of Cultural Resources, 1983), p. 74. Hereinafter cited as Ward, "A Review."

³¹ Swanton, *Southeastern Indians*, p. 379.

³² H. Trawick Ward, "Social Implications of Storage and Disposal Patterns," in *Structure and Process in Southeastern Archaeology*, eds. Roy S. Dickens, Jr. and H. Trawick Ward (University of Alabama Press, 1985), p. 100.

³³ Roy S. Dickens, Jr., "The Form, Function, and Formation of Garbage-filled Pits on Southeastern Aboriginal Sites: An Archaeobotanical Analysis," in *Structure and Process*, eds. Dickens and Ward, pp. 40-41.

³⁴ Ward, "A Review," p. 74.

³⁵ Ibid., pp. 74-76.

³⁶ Wilson, "Indians of Piedmont," p. 570.

³⁷ Davis and Ward, "Siouan Communities."

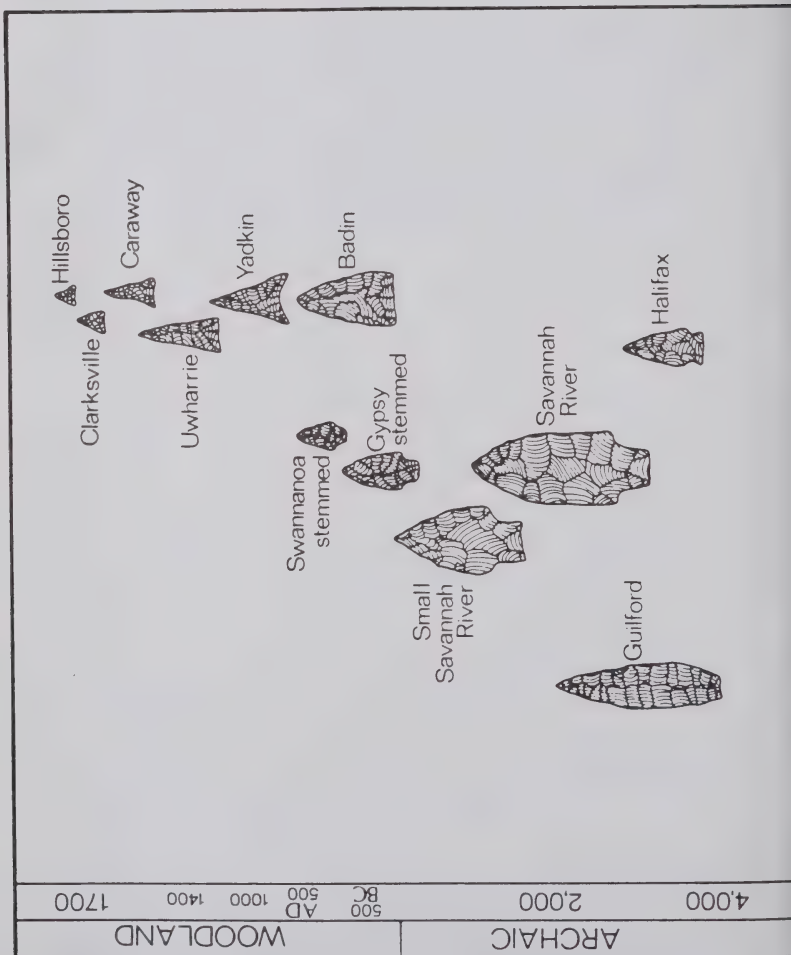
³⁸ H. Trawick Ward and R. P. Stephen Davis, Jr., "Archaeology of the Historic Occaneechi Indians," *Southern Indian Studies* Vols. XXXVI-XXXVII (1988), p. 122.

³⁹ Lawson, *New Voyage*, p. 243-244.

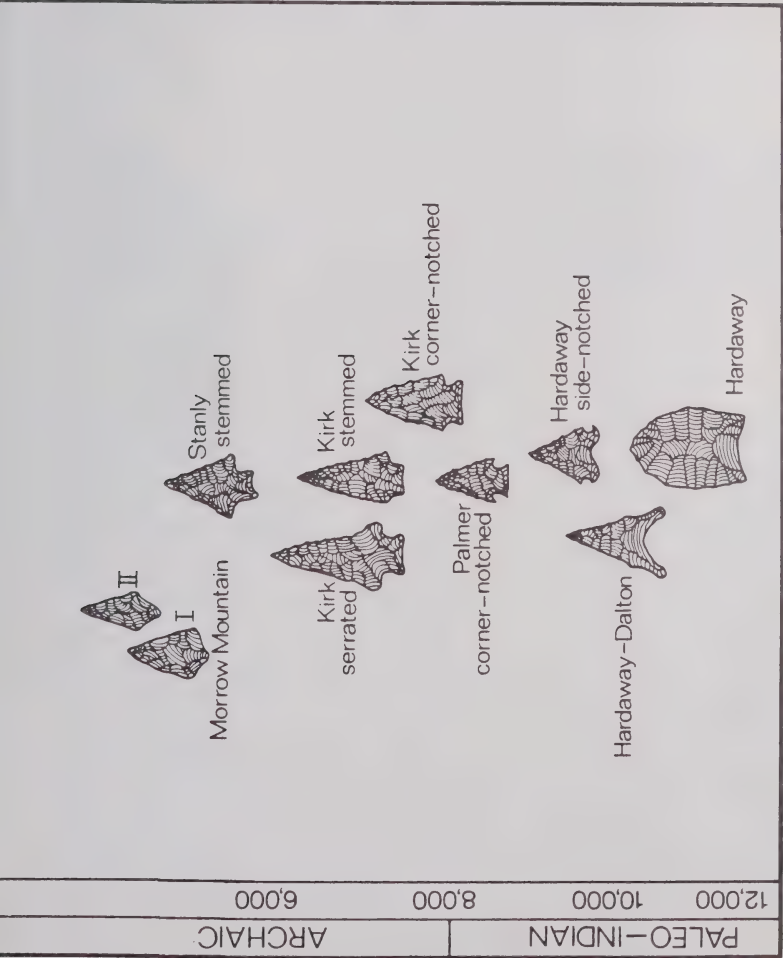
⁴⁰ For a complete report of the 1938 excavations at Lower Saratown see Ernest H. Lewis, "The Sara Indians, 1540-1768: An Ethno-Archaeological Study" (M.A. Thesis, The University of North Carolina, Chapel Hill, 1951).

⁴¹ Joffre L. Coe, "Through a Glass Darkly: An Archaeological View of North Carolina's More Distant Past," in *The Prehistory of North Carolina*, eds. Mathis and Crow, pp. 176-177.

Chronological Chart of Projectile Point Types



in Piedmont North Carolina



The Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

Officers

President	Charles D. Rodenbough, Madison
Vice-President	George A. Atkins, Eden
Recording Secretary	Mrs. Jerri Griffin, Madison
Corresponding Secretary	Michael Perdue, Wentworth
Treasurer	Wayne Parleir, Eden

Directors

Lindley S. Butler	Wentworth
Bob W. Carter	Reidsville
Mrs. Charlotte Cate	Reidsville
Mrs. Lillian Coleman	Reidsville
Mrs. Robbin G. Dodson	Stoneville
Don W. Hoover	High Point
Mrs. Barbara Joyce	Madison
James R. Meador	Reidsville
Mrs. Lib Meador	Reidsville
Mrs. Peggy Osborne	Eden
Mrs. Bettie Pearson	Reidsville
Mrs. Lucy Rankin	Reidsville
V. Siler Rothrock	Reidsville
Mrs. Zelma Scott	Stoneville
Mrs. Sarah Setliff	Reidsville
Rich Seybert	Ruffin
Jamie C. Smith	Stoneville
Mrs. Donna Stowe	Mayodan

P. O. Box 84

Wentworth, North Carolina 27375

Forwarding and Return

Postage Guaranteed

ADDRESS CORRECTION REQUESTED

1990 YES!

N C Collection, UNC Library
Wilson Library, C. B. 3930
Chapel Hill, NC 27599

Non-Profit Organization
BULK RATE
U. S. POSTAGE
PAID
PERMIT NO. 2
WENTWORTH, N. C.

JHR

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy



The Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

VOLUME XV

NUMBER 2

DECEMBER, 1990

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy

The journal is published semiannually in June and December by the Rockingham County Historical Society, Box 84, Wentworth, N.C. 27375. Members of the society, for which the annual dues are \$8.00 for an individual and \$12.00 for a family membership, receive the journal. Single issues may be purchased for \$4.00 per number plus \$1.00 mailing charge.

Editorial Policy

The publication committee is interested in receiving articles on the history and genealogical source materials of Rockingham County and the adjacent area. The historical articles must be well written and thoroughly documented. Genealogical articles should consist of previously unpublished primary source materials pertaining to Rockingham County, such as abstract of local records and edited diaries, letters, or church records. Papers on family history should not be submitted. All copy, including footnotes, should be typed double space. Articles and correspondence should be sent to the editor: Robert W. Carter, Jr., Route 2, Box 762, Reidsville, N.C. 27320.

Cover Illustration

The second Fair Grove Church building was constructed in 1856 and continued in use until the present brick building was built in 1966-67. *Photograph courtesy of Dr. James Elwood Carroll.*

The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy

VOLUME XV

DECEMBER, 1990

NUMBER 2

CONTENTS

A Brief History of Fair Grove United Methodist Church by Michael Perdue	47
Fair Grove Methodist Protestant Church Membership Lists compiled by Robert W. Carter, Jr.	50
The Story of A Lost Fortune Part Two by Hugh Jack Johnson	79
Index for 1990 compiled by Don Hoover	94



TEMPIE HARRIS PRINCE

1904 - 1990

President Rockingham County Historical Society

1965 - 1975

A BRIEF HISTORY OF FAIR GROVE UNITED METHODIST CHURCH

By

Michael Perdue

Fair Grove United Methodist Church is located approximately three miles south of Monroeton in southern Rockingham County on State Road 2426 near the Guilford County line. Fair Grove Church was first featured in the *Journal* in April 1978 when the cemetery census was published.

The history of Fair Grove Church reaches over one hundred and fifty years. Originally, all Methodist congregations in Rockingham County were part of the Methodist Episcopal Church, the first national religious body to be organized in the United States. A division within the Methodist Episcopal Church developed in the 1820s largely due to role of the laity in church administration. Those who believed that the laity deserved a greater role in the formation of church policy organized Union societies to advocate reform within the Methodist Episcopal Church. When those efforts at reform failed, a number of church members in North Carolina withdrew from the Methodist Episcopal Church and organized the Associated Methodist Church in 1828. This body was absorbed into the Methodist Protestant Church two years later when the Methodist Episcopal Church underwent a national division.¹

When the North Carolina Annual Conference of the Associated Methodist Church became part of the Methodist Protestant Church in 1830 efforts were made to organize new congregations throughout the state. In 1831 the Rev. Alson Gray was appointed superintendent of the Guilford Circuit which included Rockingham County. Through the tireless efforts of Rev. Gray a Methodist Protestant society was organized on November 19, 1832 with the purchase of five acres in extreme southern Rockingham County from James Donnell. The trustees who made the purchase were: Robert C. Rankin, Elijah Chilcutt, Robert Simpson and William Simpson of Guilford County and James and Thomas Hopkins of Rockingham County. This was the formal beginning of Fair Grove Church. A log meeting-

house was constructed and regular preaching services were begun there in May 1833. Camp meetings were held at Fair Grove in a nearby arbor beginning in September 1833 at which time 29 people were converted. Camp meetings continued to be held there on into the present century.²

In 1856 a large frame meetinghouse was constructed at Fair Grove and was used for over a century. In that same year Fair Grove Church was placed in the newly created Haw River Circuit which included southern Rockingham and northern Guilford counties. The Haw River Circuit was divided in 1882 with all churches west and southwest of Midway placed in the new Flat Rock Circuit. In 1899 the Haw River Circuit was composed of Fair Grove, Mizpah (org. 1850), Midway (1866), Sandy Cross (c. 1872), and Bethany (1894) in Rockingham County and Friendship and Brown Summit in Guilford County. Sessions of the North Carolina Annual Conference of the Methodist Protestant Church were held at Fair Grove in 1840, 1848, 1863 and 1883.³

Among the many pastors who have served Fair Grove have been: Alson Gray, A.W. Lineberry, T.J. Ogburn, C.E.M. Raper, R.H. Wills, W.D. Reid, J.L. Trolinger, Thomas V. Crouse, and Roy C. Putnam. Those who served as church trustees during the early 1900s included: A.R. Troxler (1838-1919), J.D. Moore (1858-1934), R. F. Troxler, J.T. Richardson, Albert W. Troxler (1870-1937), Madison G. Bevill (1849-1926), and Isaac R. Troxler (1835-1913).⁴

In 1966-67 a brick sanctuary for Fair Grove was constructed adjacent to the 1856 frame building which was soon demolished.⁵

In 1990 Fair Grove and Mizpah churches constitute the Haw River Parish in the Greensboro District of the Western North Carolina Conference of the United Methodist Church. The membership of Fair Grove numbers approximately sixty. The numerous family connections within the congregation, the sylvan setting for the church property and the congregation's dedication to its past make Fair Grove truly a precious link to our early Methodist heritage in Rockingham County.

Notes

¹James Elwood Carroll, *History of the North Carolina Annual Conference of the Methodist Protestant Church*. Greensboro, N.C., McCulloch & Swain Printers, 1939, pp. 11, 12, 14, 15, 23. Dr. Carroll was Historian of the N.C. Conference at the time of merger of the three branches of Methodism into the Methodist Church in 1939. A native of Rockingham County, Dr. Carroll preached his second sermon as a Methodist Protestant minister at Fair Grove in the fall of 1924.

²Minutes of the Sessions of the North Carolina Annual Conference of the Methodist Protestant Church are preserved at the Western North Carolina Conference Archives, Charlotte, N.C., Rockingham County Deed Book 2dO, p. 309, Register of Deeds Office, Wentworth, N.C.; Fair Grove Membership Roll 1848-c. 1900, on file at the church

³Minutes of the N.C. Conference of the Methodist Protestant Church, 1840, 1848, 1856, 1863, 1882, and 1883. (Rev.) J.L. Trolinger, *A Brief Historical Sketch of Fair Grove Methodist Protestant Church, Haw River Circuit, Rockingham County, North Carolina 1830-1931*. Privately published, 1931, a copy of which was made available by Mrs. Dorothy B. Richardson, Brown Summit, N.C.

⁴Trolinger, *Fairgrove History*, p. 17. Rockingham County Deed Books 185, p. 262 and 197, p. 484. Dates for the trustees were collected from gravestone recordings in the Fair Grove Cemetery. For much of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries a wall composed of field stones surrounded the cemetery. This rock wall was quite possibly constructed by local slaves. The old wall was replaced by one of modern design in recent years.

⁵Conversation with Mrs. Barba Troxler Robertson, October 1, 1990.

Appreciation is extended to Mrs. Dorothy B. Richardson, Mrs. Lee Richardson, Mrs. Barba T. Robertson and Dr. J. Elwood Carroll for providing data for this brief historical sketch.

FAIR GROVE METHODIST PROTESTANT CHURCH MEMBERSHIP LISTS

1848 - 1880

Compiled by
Robert W. Carter, Jr.

Introduction

One of the few United Methodist congregations in Rockingham County to have pre-Civil War membership rolls is Fair Grove Church. The church is located in southern Rockingham County near the Guilford County line. Perhaps one half or more of the members of this church from the date of organization have been residents of Guilford County. The membership rolls (or class lists as they were called) are found in two old volumes. The first book contains lists for the years 1848, 1856 and 1858. This book was found many years ago among some papers in the old parsonage at Brown Summit. The second volume contains the rolls for the years: ca. 1860, 1865, 1873, 1876, 1878, ca. 1880, 1882, 1883, 1885, 1889, and 1902. A minister's wife once took this volume and kept it for over twenty years before returning the record to the church. The church is most fortunate to have these old record books.

Several of the rolls are not dated but by close study an approximate date has been assigned to the lists. The lists of black members present a problem. They are not dated and follow dated white lists to which they may not correspond. Because some of the black rolls appear after white lists in the 1870s and still contain the slave owners' name, it is evident that they are not in proper order. For this reason it appears impossible to determine how long after the Civil War blacks continued to belong to Fair Grove. The compiler has taken the liberty of combining several miscellaneous entries from the church records into a single list. The term "Removed" means that the person transferred to another church or moved away. "Withdrawn" means that the person asked that his name be removed from the church roll for various reasons. The other terms used in the remarks are self-evident.

The society wishes to thank the Administrative Council of Fair

Grove United Methodist Church for permission to publish the church class lists. For their special interest and assistance with this project, appreciation is extended to the following people: R. Vance Robertson and his wife Barba Gray Troxler Robertson, Dorothy Beville Richardson, Mrs. Lee Richardson, Bobby Jones, Si Rothrock and Michael Perdue.

CLASS BOOK FAIR GROVE SOCIETY

Isaac Thacker, Class Leader

March 23, 1848

Male Members in Society

NAME	REMARKS
Elizah Chilcutt	
Robert C. Rankin	- Died Nov. 13, 1853
Isaac Thacker	
John C. Rankin	
Peter Simpson, Sen.	- Died March 5, 1857
John Brown	- Removed
Jesse Brown	
Vincent Russum	- Removed
James Gant	
John H. Perkinson	
Hubbard P. Moore	
Hicks Moore	
Green W. Reed	- Removed
Abraham Harris	- Removed 1853
Israel Johnson	- Removed
Josiah T. Wright	- Withdrawn 1860
Barzilla G. Wright	
Jesse Whorton	
Martin B. Weatherby	

NAME	REMARKS
Barnet M. Brown	- Died Feb. 1857
Labin Isely	
Michael Caffee	- Withdrawn under censure
William Walker	
William W. Whorton	
Franklin McBride	- (Name marked out)
Joseph T. Johns	- Died March 13, 185__
Spencer G. Bevill	
Logan Chamberlin	- Dropped
William M. Dilworth	
P.R. Wright	
William Gant	- Removed 1855
William M.D. Work	
William W. Rankin	
Frances D. Chilcutt	
Dr. Rufus K. Denny	
Jacob Balsley	- Removed 1855
Jas. H. Gant	- (Name added between 1848 and 1856)
Fountain Foulkes	- (Name added between 1848 and 1856)
Geo. W. Milaway	- (Name added between 1848 and 1856)

Female Members in Society

March 23, 1848

Jane Bevill	
Mary E. Caffee	
Elizabeth Barrack	- Removed
Susan Flack	- Removed
Eliza A. Denny	
Mary A. Chamberlin	
Mary Johns	- Removed
Amandy Denny	

NAME	REMARKS
Emily J. Gant	
Jane Caffey	- Died 1853
Mary Apple	- Removed 1857
Rachel Lynch	- Removed 1855
Nancy Tate	- Removed 1853
Rachel Walker	
Mary Balsley	- Removed 1855
Margaret Hopkins	- Married W. Moore
Margaret Isley	
Isabella Hopkins	- Died Aug. 30, 1855
Catharine Scott	- Withdrawn 185—
Sophia Davis	- Removed 185__
Louisa Rankin	
Caroline Work	
Louisa Denny	- Died June 20, 1855
Talitha Simpson	
Emily Simpson	
Sobriah Simpson	
Julina Franklin	- Died 1856
Mary C. Dilworth	
Jalian Work	
Martha Scott	- Removed 1855
Mary F. Lucas	
Rachel Small	- (Name added between 1848 and 1856)
Mary Chilcutt	- Died Sept. 12, 1854
Rhoda Chilcutt	
Hannah Simpson	
Martha Simpson	- Died April 1857
Mary Lucus	
Martha Scott	- Died 1847
Jane Wright	
Mary Brown	- Removed
Polly Brown	
Margaret Phibbs	
Jane Davis Bevill	- (Married name added between 1848 and 1856)

NAME	REMARKS
Elizabeth Thacker	- Deceased 1849
Nancy Moore	- Deceased 1855
Sarah Smith	- Removed
Isabella McKinney	- Excommunicated
Nancy Lambeth	- Removed
Priscilla Harris	- Died 1855
Elizabeth Wright	
Caroline W. Rankin	
Sophia Moore	- Died June 27, 1856
Emily Rankin Moore	- Died June 23, 1855 (Married name added between 1848 and 1856)
Mary Work	
Martha Gordon	- Died May 23, 1855
Sarah Harris	- Removed 1853
Jane Lucus	
Margaret Russum	- Removed
Hannah Pitchford	
Emily Strador	- (Name marked out)
Elizabeth Meadows	- Removed 1855
Mary E.T. Reed	- Died 1848
Dorothy B. Weatherby	- Removed
Elizabeth Weatherby	
Emily Walker	
Eliza A. Brown	

Colored Members

Charles	Owner of slave
Mary	R.C. Rankin's
Vilet	Mrs. Hopkins'
	Robert Caffee's (Name added 1848-1856)
Patey	Mrs. Harrell's (Name added 1848-1856)
Daisy	B. Gordon's (Name marked out)

NAME	REMARKS
Brison	Nancy Dilworth's, died Aug. 30, 1856
Harriet	Wharton (Name added 1848-1856)
Eunice	Walker (Name added 1848-1856)
Levin	Rankin (Name added 1848-1856)

Fair Grove Membership

Male Members in Society

June 30, 1856

Elizah Chilcutt	
Isaac Thacker	
John C. Rankin	
Peter Simpson	Died March 1857
Jesse Brown	
James Gant	
Hubbard P. Moore	
Hicks Moore	
Josiah T. Wright	
Barzillia G. Wright	
Jesse Wharton	
Martin B. Weatherby	
Barnet M. Brown	Died Feb. 1857
William Walker	- Died 1857
William W. Wharton	- Withdrawn
Spencer G. Bevill	
William M. Dilworth	
William M.D. Work	
P.R. Wright	
William W. Rankin	
Francis D. Chilcutt	

NAME	REMARKS
Dr. Rufus H. Denny	
James W. Gant	
Fountain Foulkes	
Geroge W. Milaway	
Laben Isely	
Logan Chamberlin	- Dropped
William Gant	- (Name added between 1856 and 1860)
Pleasant Hopkins	- (Name added between 1856 and 1860)
Samuel S. Gant	- (Name added between 1856 and 1860)
James D. Small	- (Name added between 1856 and 1860)
Alexander Jones	- (Name added between 1856 and 1860)

Female Members in Society

June 30, 1856

Hannah Simpson	
Martha Simpson	Died April 1857
Rhoda Milaway	
Mary Lucas	
Jane Wright	
Polly Brown	
Margaret Phibbs	
Jane Bevell	
Elizabeth Wright	
Caroline W. Rankin	
Mary Work	
Jane Ramsey	
Hannay Pitchford	
Elizabeth Weatherby	
Emily Walker	

NAME	REMARKS
Elisa A. Brown	- Removed
Jane Bevill	
Mary E. Caffey	
Eliza A. Denny	
Amanda Denny	
Emily J. Gant	
Mary Apple	- Removed
Rachel Lynch	- (Name marked out)
Rachel Walker	
Margaret Hopkins	- Married Wilson Moore
Margaret Isely	
Louisa Rankin	
Caroline Work	
Talitha Simpson	- Removed
Emily Simpson	- Removed
Sobria Simpson	- Removed
Julina Franklin	- Died 185__
Mary C. Dilworth	- Died Feb. 2, 1858
Jalian Work	
Mary F. Lucus	
Mary A. Chamberlin	- Dropped
Frances T. Hopkins	- (Name added between 1856 and c. 1860)
Martha P. Simpson	- (Name added between 1856 and c. 1860)
Sarah R. Simpson	- (Name added between 1856 and c. 1860)
Rachel Small	- (Name added betweel 1856 and c. 1860)

Male Membership List

May 1858

Elizah Chilcutt
Isaac Thacker
John C. Rankin

NAME	REMARKS
James Gant	
Hubbard P. Moore	
Hicks Moore	
Josiah T. Wright	
Barzillia G. Wright	
Jesse Whorton	
Martin B. Weatherby	
William W. Whorton	
Spencer G. Bevill	
William M. Dilworth	
William M.D. Work	
William W. Rankin	
Francis D. Chilcutt	
Dr. Rufus K. Denny	
James H. Gant	
Fountain Foulks	
George W. Milaway	
Labin Isely	
William Gant	
Pleasant Hopkins	
Samuel S. Gant	
James D. Small	
P.R. Wright	
Alexander Jones	
Jesse Brown	
Robert G. Coe	

Female Membership List of May 1858

Hannah Simpson
Rhoda Milaway
Mary Work
Jane Wright
Polly Brown
Margaret Phibbs
Jane Bevill

NAME	REMARKS
Elizabeth Wright	
Caroline W. Rankin	
Mary F. Work	
Jane Ramsey	
Hannah Pitchford	
Emily Walker	
Elisa A. Denny	
Jane Bevill	
Emily J. Gant	
Mary E. Caffey	
Elizabeth Weatherby	
Amanda Denny	
Rachel Walker	
Margaret Moore	
Margaret Isely	
Louisa Rankin	
Caroline Work	
Jalian Work	
Mary Lucas	
Frances J. Hopkins	
Rachel	
Rachel Small	
Mary W. Lewis	
Jane M. Coe	
Elisabeth J. Dabs	
Mary J. Lewis	

Fair Grove Membership List

Undated List ca. 1860

Males in Society

Elizah Chilcutt	
Isaac Thacker	
John C. Rankin	- Withdrawn
Jesse Brown	- Died 1865

NAME	REMARKS
James Gant	
Hubbard P. Moore	- Died April 9, 1865
Hicks Moore	- Died March 25, 1865
Josiah T. Wright	- Withdrawn 1860
Barzilla G. Wright	
Jesse Warton	- Died Sept. 6, 1871
Martin B. Weatherby	
William W. Wharton	- Withdrawn 1859
Spencer G. Bevill	
William M. Dilworth	- Withdrawn 1869
William M.D. Work	
William W. Rankin	
Francis D. Chilcutt	- Removed
Dr. Rufus K. Denny	
James H. Gant	- Died Feb. 26, 1863 in Richmond
George W. Milaway	
Fountain Folks	
Laban Isely	- Removed 1861
Logan Chamberlin	- Dropped for non-attendance 1858
William Gant	- Removed 1869
Pleasant Hopkins	
Samuel S. Gant	
James D. Small	
P.R. Wright	- Died 1862
Alexander Jones	
Joseph P. Coe	- Removed 1859
Robert G. Coe	
Levi Lewis	
Wilson Q. Moore	- Died Feb. 5, 1863
Hardy Melvin	
Alfred Work	- Died April 22, 1862
Robert W. Lucas	
William D. Wright	
Wodson D. Grifith	- Killed in Battle July 1863
Patrick H. Lewis	- Killed in Battle July 1863

NAME

REMARKS

William Moore
Samuel B. Smith

Undated List ca. 1860

Females

Hannah Simpson

Rhoda Milaway

Mary Work

Jane Wright

Polly Brown

Margaret Phibbs

- Died Dec. 3, 1862 about 93
years of age

Jane Bevill

Elizabeth Wright

Caroline W. Rankin

Mary F. Works

- Died May 15, 1862

Jane Ramsey

Hannay Pitchford

Elizabeth Weatherby

Emely Walker Grifith

- (Married name added between
1860 and 1865)

Elisa A. Brown

- Removed 1858

Jane Bevill

Mary E. Caffy Lewis

- (Married name added between
1860 and 1865)

Eliza A. Denny

- Removed by letter

Emely J. Gant

Amanda Denny

Rachel Walker

Margaret Moore

Margaret Isely

- Murdered Dec. 1, 1859

Louisa Rankin

Caroline Work

Jalian Work

- Died May 21, 1862

NAME	REMARKS
Mary Lucas	
Mary A. Chamberlin	- Dropped for non-attendance 1858
Frances J. Hopkins	
Rachel Small	
Nancy F. Coe	- Removed 1859
Lavina W. Lewis	
Mary J. Lewis	
Jane M. Coe	
Elizabeth J. Dabbs	
Catharine Rickets	
Martha A. Gant	
Mary Gant	
Malinda Chamberlin	
Sarah J. Moore	
Mary J. Thomas	
Rebekah J. Waggoner	- Withdrawn 1862
Julia A. Dilworth	
Emily Weatherby	
Nancy Ann Lee	- Removed 1861
Elisa Lewis	
Frances Smith	
Celestia V. Rankin Watson	- (Married name added between 1860 and 1865)
Rachel Linch	
Nancy Parrish	

Fair Grove List Made in 1865

Male Members

Elizah Chilcutt	C(lass) L(eader)
Isaac Thacker	
Jno. C. Rankin	- Withdrawn 1870
Jas. Gant	
Barzillia G. Wright	
Jesse Wharton	- Died September 6, 1871

NAME	REMARKS
Martin B. Weatherby	
Spencer G. Bevill	
Wm. M. Dilworth	- Withdrawn 1868
Wm. M. Work	- Withdrawn 1870
Wm. W. Rankin	
Frances D. Chilcutt	
Rufus K. Denny	- Withdrawn 1870
Geo. W. Milloway	
Wm. Gant	- Removed 1869
Pleasant Hopkins	
Sam. S. Gant	
Jas. D. Small	- Died March 15, 1871
Alexander Jones	
Robert G. Coe	- Removed 1867
Levi Lewis	- Withdrawn 1867 with charges against him
Hardy Melvin	
Robert W. Lucas	
W.D. Wright	- Withdrawn 1872
Will Moore	
Sam B. Smith	
Jno. Chamberlin	
Fountain Foulks	- Withdrawn 1872
J.T. Brown	- Removed 1865
Thos. F. Rankin	
John R. Newel	- Withdrawn 1871
J. W. Hucherson	- (Name added between 1865 and 1873)
R.C. Bevel	- (Name added between 1865 and 1873)
Madison Bevil	- (Name added between 1865 and 1873)

Female Members in 1865 List

Hannah Simpson	- Removed 1871, Died April 1872
----------------	---------------------------------

NAME	REMARKS
Rhoda Milloway	
Mary Work	- Died Jan. 3, 1873
Jane Wright	
Polly Brown	- Removed 1873
Jane Bevill	
Elizabeth Wright	
Caroline W. Rankin	
Jane Ramsey	
Hannah Pitchford	
Elizabeth Weatherby	
Emily Griffith	
Jane Bevill	
Mary E. Lewis	
Emily Gant Richardson	- (Married name added between 1865 and 1873)
Amamda Gamble	- Removed
Rachel F. Walker Mebane	- (Married name added between 1865 and 1873)
Margaret Moore	
Margaret Isely	- Murdered Dec. 1, 1859
Louisa Rankin	
Caroline Work	
Mary Lucas	
Frances J. Hopkins Moore	- (Married name added between 1865 and 1873)
Rachel Small	
Lavina M. Lewis	- Died March 2, 1871
Jane W. Coe	- Removed 1867
Elizabeth J. Dabbs	- Removed 1867
Catharine Rickets	
Martha A. Gant	
Mary Gant	
Melinda Chamberlin	
Sarah J. Moore	
Mary J. Lemons	
Julia A. Dilworth	
Emily D. Weatherby	- Withdrawn 1868

NAME	REMARKS
Mariah L. Cryer Rankin	- (Married name added between 1865 and 1873) Removed 1869
Rhoda S. Hopkins	
Emily Pierce	
Louisa Elizabeth Lewis	
Eliza Ann Lewis	- Died May 12, 1873
Mary J. Lewis	- Died September 24, 1871
Frances Smith	- Died September 7, 1872
Celestia V. Watson	
Rachel Lynch	- Removed 1867
Nancy Parish	
Rhoda Lemmonds	- Withdrawn 1868 (Name added after 1865)
H.V. Miller	- Removed 1868 (Name added after 1865)
Mary J. Dilworth	- (Name added after 1865 and marked out) Revised Oct. 1867 by A.W. Lineberry.
Sarah J. Hutcherson	- (Added) Revised Oct. 13, 1868 by Rev. Alson Gray.
Sarah Kernodle	- Removed (Name added after 1865)
Nancy J. Dilworth	- (Added) Revised Oct. 28, 1869 by Rev. Alson Gray.
Cornelia Ann Troxler	- (Added) 1871
Sally Emily Troxler	- (Added) 1871

COLORED MEMBERS
(Undated List, maybe out of place)

Mary	- Hopkins
Patsy	- Harrol
Harriet	- J. Wharton
Eunice	- Griffith
Levin	- Rankin

NAME	REMARKS
Rachel	- Coe
Sina	- Climer
James Kelly	- (Free)
Sarah	- Weatherby
Emiline	- Weatherby
Jubiler	- Dilworth
Catharine	- Rankin
Cena	- Waddleton (Watlington)
Caroine	- McGibbony
Ada	- Whitsett
Elsabeth	- Climer
Emily	- Bevill
Caroline	- Thacker
Ellen	- Thacker
Frances	- Thacker
Nathaniel	- Thacker
Hardy	- Thacker
Isaac	- Thacker
Jacob	- Thacker
Henry	- Thacker
Caswell	- Parker
Edmond	- Brown
Henry	- Donnell
Julia	- Rankin
Martha	- Vaughn
Tempy	- Vaughn (Name marked out)
Harriet	- Vaughn
Charles	- Maynard
Patsy	- Maynard
Hannah	- Maynard
William	- Hopkins
Dick	- Whitsett
William	- Whitsett

Class Book For Fair Grove

Revised Oct. 18, 1873

Male Members

NAME	REMARKS
Elizah Chilcutt	- Deceased 1874
Isaac Thacker	
James Gant	
B.G. Wright	- Deceased
Martin B. Weatherby	
Spencer G. Bevil	- Deceased
W.W. Rankin	
F.D. Chilcutt	- Removed 1871
G.W. Millaway	
Pleasant Hopkins	
S.S. Gant	
Alexander Jones	
Hardy Melvin	
Robert W. Lucus	
William Moore	
Samuel Smith	- Died Oct. 17, 1875
Thomas F. Rankin	
John W. Hucherson	- Removed
R.C. Bevil	
Madison Bevil	
A.R. Troxler	
G.R. Troxler	
G.W. Malcom	
John A. Richardson	
Joel Fogulman	- Died July 18, 1876
H.L.P. Watson	
S.L. Lineberry	
J.A. Bevill	
J.W. Malcum	
A.C. Hopkins	- Deceased
A.M. Rankin	

NAME

REMARKS

Wm. R. Rankin
 Thomas R. Huffins
 John D. Huffins
 John F. Chilcutt

- Removed 1878

Females

Rhoda Millaway
 Jane Wright
 Jane Bevil
 Elizabeth Wright
 Caroline Rankin
 Jane Ramsey
 Hannah Pitchford
 Elizabeth Weatherby
 Emily McNeely
 Jane Bevil
 Mary E. Lewis
 Margaret Moore
 Louisa Rankin
 Caroline Work
 Mary Lucas
 Francis J. Moore
 Rachal Small
 Martha A. Gant Fogleman

- Deceased

- Deceased

- Died April 13, 1875

- Deceased

- (Married name added between 1873 and 1876)

Mary Vanstory
 Sarah J. Bevil
 Mary J. Lemmons
 Julia A. Dilworth
 Rhoda L. Hopkins
 Louisa E. Lewis
 Celista V. Watson
 Nancy Parish
 Nancy J. Dilworth Woollen

- Deceased

- Deceased

- (Married name added between 1873 and 1876)

NAME	REMARKS
Cornelia Ann Troxler	
Sally E. Troxler	
Mary Dilworth	
Julia F. Lineberry	
Nancey C. Beville	
Nancey E. Denney	
Mary L. Huffines	
Nancy E. Work	
M.J. Griffin	
M.C. Wade Rankin	- (Married name added between 1873 and 1876)
Sarah E. Jones	
Nannie E. Beville	
M.J. Beville	
Harriet Work	- Dropped
E.J. Work	

Class Book For Fair Grove

Revised July 20, 1876

Male Members

Isaac Thacker	
James Gant	
B.G. Wright	- Died June 2, 1877
Martin B. Weatherby	
Spencer G. Beville	- Deceased
Wm. W. Rankin	
Geo. W. Millaway	
Pleasant Hopkins	
S.S. Gant	
J. A. Jones	
Hardy Melvin	
Robert W. Lucas	

NAME	REMARKS
William Moore	
Thomas F. Rankin	
John W. Hutcherson	- Transferred
R.C. Beville	
Madison J. Beville	
A.R. Troxler	
G.R. Troxler	
G.W. Malcum	
John A. Richardson	
H.L.P. Watson	
S.L. Lineberry	
J.A. Beville	
J.W. Malcum	
A.C. Hopkins	- Died
A.M. Rankin	
Wm. R. Rankin	
Thomas R. Huffines	
John D. Huffines	
David L. Totten	- From Mispah
I.R. Troxler	
J.T. Woollen	
W.H.G. Wharton	- 3rd Sabbath Sept. 1877
John A. Lucas	- 3rd Sabbath Sept. 1877
Lewis C. Huffines	
Next 17 names received on 3rd Sabbath September 1878	
J.L.F.Reid	- do
J.A.N. Reid	- do
Jef D. Huffines	- do
Geo. P. Hopkins	- do
J.D. Moore	- do
Alex Jones	- do
Geo. W. Christopher	- do
James D. Huffines	- do
Marion Mitchell	- do
A.L. Moore	- do
James Richardson	- do

NAME	REMARKS
John Christopher	-
Alex M. Troxler	do
Martin Hopkins	do
J.M. Medley	do
John T. Hopkins	do
John A. Mebane	- From Presby. Church

Females

Rhoda Millaway	
Jane Wright	- Removed, Lees Chapel September 16, 1857
Jane Beville	
Elizabeth R. Wright	- Decest
Caroline W. Rankin	
Jane Ramsey	
Hannah Pitchford	
Elizabeth Weatherby	
Jane Beville	
Mary E. Whitter	
Margart G. Moore	- Decest
Louisa E. Rankin	
Francis J. Moore	
Rachel Small	
Martha A. Fogulman	
Mary Vanstory	
Sarah J. Beville	
Mary J. Lemons	- Died Feb. 15, 1879
Julia A. Dilworth	
Rhoda S. Hopkins	
Celestia V. Watson	
Nancy Parrish	
Nancy A. Woollen	
Cornelia A. Troxler	
Sallie E. Troxler	
Mary Dilworth Lucas	- Married name added between 1876 and 1878

NAME	REMARKS
Julia F. Lineberry	
Nancy C. Beville	
Nancy E. Denney	
Mary C. Huffines	
Nancy E. Work	
M.J. Griffin	
Mary C. Rankin	- May 15, 1875
Sarah E. Jones	
Nannie E. Beville	
M.J. Beville	
Caroline Work	
Mary Lucas	
S.M. Totten	- Transferred from Mispah
Swannanoa Harris	
Catherine Troxler	- Feb. 17, 1877
Mary Millaway	- _____ 1877
Fannie B. Wade	- " "
Martha M.E. Thomas	- 3rd Sabbath September 1877
Rhoda C. Christopher	- " " " "
Elizabeth J. Troxler	
Sarah A.S. Huffines	

Next 13 names received 3rd
Sabbath in September 1878

Julia A. Reid	- do
N. Bell Huffines	- do
Sallie Richardson	- do
Louisa A. Dillworth	- do
Louisa F. Beville	- do
Lowzetta Whittington	- do
Nancy Millaway	- do
Mattie Milloway	- do
Sarah Wynick	- do
Nannie L. Hopkins	- do
Rhoda A. Hopkins	- do
Virginia E. Hopkins	- do

NAME	REMARKS
Mary E. Lewis	- September 1878
Rachel Mebane	
Cornelia Fancett	
Bettie Brown	

Class Book For Fair Grove Church

Revised 1878

Male Members

Isaac Thacker	
James Gant	
Martin B. Weatherby	
Spencer B. Beville	- Died April 1881
Wm. W. Rankin	
Geo. W. Milloway	
Pleasant Hopkins	
S.S. Gant	
J.A. Jones	
Hardy Melvin	
Robert W. Lucas	
Wm. Moore	
Thomas F. Rankin	
John W. Hutcherson	- Removed 1880
R.C. Beville	
M.J. Beville	
A.R. Troxler	
G.R. Troxler	
G.W. Malcum	
John A. Richardson	
J.L.F. Reid	
J.A.N. Reid	- Died Jan. 1882
Jef D. Huffines	
Geo. P. Hopkins	
J.D. Moore	
Alex Jones	

NAME	REMARKS
G.W. Christopher	
James D. Huffins	- Died 1881
Marion Mitchell	- Removed 1881
A.L. Moore	
James Richardson	
John Christopher	
Alex M. Troxler	
Martin Hopkins	
J.M. Medley	
Jno. T. Hopkins	
Jno. A. Mebane	
H.L.P. Watson	
S.L. Lineberry	
J.A. Beville	
J.M. Malcum	
A.C. Hopkins	- Died Dec. 4, 1879
A.M. Rankin	
Wm. M. Rankin	
Thom R. Huffins	
John D. Huffins	
David L. Totten	
I.R. Troxler	
J.T. Woollen	
W.H.P. Whorton	
Jno. A. Lucas	
Lewis C. Huffins	
James W. Hopkins	- Removed to Mispah
Rev. R.R. Prather	- Died 1881
D.L. Hopkins	
J.C. Rankin	

Female Members

Rhoda Milloway	
Jane Beville	
Elizabeth R. Wright	- Died Feb. 14, 1882
Caroline W. Rankin	- Remarks, removed

NAME	REMARKS
Jane Ramsey	- Died June 14, 1882
Hannah Pitchford	- Deceased
Elizabeth Weatherby	
Jane Beville	
Mary E. Whitter	
Margret S. Moore	
Louisa E. Rankin	
Francis J. Moore	
Rachel Small	
Martha A. Fogulman	
Mary Vanstory	
Sarah J. Beville	
Mary J. Lemmons	- Died Feb. 15, 1879
Julia A. Dillworth	
Rhoda S. Hopkins	
Celestia V. Watson	
Nancy Parish	
Nancy J. Wollen	
Carnelia A. Troxler	
Sallie E. Troxler	
Mary Lucas	
Julia F. Lineberry	
Nancy C. Beville	
Nancy E. Denny	
Mary S. Huffines	
Nancy E. Work	
Mary J. Griffin	
Mary C. Rankin	
Sarah E. Jones	
Nannie E. Beville	
M.J. Beville	
Caroline Work	
Sarah R. Totten	
Swannanoa Harris	
Catherine Troxler	
Mary C. Millaway	
Fannie B. Wade	

NAME	REMARKS
Martha M.E. Thomas	- Removed
Rhoda C. Christopher	
Elizabeth J. Troxler	
Emely J. Richardson	
Nannie L. Isly	
Rhoda A. Hopkins	
Virginia E. Hopkins	
Nannie Milloway	
Sarah E. Jones	- (Name marked out)

Colored Members

Undated list probably from early 1860s

NAME	OWNERS NAME	REMARKS
Charles	J.C. Rankins	Died June 3, 1863
Mary	Mrs. Hopkins	
Pathey	Mrs. Harrels	
Harriet	J. Whortons	
Eunice	J. Whortons	
Levin	W. Rankins	
Rachel	Coe's	
Susan Caroline	Rankins	
Sina	Climers	
James Kelly	-	(Free)
Sary	Weatherbys	
Jubler	Dilworths	
Emaline	Weatherbys	

Class Book For Fair Grove Church
Undated List ca. 1880

(Female List)

NAME	REMARKS
Rhoda Milloway	
Jane Bevill	
Elizabeth R. Wright	- Died Feb. 14, 1882
Caroline Rankin	
Jane Ramsey	- Died June 14, 1882
Hannah Pitchford	- Deceased Jan. 1881
Elizabeth Weatherby	
Jane Beville	
Mary E. Whitter	
Margaret S. Moore	- Died Aug. 17, 1881
Louisa E. Rankin	
Francis J. Moor	
Rachael Small	
Martha A. Fogleman	
Mary Vanstory	
Sarah J. Bevill	
Julia A. Dilworth	
Rhoda S. Hopkins	
Celestie V. Watson	
Nancy Parrish	
Nancy J. Woolen	
Curonelia A. Troxler	
Sarah E. Troxler	
Mary Lucas	
Julia F. Lineberry	
Nancy C. Bevill	
Nancy E. Denny	
Emily Richardson	
Mary S. Huffines	
Nancy J. Work	
Mary J. Griffin	
Mary C. Rankin	
Sarah E. Jones	

NAME	REMARKS
Nancy E. Beville	
M.J. Beville	
Caroline Work	
Sarah R. Totten	
Swan Harris	- Removed
Catharine Troxler	
Mary C. Milloway	
Fannie B. Wade	
Rhoda C. Christopher	
Elizabeth J. Troxler	
Emily A. Richardson	
Nannie L. Isely Christman	- (Married name added ca. 1880 and 1882)
Rhoda A. Hopkins	
Virginia E. Hopkins	
Nannie Milloway	
Mattie A. Milloway	
Fannie R. Mebane	

Colored Members

Undated list, maybe out of place

NAME	OWNERS NAME
Sina	- Rankin
James Madison	- Patrick
Sarah	- Patrick
Mary	- Patrick
Tempy	- Vaughn
Charles Wesley	- Mateer
Pinckney	- Mateer
Melissa	- Webb
Chesson	- Whitsett
Milton	- Wright
Rosetta	- Watson
Mariah	- Thacker
Mary	- Watson (or Wharton)
Elsabeth	- Young

(To be continued)

THE STORY OF A LOST FORTUNE

Part Two

By
Hugh Jack Johnson

Introduction

The Story of a Lost Fortune published in the June, 1987 issue of *The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy* caught the attention of Jeff Deitch, a researcher looking for his family connections to the Carpenter legacies. Mr. Deitch read the article at the Library of Congress in Washington, D.C. He wrote the author, "It clears up a lot of things. I wish the people in my family had read your story years ago." Mr. Deitch, fascinated by the drama and mystery of these people, continues his research.

Donna Jo Wright, another investigator into this two hundred year old mystery traveled to England for her information. She shares her findings with others interested in the Carpenters, Fauntleroy's and Shackelford's. She writes "I will not stop my quest. If I live long enough I may solve this thing yet."

The author is much indebted to Mr. Deitch of Alexandria, Virginia and to Mrs. Wright of Columbus, Georgia for their information included in the story. This additional material plus the *Carpenter papers*, family tradition and more research by the author makes for the most comprehensive account yet put together about the legacies of four young brothers who died tragically two-hundred years ago.

Part Two

In 1880, Nancy Bushrod Brown Johnson filed a claim for her share of the much sought after Carpenter Fortune left to her family in England during the American Revolution.¹ Nancy's claim failed because she supported the Brown-Johnson tradition that when her grandmother re-married in 1781 she used an alias instead of her real name. Attorneys for the Carpenter estate in England refused to accept this theory saying that Nancy Brown Johnson's statements were entirely different from anything they had on hand.² But today, researchers

are beginning to wonder if the Brown-Johnson tradition may be true after all.³

Nancy Brown Johnson maintained that her grandmother, Nancy Fauntleroy married Dr. Nathaniel Carpenter in March, 1768 at Williamsburg, Virginia.⁴ Dr. Carpenter, a Devonshire physician, arrived in King and Queen County, Virginia from England in 1766 as collector of His Majesty's customs.⁵ Nancy Fauntleroy had four sons by Nathaniel Carpenter: Coryndon born 1771, Nathaniel, Jr. c1774, William Fauntleroy 1775 and Bushrod c1776.⁶ About 1777, due to the rebellion in the colonies, Dr. Nathaniel, now in his forties, fearing for the safety of his young family moved west into Botetourt County, Virginia where he died in April, 1778.⁷ Around 1780, Nancy Fauntleroy Carpenter with her four boys returned to King and Queen County where on May 12, 1781 she married Robinson Shackelford in Christ Church.⁸ Nancy married Shackelford under the name "Ann Bushrod Carpenter", probably to disguise the fact that she had been the wife of a British tax collector. Since Nancy at times had been called "Ann" and since her father, Capt. Fauntleroy's first name was "Bushrod", Nancy chose for her alias "Ann Bushrod Carpenter".⁹

In 1782 Robinson and Ann Bushrod Carpenter Shackelford had a daughter Sally born in Virginia. In 1788 they left King and Queen County and settled in Rockingham County, North Carolina, bringing with them their daughter Sally Shackelford and Ann's youngest son by Dr. Carpenter, Bushrod Carpenter.¹⁰ Here, they bought a mill (Parrott's Upper Mill) and one hundred acres on Birchfield Fork of Wolf Island Creek.¹¹ In 1791 Shackelford borrowed money on the property from Humprey Garrett of King and Queen County, Virginia.¹² In 1792 Robinson Shackelford bought ninety acres of land in Caswell County, North Carolina,¹³ and forfeited his land and mill in Rockingham. The family moved to Caswell County where they became destitute. Bushrod Carpenter went back to his brothers in Virginia.¹⁴

Bushrod's mother began writing her son Coryndon Carpenter in Virginia asking him for money. Coryndon had sailed to England in 1792 and received his share of eleven hundred fifty pounds which was part of a legacy left the brothers by their uncle Coryndon Carpenter Esq. of Launceston, Cornwall. Since Coryndon's father, Dr. Nathaniel, was dead, Coryndon would share his father's estate plus whatever Uncle Coryndon Esq. had left him. As each of the brothers

became of age they were to go to England and receive their share of the legacies. While Coryndon was in England picking up his money, his unmarried aunt Sibella Carpenter made her will and died in 1792. Sibella emphatically stipulated that each brother was to come personally for his inheritance and "My Executrices are to keep these legacies in their hands until they do come!" Whether the amount Coryndon received included monies from his father's estates plus Uncle Coryndon Esq. and Aunt Sibella's estates remains a mystery. One thing for sure, the number of legacies left to the four brothers had increased dramatically.¹⁵

In 1795, Coryndon Carpenter (back in Virginia) replied to his mother's request for money. He wrote: "It is out of my power to comply with your request to send you money." Coryndon cited business losses as an excuse but assured his mother that she was due money in England and as soon as Nathaniel Jr. returned she would indeed get all that was due her.¹⁶ Coryndon's business losses were most likely due to his drinking and heavy betting at the game of whist which he frequently engaged in at Warner Hall in Gloucester County, Virginia.¹⁷ On April 12, 1797 Coryndon's step-father Robinson Shackelford wrote Coryndon a letter asking him about the money. Coryndon responded by writing to his mother, again assuring her that she would receive the money due her. In this letter Coryndon tells of his wife Lucy having a baby girl who dies within ten days after being born.¹⁸ In 1794 Coryndon Carpenter served in the 14th Brigade Artillery in Gloucester County, Virginia. In 1795 he was engaged in the shipping business at North River in Mathews County, Virginia. In 1797 he again sailed for England and neither he nor the vessel was ever head of again. Coryndon's wife Lucy later married a Jasper Clayton and then died without issue.¹⁹

The next brother to sail for England was William Fauntleroy Carpenter but before he could spend his part he was killed in a duel. On August 20th, 1796, William went into the Virginia Coffee House in London where he engaged himself in a heated argument with a fellow Virginian, John Pride. William (naturally), argued for the recently signed Jay Treaty of 1795 which contained a provision that American claims to property in England be held valid after the War of Independence. John Pride was equally hot against anybody who stood up for the treaty. A challenge followed and early the next morning the parties with dueling pistols, and three seconds, met at a place called

"The Grove" in Hyde Park. The seconds did everything in their power to stop the affair but to no avail. At five paces Carpenter fired and missed about the same time Pride's shot had effect and William fell instantly. His opponent then threw down his pistol and he and the seconds walked away. Pride's bullet entered William's body just below the right arm and passed through the body where it lodged under the skin on William's left side. Michael Ryan, a witness to the incident was bathing in the Serpentine River below "The Grove" and saw what was about to occur. Jumping into nothing but his top shirt he and several companions (who went likewise naked) ran towards the men in the grove. Ryan and his companions, assisted by some soldiers, put the wounded man into a coach and took him back to Richardson's Hotel. They helped get William inside and then they all departed quickly. A Dr. Rush was called and he extracted the ball from William's side but gave no hope of the young man's recovery. William told the doctor he had an affair of honor with a gentleman but would not give the gentleman's name. William Fauntleroy Carpenter died the next day at age twenty-one. His last wish was that neither his opponent nor the seconds be prosecuted. A Coroner's Jury returned a verdict of willful murder but there was no one to charge because after bringing William home all the parties disappeared. On August 24th, William's body was conveyed from Richardson's Hotel to the burial ground of St. George's Hanover Square where it was placed in a vault.²⁰ It was a year later before his remains were returned to Virginia and his mother and sister in North Carolina learned of his fate.²¹

In 1796 the Shackelfords were living in the Caswell District²² of Caswell County about eight miles from the Rockingham County line. Robinson and Ann Shackelford had two sons born in North Carolina: John born before 1797 and Richard born after 1797 in his mother's 50th year.²³

The third brother to go to England for his inheritance was Nathaniel Carpenter, Jr., a mariner. He received his share in 1797 but was killed in an accident at sea the same year.²⁴ It is evident (by Coryndon's letters) that upon entering the port at North River, Nathaniel contacted Coryndon but whether he ever wrote his mother or not remains unknown.

The fourth and youngest brother Bushrod Carpenter returned to Virginia from North Carolina about 1793. In 1795 he was living with

Mr. Tomker, a farmer, in Mathews County, Virginia.²⁵ In 1797 Bushrod wrote his mother a letter saying "Give my love to Mr. Shackelford and sister Sally and my little brother."²⁶ This was the last time they heard from Bushrod. A Mr. Grant who had favored the boys by delivering their letters to and fro told Ann Shackelford that "Bushrod was going to England to see what could be done."²⁷ Evidently Bushrod was going for his share and to find out what happened to the money due his mother. Since Bushrod and Coryndon both disappeared in 1797 it is a likely possibility that they sailed together and were both lost at sea. Be this so then the mystery as to what happened to the Carpenter brothers is solved. William Fauntleroy died in a duel and Coryndon, Nathaniel Jr. and Bushrod died at sea. They all died within two years and they all died in their twenties. They left as their next of kin their mother Ann Shackelford, their half-sister Sally Shackelford and two half-brothers John and Richard Shackelford, all living in Caswell County, North Carolina.²⁸ Coryndon was survived by his wife Lucy Carpenter of Virginia.²⁹

Why the brothers (when in England) never spoke to relatives about their mother living in North Carolina is yet another mystery. However, there are no records to show that the brothers ever visited kinfolk in England. There is evidence that their relatives in England knew very little about the brothers and practically nothing about their mother. For instance in 1840, limited grant of administration on the estate of Bushrod Carpenter was given to Jane Rowe (Bushrod's cousin) of Cornwall through a deposition sworn by her in which she stated that Dr. Nathaniel Carpenter died in Virginia in 1778 leaving a widow Ann Bushrod Carpenter.³⁰ "Ann Bushrod Carpenter" was the alias used by Nancy Fauntleroy Carpenter when she married Robinson Shackelford in 1781. Jane Rowe implied that the doctor's first wife Nancy Fauntleroy died and then the doctor married an Ann Bushrod. There is no record of Nancy Fauntleroy's death and no record has been found of Dr. Nathaniel marrying an Ann Bushrod. If this had been so then who was the mother of the four boys, Nancy Fauntleroy or Ann Bushrod? If the mother was Ann Bushrod then Nancy Fauntleroy would have had to die within two years after marrying Dr. Nathaniel. These questions were never answered until Nancy Bushrod Brown Johnson filed her claim in 1880. Yet it wasn't until 1988 that a researcher³¹ began to wonder if the Brown-Johnson tradition might be right after all - Nancy Fauntleroy and Ann

Bushrod were one and the same!

Unaware of the controversy her two names would cause in later years, Ann Bushrod Carpenter Shackelford (born Ann/Nancy Fauntleroy) lived on in Caswell County fearing punishment by the new government for her relationship to Dr. Carpenter. She instilled this fear into her daughter Sally who lived obsessed with it into her old age.³² Was this fear of Ann's so strong as to prevent her from coming forward to claim her inheritance? She never should have counted on an irresponsible son who for five years kept promising her money was on the way but never arrived. Time turned hope into despair and the Shackelfords became recluses all but forgotten in the farmlands of Caswell County.

In 1815 Ann Shackelford's daughter Sally married James Brown (1780-c1866)³³ a farmer in Caswell County. By 1820 Sally and her husband were living in Caswell with their four children: Nancy Bushrod Brown (1816-1892), Richard H. Brown (1817- ?), Humprey Brown (1818- ?) and Thompson M. Brown (1819-c1878).³⁴ Sally's parents were now growing old. Sometime before 1820 Robinson and Ann Carpenter Shackelford left Caswell County to live with one of their sons (probably John).³⁵ According to a Fauntleroy source they may have moved to Georgia.³⁶

In 1838 Nancy Bushrod Brown married William Johnson (1813-1896) a farmer in Caswell County. In 1848 Nancy's brother Thompson Brown married Artelia Douglas (1820-c1885) of Rockingham County.³⁸ In 1852 Thompson bought 100 acres on the Narrow Gauge Road in Rockingham County.³⁹ By 1859 William and Nancy Brown Johnson had sold their fifty acres in Caswell County⁴⁰ and along with Nancy's parents, James and Sally Brown, moved to Thompson M. Brown's farm on the Narrow Gauge Road.⁴¹ The whereabouts of Nancy's brother Richard H. Brown became unknown and her brother Humprey Brown died (probably in Rockingham County) without issue.⁴²

William Johnson worked as a laborer on the William Pinkney Watt Plantation near Lawsonville. In 1861 he accepted the job as overseer and he and Nancy left the Brown farm and moved up the road one mile to a house on the west end of the Watt plantation. In 1862, to be closer to the plantation house and nearer the center of the farm, they moved back down the Narrow Gauge Road to Watt's Mill on Lick Fork Creek.⁴³ William and Nancy Brown Johnson had two chil-

dren: Sarah Bell Johnson (1845-1939) and Andrew James Johnson (1849-1925).⁴⁴ In 1876 Watt sold Johnson the eighty-five acres of land which William had been renting since the end of the Civil War.⁴⁵

Sally Shackelford Brown died on her son Thompson M. Brown's farm during the Civil War c1864 about age 82. Sally's husband James lived to see the war's end, dying c1866 about age 86. They were buried in the Courts-Burton Cemetery at Stacey in Rockingham County. The Carpenter letters were then given to Sally's daughter, Nancy Brown Johnson.⁴⁶

Up the road one-half mile from William and Nancy Johnson lived Nancy's brother Thompson Brown with his wife Artelia and their three children: James R. Brown (1850-1882), Mary Bell Brown (1854-1931) and Sallie Ann Brown (1864-1935).⁴⁷ Thompson was a well-to-do blacksmith and farmer. In 1875 he built a large square frame house with a tin roof, painted yellow with brown shutters. Thompson M. Brown died at his new home c1878. Three years later the house burned to the ground and his family moved back into their old log dwelling.⁴⁸ At Thompson's death his sister Nancy Bushrod Brown Johnson became the only known closest living relative to the four Carpenter brothers. She was their niece.

In 1879 Nancy read an advertisement in the *Raleigh Observer* newspaper in which the descendants of Bushrod Carpenter were asked to come forward. There was nine hundred thousand dollars in England awaiting Bushrod's next of kin.⁴⁹ Nancy dug out her old letters and lawyers A.J. Boyd and J.W. Reid at Wentworth and attorney, J.H. Fleming of Raleigh, North Carolina staked her claim to Bushrod's estate through the firm of Elborough & Dean of London, England.⁵⁰

What Nancy didn't know was when her name went in the pot, the kettle had been boiling over with claims from far back as the 1790's.⁵¹ In 1797 Charles Carpenter a creditor in England was granted limited administration on the estate of William Fauntleroy Carpenter. Charles (distant kin to the brothers and a very wealthy man) had footed the bill for William while he was in England awaiting his inheritance. What was left after Charles repaid himself from William's estate went back to the four brothers. Since they were all reported deceased by 1798, everything belonged to anybody who could prove next of kin.⁵²

In 1840 advertisements in newspapers in England and America asked that relatives of Dr. Nathaniel Carpenter come forward,⁵³ and come forth they did. The interest on monies in the estates had grown enormously and was supposed to “keep on accumulating forever.”⁵⁴ One affidavit not dated (but about 1866) came with unusual but seemingly proof of connection to Bushrod Carpenter. It was a copy of *The Laws of the Colony of Virginia* a book at least 150 years old and was said to have passed down through the family of Bushrod’s uncle John Carpenter. On page 107 was an entry made by Bushrod which read:

Bushrod Carpenter,
His hand and pen.
He will write better
But God knows when.

The name Nathaniel appeared at least twice in the book which was supposed to have been given to Uncle John by Bushrod in 1799. But this particular “Uncle John” had no connections with Bushrod and his book without doubt was a complete forgery.⁵⁵

On December 5, 1877 a grant of administration was given on the estate of Lucy M. Clayton (widow of Coryndon Carpenter) who was entitled to a half share of Coryndon’s personal estate. This money went to distant relatives of long dead Lucy Carpenter, wife of Coryndon Carpenter.⁵⁶

In 1879 another affidavit stated: “Ann Bushrod Carpenter, widow of Dr. Nathaniel Carpenter married Robinson Shackelford by whom she had an only child Sally Shackelford. Sally married Benjamin Carpenter and they had two children, Polly and William. Sally Shackelford died in 1797.”⁵⁷ This Sally Shackelford did not compute and the claim was thrown out.

The only American claim to be paid at this time was that on the estate of Lucy M. Clayton, widow of Coryndon Carpenter. Other American claims failed because of the impossibility of substantiating them from official records.⁵⁸ Pages which had been torn from old parish records in England, the War of 1812 in America (which destroyed courthouse records) and the loss of old tombstones in cemeteries, reduced the chances of establishing proof of relationships.⁵⁹

In 1880 Edmond Dean solicitor and a member of the firm Elborough & Dean of London, England which helped the chief clerk in the

matter on behalf of claimants wrote Nancy Johnson's lawyers in Raleigh and Wentworth "We think there would be great difficulty in sustaining any claim by the parties you represent as the evidence we have is wholly at variance with the statements of your clients."⁶⁰ Thus, Nancy Brown Johnson's claim was tossed out. Why did Elborough & Dean not give Nancy's attorneys time to substantiate her claim? Because, as their letter said, "The evidence we have is wholly at variance with the statements of your clients." In other words, while dishing out money down through the years, it had been accepted as fact that Dr. Nathaniel Carpenter's first wife Nancy Fauntleroy died and then the doctor married an Ann Bushrod who also died.⁶¹ This left no wife to take on the administration of Dr. Nathaniel's estate. Besides this Elborough & Dean had just kicked out one Sally Shackelford and they didn't want to be confronted with another. The Brown - Johnson tradition still holds that Nancy Fauntleroy was the mother of the four boys. She was the mother of Sally Shackelford. She lived well into the 1800s and she and Ann Bushrod were the same person.⁶² It might interest the reader to know that Sally Shackelford lived with her granddaughter Sarah Johnson when Sarah was fifteen years old. Sarah Johnson lived with the author (Sally's great-great grandson) when he was fifteen years old.⁶³ That's just a hop-skip-and a jump back to Sally. And Sally surely knew who her mother was. Yet Nancy Brown Johnson might have been better off proving ancestry to Ann Bushrod Carpenter the second wife of Dr. Nathaniel - even though the doctor never had a second wife and the name "Ann Bushrod" was an alias.

As late as 1885 the courts were still handing out grants of administration on the Carpenter brothers' estates. On May 31, 1881 administration on the estate of Coryndon Carpenter was granted to George B. Harrison of Richmond, Virginia. On July 2, 1885 administration on the estate of Bushrod Carpenter was also granted to George B. Harrison. And on July 31, 1885 administration on the estate of Nathaniel Carpenter, Jr. was granted to John Spettigue of Devon, England.⁶⁴

It seems therefore that the brothers' estates went to distant kin-folks and cousins while their sister Sally, who died on the Narrow Gauge Road, existed only as a myth. But today's researchers are turning back to the Brown-Johnson tradition and wondering just how the Carpenter letters came to be handed down through the

Brown-Johnson families. Other than Bushrod's entry in Uncle John's book, which proved to be a forgery, these letters are the only known documents written in long hand by the Carpenter brothers. Maybe in time modern day researchers can prove that Nancy Brown Johnson's ancestors are really who she claimed them to be and then this writer along with several other great-great grandchildren of Sally Shackelford⁶⁵ can step forward and (if there's any money left in the till) claim his share.

AUTHOR'S DESCENT FROM THE FAUNTLEROYS

- 7 - *BUSHROD FAUNTLEROY* married Elizabeth Foushee
c1720 - after 1772 c1722 - ?
baptized 1723
- Father of:
- 6 - *ANN/NANCY FAUNTLEROY* married Dr. Nathaniel Carpenter
c1749 - after 1817 (1) 1768 c1732 - 1778
(2) 1781 Robinson Shackelford
? - after 1817

Mother of:

Coryndon Carpenter c1771 - 1797
Nathaniel Carpenter Jr. c1774 - 1797
William Fauntleroy Carpenter c1775 - 1796
Bushrod Carpenter c1776 - 1797
John Shackelford before 1797 - after 1817
Richard Shackelford c1798 - ?

- 5 - *SALLY SHACKELFORD* married 1815 James Brown
1780 - c 1866
buried in Courts-Burton Cemetery
at Stacey in Rockingham County, N.C. buried same

Mother of:

- 4 - *NANCY BUSHROD BROWN* married 1838 William Johnson
1816 - 1892 1813 - 1896
buried in Courts-Burton Cemetery
at Stacey in Rockingham County, N.C. buried same

Mother of:

- 3 - *ANDREW JAMES JOHNSON* married 1877 Rachel Ellen Stewart
1849 - 1925 1857 - 1911

buried in Wolf Island Cemetery,
Rockingham County, N.C.

buried same

Father of:

2 - HUGH W. JOHNSON

married 1922 Bessie Virginia Rice
1887 - 1977

1882 - 1956

buried in Greenview Cemetery at
Reidsville, N.C., Rockingham County.

buried same

Father of:

1 - HUGH JACK JOHNSON

married 1977 Hazel Bethea Satterfield
1902 - 1990

1924 -

buried in Greenview Cemetery,
Reidsville, N.C., Rockingham
County

NOTES

¹Papers pertaining to Nancy Brown Johnson's claim in 1880 were microfilmed in 1942 in the Southern Historical Collection at the University of North Carolina in Chapel Hill by J.G. de Roulhac Hamilton under the heading *Carpenter Papers*. These papers consist of personal letters written by Coryndon and Bushrod Carpenter in 1795 and 1797, letters written in 1880 by attorneys A.J. Boyd & J.W. Reid of Wentworth, attorney J.H. Fleming of Raleigh, North Carolina and the firm of Elborough & Dean in London, England. Original papers are now in possession of Colt Johnson, Reidsville, North Carolina.

²Letter from Elborough & Dean, London, dated Nov. 11, 1880 to attorney J.H. Fleming, Raleigh, North Carolina.

³Correspondence with the author from researchers Jeff Deitch in Tokyo, Japan and Donna Jo Wright of Columbus, Georgia, 1988 - 1989 -1990.

⁴*Virginia Gazette* 1768.

⁵*Some Emigrants to Virginia* 2nd Edition, p. 20.

⁶*Carpenter Papers*. Brown-Johnson tradition. *Carpenter and Related Family Historical Journal* Vol. 2, No. 1, 1983.

⁷Brown-Johnson tradition, Dr. Nathaniel Carpenter was baptized at Launceston Parrish Jan. 9, 1734. Tradition from Sally Shackelford says Dr. Nathaniel was afraid his family would be burned out at night during the Revolution so he moved away from there. *Botetourt County Virginia Wills & Inventories, 1778*.

⁸*Marriages, Virginia Residents -1607/1800*.

⁹Probable conclusion reached by the author and researcher Jeff Deitch.

¹⁰Brown-Johnson tradition. *Carpenter Papers*. *Raleigh Observer*, 1879. See Part One "The Story of a Lost Fortune" in the June, 1987 issue of *The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy*.

¹¹Rockingham Deed Book; C, p. 121.

¹²*Ibid.*

¹³Caswell County North Carolina Tax Book (microfilm) 1793.

¹⁴Robinson Shackelford's land and mill in Rockingham County were sold Jan. 31, 1793 by Humprey Garrett to Edward Thompson (Rockingham County Deed Book E, p. 22.) Nancy Brown Johnson told attorneys Boyd & Reid at Wentworth that "Bushrod Carpenter returned to Virginia after reaching his majority." Brown tradition says, "The Shackelfords were mighty poor."

¹⁵Carpenter Letters. *Carpenter and Related Family Historical Journal* Vol. 2, No. 1, 1983. Will of Sibella Carpenter proved at London Nov. 3, 1792. Coryndon Carpenter Esq. died in 1776 when the brothers were in their infancy. His will was proved at London July 16, 1776 (Donna Jo Wright Collection).

¹⁶Letter from Coryndon Carpenter dated July 5, 1795 to his mother Ann Shackelford in Caswell County, North Carolina.

¹⁷Affidavit sworn to at Gloucester County, Virginia, Court House by James Belsches March 14, 1817.

¹⁸Letter from Coryndon Carpenter dated July 3, 1797 to his mother Ann Shackelford in Caswell County, North Carolina.

¹⁹Carpenter Letters. Donna Jo Wright Collection. *Carpenter and Related Family Historical Journal*, 1st Quarter 1983, Vol. 2, No. 1.

²⁰*The London Times*, Wed. Aug. 24, 1796 reports the seconds as being Col. A. Thomas and Mr. Gardner both of Philadelphia. *The London Chronicle* Aug. 23/25 gives a full report of the duel including the coroner's inquest upon William Fauntleroy Carpenter. The jury returned a verdict of willful murder against a person on persons unknown. Michael Ryan was a principal witness in the case. Ryan was the servant of a physical herb seller in London. *The London Times*, Saturday Aug. 27, 1796 gives the disposition of William's body and stated that William was survived by his mother and three brother in Virginia. *The Gentleman's Magazine* for August, 1796 also gave an account of the duel saying "William was an uncommonly fine young man who had come to England for his inheritance."

²¹Letter from Coryndon Carpenter, Mathews County, Virginia, dated July 3, 1797 to his mother Ann Shackelford in Caswell County, in which he writes "You say you heard Wm. was returning home."

²²Caswell County, Tax Book, 1796 (on microfilm).

²³*Carpenter Papers* and tradition from Sally Shackelford Brown. Brown tradition says John Shackelford married a Humpreys but John Shackelford married Nancy Keen (Caswell Marriage bond Dec. 8, 1815). John Hulmpreys was his bondsman and John Humpreys married Susanna Keen (Caswell marriage bond Jan. 17, 1817). The Keen girls were possibly sisters.

²⁴*National Genealogical Society Quarterly*, June, 1982 and Donna Jo Wright Collection says Nathaniel Jr. was lost at sea. A fragment of letter included with the *Carpenter Papers* referred to one of the boy's death as "his accident at sea." Since Nathaniel, Jr. was a mariner it is likely that he died in a mishap and was not "lost at sea."

²⁵*Carpenter Papers*. Letter from Coryndon Carpenter to his mother Ann Shackelford in Caswell County dated July 5, 1795.

²⁶Letter from Bushrod Carpenter to his mother Ann Shackelford in Caswell County

dated July 6, 1797.

²⁷Tradition from Sally Shackelford Brown to her granddaughter Sarah Bell Johnson. *Carpenter letters*.

²⁸Donna Jo Wright Collection. *Carpenter Papers*. Brown-Johnson tradition.

²⁹*Genealogical Society Quarterly*, June, 1982, Vol. 70, No. 2.

³⁰Limited administration on the estate of Bushrod Carpenter of Virginia was granted in Nov. 1840 (PRO:PROB7/50) to Samuel Steward on behalf of Jane Rowe in which they claimed Bushrod died in 1794. Yet a letter written by Bushrod in 1797 proves he was alive at that time. ("Genealogical Gleanings in England" by Peter W. Coldham in *National Genealogical Society Quarterly* June, 1982, Vol. 70 No. 2). A letter from Bushrod Carpenter to his mother Ann Shackelford in Caswell County, North Carolina dated July 6, 1797 (*Carpenter Papers*).

³¹Researcher Jeff Deitch in Tokyo, Japan. Mr. Deitch teaches English to the Japanese.

³²Personal knowledge of Sarah Bell Johnson (Sally Shackelford's granddaughter) to the author about 1938.

³³Caswell County marriage bond of James Brown and Sally Shackelford dated Jan. 13, 1815.

³⁴Caswell County 1820 census. Attorneys Boyd & Reid worksheet 1880. Entry in Thompson M. Brown's Bible copyright 1845 (in possession of author) says he was born November 6th, 1819.

³⁵Brown-Johnson tradition.

³⁶Genealogical chart of the Fauntleroy Family at the Virginia Historical Library in Richmond, Virginia, (cited by Jeff Deitch) says "Ann Fauntleroy married Dr. Nathaniel Carpenter and had three sons and later married a Shackelford and moved to Georgia." In 1820 a John and Richard Shackelford lived in Ga.

³⁷Caswell County, Marriage Bond of William and Nancy Brown Johnson dated December 18, 1838.

³⁸Rockingham County, Marriage Bond of Thompson and Artelia Douglas Brown dated December 10, 1848.

³⁹In 1852 Thompson Brown bought 100 acres on the Narrow Gauge Road from Robert H. Courts (Rockingham Deed Book 4dA, p. 486).

⁴⁰Caswell County, Tax Book 1839 (on Microfilm).

⁴¹Rockingham County 1860 census (on microfilm) shows James Brown born in North Carolina and Sarah (Sally) Brown born in Virginia, living with William and Nancy Brown Johnson and children Sarah and Andrew. The Narrow Gauge Road was named about 1900 by Hugh W. Johnson.

⁴²*Carpenter Papers*. 1879 *Raleigh Observer Newspaper* and Brown-Johnson tradition.

⁴³See *The Story of Edgewood Farm* by Robert W. Carter, Jr. in the June, 1985 issue of *The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy*. Personal knowledge from William Johnson to his grandson Hugh W. Johnson father of author. Hugh W. Johnson lived with his grandparents William and Nancy Brown Johnson and their daughter Sarah Bell Johnson until William's death in 1896.

⁴⁴Rockingham County, death certificates of Sarah Bell Johnson and her brother Andrew James Johnson. Both are buried at Wolf Island Church cemetery. Sarah

Bell Johnson never married.

⁴⁵Rockingham County Deed Book; 3dG, p. 50.

⁴⁶Personal knowledge of Sarah Bell Johnson granddaughter of Sally Shakelford Brown to the author about 1938.

⁴⁷Rockingham County, 1870 Census. Rockingham County death certificates of Mary Bell Brown and Sallie Ann Brown.

⁴⁸Personal knowledge of Sarah Bell Johnson to the author about 1938. See Part One, *The Story of A Lost Fortune* in the June, 1987 issue of *The Journal of Rockingham County History and Genealogy*.

⁴⁹Advertisement in the *Raleigh Observer* newspaper, 1879 in which the widow of Dr. Nathaniel Carpenter came to North Carolina bringing with her the youngest son Bushrod Carpenter.

⁵⁰*Carpenter Papers* 1880. Personal knowledge of Sarah Bell Johnson.

⁵¹The Johnson Family never knew that other American claims were filed against the Carpenter estates until 1988 when researchers, Jeff Deitch and Donna Jo Wright, contacted the author.

⁵²Article by P.W. Coldham in the *National Genealogical Society quarterly*. 1982, Vol. 70, p 115. Donna Joe Wright's collection shows Charles Carpenter was also a creditor of Coryndon and Nathaniel, Jr. It appears that all three boys borrowed money from Charles while they were in England.

⁵³Advertisements in newspapers: *The London Times* Feb. 8, 1850, *The Courier*, Feb. 17, 1840 in England, and in Virginia *The Norfolk and Portsmouth Herald* Feb. 12, 1840 and the *Richmond Enquirer* in 1840. All invited heirs of Dr. Nathaniel to come forward.

⁵⁴Letter from Herbett A. Claiborne of Richmond, Virginia to his "Dear Friend" (another solicitor) in London, dated April 19, 1867 in which a handsome sum is offered to certain persons furnishing proof of relationship to the widow of Coryndon Carpenter (*National Genealogical Society Quarterly*. 1982, Vol. 70, p. 117).

⁵⁵*Ibid*, p. 118/119.

⁵⁶Donna Jo Wright Collection.

⁵⁷Affidavit of Joseph Blake of Wake County, North Carolina dated June 7, 1879 (Donna Jo Wright Collection).

⁵⁸P.W. Coldham's "Genealogical Gleanings in England" in the *National Genealogical Society Quarterly* 1982, Vol. 70, p 115/120.

⁵⁹*Ibid*, 119-120.

⁶⁰Letter dated Nov. 11, 1880 from Elborough & Dean in London to attorneys J.H. Fleming of Raleigh and Boyd & Reid at Wentworth in which Elborough & Dean also say, "And with the best of proof it might be useless on account of coming so late."

⁶¹In 1840 Jane Rowe (Bushrod's cousin) also claimed that the widow Ann Bushrod Carpenter, wife of Dr. Nathaniel, was dead by 1796 (Donna Jo Wright Collection).

⁶²Sarah Bell Johnson, granddaughter of Sally Shackelford Brown, lived with or close by Sally from the time Sarah was born until her grandmother died in 1864 when Sarah was nineteen years old. Sarah lived with the author from 1928 until her death in 1939 at age 93. Sarah always referred to Sally's mother as "Nancy Faunteroy". See story 569 in *The Heritage of Rockingham County, North Carolina*,

1983.

⁶³Personal knowledge of Sarah Bell Johnson and the author.

⁶⁴*National Genealogical Society Quarterly*, Vol. 70, p. 116, 1982.

⁶⁵There are eight known living great-great grandchildren of Sally Shackelford: Hugh Jack Johnson, James Marvin Johnson, and Wilbur Nathaniel Johnson, all of Reidsville, North Carolina; William Hiram Johnson, Danville, Virginia; Robert Benjamin Courts Jr., High Point, North Carolina; Dr. Andrew Johnson Courts, Greensboro, North Carolina; Dr. Sara Courts McClure, Reidsville, North Carolina; and Benjamin Carter Courts, Chapel Hill, North Carolina. The before named are the grandchildren of Andrew James Johnson 1849-1925, grandson of Sally Shackelford Brown.

INDEX FOR 1990 June and December Issues by Don Hoover

—A—

Apple, Mary	53, 57
Arthur	54

—B—

Bacon	24
Balsley, Jacob	52, 56
Balsley, Mary	53
Barrack, Elizabeth	52
Batts	24
Belsches, James	90
Bevel, R. C.	63, 67, 70, 73
Bevil, M. J.	73
Bevil, Madison	63, 67, 70
Bevil, Sarah J.	68, 71
Bevill, Emily	66
Bevill, J. A.	67, 70, 74
Bevill, Jane	52, 56-59, 61, 64, 68, 71, 75, 77
Bevill, Jane Davis	54
Bevill, Madison G.	48
Bevill, Nancy C.	77
Bevill, Sarah J.	77
Bevill, Spencer B.	73
Bevill, Spencer G.	52, 55, 58, 60, 63, 67, 69
Beville, Jane	74, 77
Beville, Louisa F.	72
Beville, M. J.	69, 72, 75, 78
Beville, Nancy C.	69, 72, 75
Beville, Nancy E.	78
Beville, Nannie E.	69, 72, 75
Beville, Sarah J.	75
Blake, Joseph	92
Boyd, A. J.	85, 89
Brown, Artelia Douglas	91
Brown, Barnet M.	52, 55
Brown, Bettie	73
Brown, Edmond	66
Brown, Eliza A.	54, 57, 59, 61
Brown, Humphrey	84
Brown, J. T.	63

Brown, James	84, 85, 88, 91
Brown, James R.	85
Brown, Jesse	51, 55, 58, 59
Brown, John	51
Brown, Mary	53
Brown, Mary Bell	85, 92
Brown, Nancy Bushrod	84, 88
Brown, Polly	53, 56, 58, 61, 64
Brown, Richard H.	84
Brown, Sallie Ann	85, 92
Brown, Sally	84
Brown, Sally Shackelford	85, 90-93
Brown, Sarah	91
Brown, Thompson M.	85, 85, 91
Browning, Lyle E.	42
Bushrod, Ann	83, 84, 87
Byrd, William	42
Byrd, William, II	5, 23, 14

—C—

Caffee, Mary E.	52
Caffee, Michael	52
Caffee, Robert	54
Caffey, Jane	53
Caffey, Mary E.	57, 59
Carpenter, Ann Bushrod	80, 83, 86, 87, 92
Carpenter, Benjamin	86
Carpenter, Bushrod ...	80, 82, 83, 86-92
Carpenter, Caryndon	86
Carpenter, Charles	85, 92
Carpenter, Coryndon ...	80-83, 87-90, 92
Carpenter, Coryndon, Esq.	80, 90
Carpenter, Dr. Nathaniel	80, 83, 84, 86-89, 91, 92
Carpenter, John	86
Carpenter, Lucy	81, 83
Carpenter, Nancy Fauntleroy	80, 83
Carpenter, Nathaniel, Jr.	80-83, 87, 88, 90, 92
Carpenter, Polly	86
Carpenter, Sibella	81
Carpenter, William	86

Carpenter, William Fauntleroy	80-82, 85, 88, 90
Carroll, Dr. J. Elwood	49
Carroll, James Elwood	49
Carter, Robert W., Jr.	50, 91
Catawba	3, 9, 16, 24, 37
Chamberlin, Jno.	63
Chamberlin, Logan	52, 56
Chamberlin, Malinda	62, 64
Chamberlin, Mary A.	52, 57, 62
Cherokee	2, 8
Chilcutt, Elizah	47, 51, 55, 57, 59, 62, 67
Chilcutt, F. D.	67
Chilcutt, Francis D.	52, 56, 58, 60, 63
Chilcutt, John F.	68
Chilcutt, Mary	53
Chilcutt, Rhoda	53
Christman, Nannie L. Isly	78
Christopher, Geo. W.	70, 74
Christopher, John	71, 74
Christopher, Rhoda C.	72, 76, 78
Claiborne, Herbett A.	92
Clayton, Jasper	81
Clayton, Lucy M.	86
Climer, Sina	66
Climers, Sina	76
Coe, Jane M.	59, 62
Coe, Jane W.	64
Coe, Joffre L.	1, 13, 40, 41
Coe, Joseph P.	60
Coe, Nancy F.	62, 64
Coe, Rachel	66
Coe, Robert G.	58, 60, 63
Coe, Susan Caroline	76
Coldham, P. W.	92
Congaree	9
Courts, Benjamin Carter	93
Courts, Dr. Andrew Johnson	93
Courts, Robert Benjamin, Jr.	93
Courts, Robert H.	91
Crouse, Thomas V.	48
Crow, Jeffrey J.	42, 43
Cumming, William P.	42

—D—

Dabbs, Elizabeth J.	59, 62, 64
Dakota	3

Davis, R. P. Stephen, Jr.	43
Davis, Sophia	53
Davis, Stephen, Jr.	41
De Soto	19
Dean, Edmond	86
Deitch, Jeff	79, 91, 92
Denny, Amanda	52, 57, 59, 61
Denny, Eliza A.	52, 57, 61
Denny, Louisa	53
Denny, Nancy E.	72, 75, 77
Denny, Rufus K., Dr.	52, 56, 58, 60, 63
Depratter, Chester	42
Dickens, Roy S., Jr.	42
Dillworth, Louisa A.	72
Dilworth, Jubiler	66, 76
Dilworth, Julia A.	62, 64, 68, 71, 75, 77
Dilworth, Mary	69
Dilworth, Mary C.	53, 57
Dilworth, Mary J.	65
Dilworth, Nancy	55
Dilworth, Nancy J.	65
Dilworth, William M.	52, 55, 58, 60
Dilworth, Wm. M.	63
Dobyns, Henry F.	41
Donnell, Henry	66
Donell, James	47
Douglas, Artelia	84

—E—

Eno	9
-----	---

—F—

Fallam	24
Fancett, Cornelia	73
Fauntleroy, Ann	84, 88, 91
Fauntleroy, Bushrod	88
Fauntleroy, Nancy	80, 83, 84, 87, 88, 92
Fauntleroy, William	83
Flack, Susan	52
Fleming, J. H.	85, 89, 92
Fogleman, Martha A.	71, 75, 77
Fogleman, Martha A. Gant	68
Fogulman, Joel	67
Foulkes, Fountain	52, 56, 58, 60, 63
Foushee, Elizabeth	88
Franklin, Julina	53, 57
Freeman, James Kelly	66

—G—

Gamble, Amanda	64	Hopkins, John T.	71, 74
Gant, Emily J.	53, 57, 59, 61	Hopkins, Margaret	53, 57
Gant, James	51, 55, 58, 60, 62, 67, 69, 73	Hopkins, Martin	71, 74
Gant, Jas. H.	52, 58, 60	Hopkins, Mary	65, 76
Gant, Jas. W.	56	Hopkins, Mrs.	54, 76
Gant, Martha A.	62, 64	Hopkins, Nannie L.	72
Gant, Mary	62, 64	Hopkins, Pleasant	56, 58, 60, 63, 67, 69, 73
Gant, S. S.	67, 69, 73	Hopkins, Rhoda A.	72, 76, 78
Gant, Samuel S.	56, 58, 60, 63	Hopkins, Rhoda L.	68
Gant, William	52, 56, 58, 60, 63	Hopkins, Rhoda S.	65, 71, 75, 77
Gardner, Mr.	90	Hopkins, Thomas	47
Gardner, Paul S.	31, 42	Hopkins, Virginia E.	72, 76, 78
Garrett, Humprey	80	Hopkins, William	66
Gordon, B.	54	Huffines, James D.	70, 74
Gordon, Martha	54	Huffines, Jeff D.	70, 73
Grant, Mr.	83	Huffines, Lewis C.	70, 74
Gravelly, Richard P., Jr.	41, 42	Huffines, Mary C.	72, 75
Gray, Rev. Alson	47, 48, 65	Huffines, Mary L.	69
Griffin, James B.	41	Huffines, Mary S.	77
Griffin, M. J.	69, 72	Huffines, N. Bell	72
Griffin, Mary J.	75, 77	Huffines, Sarah A. S.	72
Griffith, Eunice	65	Huffines, Thomas R.	68, 70, 74
Griffith, Emily	64	Huffines, John D.	68, 70, 74
Griffith, Emily Walker	61	Hutcherson, John W.	63, 67, 70, 73
Griffith, Wodson D.	60	Hutcherson, Sarah J.	65

—I—

Isely, Laben	52, 56, 58, 60
Isely, Margaret	53, 57, 59, 61, 64
Isly, Nannie L.	76

—H—

Harrel, Mrs.	76
Harrel, Pathey	76
Harrell, Mrs.	54
Harris, Abraham	51
Harris, Priscilla	54
Harris, Sarah	54
Harris, Swann	72, 78
Harris, Swannanoa	75
Harrison, George B.	87
Harrol, Patsy	65
Holt, Bertha	7
Hoover, Don	94
Hopkins, A. C.	67, 70, 74
Hopkins, D. L.	74
Hopkins, Frances J.	59, 62
Hopkins, Frances T.	57
Hopkins, Geo. P.	70, 73
Hopkins, Isabella	53
Hopkins, James	47
Hopkins, James W.	74

—J—

Johns, Joseph T.	52
Johns, Mary	52
Johnson, Andrew	91
Johnson, Andrew James	85, 88, 91, 93
Johnson, Artelia	85
Johnson, Colt	89
Johnson, Hugh Jack	79, 89, 93
Johnson, Hugh W.	89, 91
Johnson, Israel	51
Johnson, Nancy Brown	80, 84, 85, 87-91
Johnson, Nancy Bushrod Brown	79, 83, 85
Johnson, Sarah	87, 91
Johnson, Sarah Bell	85, 91-93
Johnson, Thompson	85

Johnson, James Marvin	93
Johnson, Wilbur Nathaniel	93
Johnson, William	84, 85, 88, 91
Johnson, William Hiram	93
Jones, Alex	70, 73
Jones, Alexander	56, 58, 60, 63, 67
Jones, Bobby	51
Jones, J. A.	69, 73
Jones, Sarah E.	69,, 72, 75-77

—K—

Keen, Nancy	90
Keen, Susanna	90
Kelly, James	76
Kernodle, Sarah	65
Keyauwee	9

—L—

Lambeth, Nancy	54
Lawson, John	1, 7, 9, 24, 27, 37
Lederer	24
Lee, Nancy Ann	62
Lemmonds, Rhoda	65
Lemons, Mary J.	64, 68, 71, 75
Levy, Janet E.	41
Lewis	13
Lewis, Elisa	62
Lewis, Eliza Ann	65
Lewis, Ernest H.	41
Lewis, Lavina W.	62, 64
Lewis, Levi	60, 63
Lewis, Louisa E.	68
Lewis, Louisa Elizabeth	65
Lewis, Mary E.	64, 68, 73
Lewis, Mary E. Caffey	61
Lewis, Mary J.	59, 62
Lewis, Mary W.	59
Lewis, Patrick H.	60
Linch, Rachel	62, 65
Lineberry, A. W.	48, 65
Lineberry, Julia F.	69, 72, 75, 77
Lineberry, S. L.	67, 70, 74
Logan, Chamberlin	60
Lucas, John A.	70, 74
Lucas, Mary	62, 64, 68, 72, 75, 77
Lucas, Mary Dilworth	71
Lucas, Robert W.	60, 63
Lucas, Jane	54

Lucus, Mary	53, 56, 59
Lucus, Mary F.	53, 57
Lucus, Robert W.	67, 69, 73
Lynch, Rachel	53, 57

—M—

Malcom, G. W.	67, 70, 73
Malcum, J. M.	74
Malcum, J. W.	67, 70
Mateer, Charles Wesley	78
Mateer, Pinckney	78
Mathis, Mark A.	42
Maynard, Charles	66
Maynard, Hannah	66
Maynard, Patsy	66
McBride, Franklin	52
McClure, Dr. Sara Courts	93
McGibbony, Caroline	66
McKinney, Isabelle	54
McNeely, Emily	68
Meadows, Elizabeth	54
Mebane, Fannie R.	78
Mebane, John A.	71, 74
Mebane, Rachel	73
Mebane, Rachel F. Walker	64
Medley, J. M.	71, 74
Melvin, Hardy	60, 63, 67, 69, 73
Milaway, George W.	52, 56, 58, 60, 63, 67, 69, 73
Milaway, Rhoda	56, 58, 61, 64, 68, 71, 74, 77
Millaway, Mary	72
Millaway, Mary C.	75, 78
Millaway, Nancy	72
Miller, H. V.	65
Milling, Chapman J.	41
Milloway, Mattie	72
Milloway, Mattie A.	78
Milloway, Nannie	76, 78
Mitchell, Marion	70, 74
Mooney, James	19, 42
Moor, Frances J.	77
Moore, A. L.	70, 74
Moore, Emily Rankin	54
Moore, Frances J.	68, 71, 75
Moore, Frances J. Hopkins	64
Moore, Hicks	51, 55, 58, 60
Moore, Hubbard P.	51, 55, 58, 60
Moore, J. D.	48, 70, 73

Moore, Margaret	59, 61, 64, 68
Moore, Margaret G.	71, 75
Moore, Margaret S.	77
Moore, Nancy	54
Moore, Sarah J.	62, 64
Moore, Sophia	54
Moore, William	61, 63, 67, 70, 73
Moore, Wilson	57, 59
Moore, Wilson Q.	60

—N—

Navey, Liane	41
Needham	24
Newel, John R.	63

—O—

Occaneechi	9, 18, 24
Ogburn, T. J.	48

—P—

Pardo	19
Parish, Nancy	68
Parker, Caswell	66
Parrish, Nancy	62, 65, 71, 75, 77
Patrick, James Madison	78
Patrick, Mary	78
Patrick, Sarah	78
Peedee	9
Perdue, Michael	47, 51
Perkinson, John H.	51
Phibbs, Margaret	53, 56, 58, 61
Piercé, Emily	65
Pitchford, Hannah ...	54, 64, 68, 71, 75, 77
Pitchford, Hannay	56, 59, 61
Powhatan	32
Prather, Re. R. R.	74
Pride, John	81, 82
Putnam, Roy C.	48

—R—

Ramsey, Jane	56, 59, 61, 64, 68, 71, 75, 77
Rankin	55
Rankin, A. M.	67, 70, 74
Rankin, Caroline	68

Rankin, Caroline W.	54, 56, 59, 61, 64, 71, 74, 77
Rankin, Cathatine	66
Rankin, Charles	76
Rankin, J. C.	74, 76
Rankin, John C.	51, 55, 57, 59, 62
Rankin, Julia	66
Rankin, Levin	65, 76
Rankin, Louisa ...	53, 57, 59, 61, 64, 68
Rankin, Louisa E.	71, 75, 77
Rankin, M. C. Wade	69
Rankin, Mariah L. Cryer	65
Rankin, Mary C.	72, 75, 77
Rankin, R. C.	54
Rankin, Robert C.	47, 51
Rankin, Sina	78
Rankin, Thomas F.	63, 67, 70, 73
Rankin, W.	76
Rankin, William W.	52, 55, 58, 60, 63, 67, 69, 73
Rankin, Wm. M.	74
Rankin, Wm. R.	68, 70
Raper, C. E. M.	48
Reed, Green W.	51
Reed, Mary E. T.	54
Reid, J. A. N.	70, 73
Reid, J. L. F.	70, 73
Reid, J. W.	85, 89
Reid, Julia A.	72
Reid, W. D.	48
Rice, Bessie Virginia	89
Richardson, Dorothy B.	49
Richardson, Dorothy Beville	51
Richardson, Emely J.	76
Richardson, Emily	77
Richardson, Emily Grant	64
Richardson, James	70, 74
Richardson, John A.	67, 70, 73
Richardson, J. T.	48
Richardson, Mrs. Lee	51
Richardson, Sallie	72
Rickets, Catharine	62, 64
Robertson, Barba Gray Troxler ...	49, 51
Robertson, R. Vance	51
Rothrock, Si	51
Rowe, Jane	83, 91, 92
Rush, Dr.	82
Russum, Margaret	54
Russum, Vincent	51
Ryan, Michael	82, 90

—S—

Santee	9
Saponi	9
Sara	05, 10, 16, 32, 34, 36, 37, 40
Satterfield, Hazel Bethea	89
Scott, Catharine	53
Scott, Martha	53
Seybert, Richard A.	5
Shackelford, Ann	82, 83, 90, 91
Shackelford, Ann Bushrod Carpenter	80, 84
Shackelford, John	82, 83, 88, 90, 91
Shackelford, Richard	82, 83, 88, 91
Shackelford, Sally	80, 83, 84, 86-89, 91, 93
Shackelford, Robinson	80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 86, 88, 90
Shakori	9
Simpson, Emily	53, 57
Simpson, Hannah	53, 56, 58, 61, 63
Simpson, Martha	53, 56
Simpson, Martha P.	57
Simpson, Peter	55
Simpson, Peter, Sen.	51
Simpson, Robert	47
Simpson, Sarah R.	57
Simpson, Sobriah	53, 57
Simpson, Talitha	53, 57
Simpson, William	47
Small, James D.	56, 58, 60, 63
Small, Rachel	53, 57, 59, 62, 64, 68, 71, 75, 77
Smith, Frances	62, 65
Smith, Samuel	67
Smith, Samuel B.	61, 63
Smith, Sarah	54
Spettigue, John	87
Steponatis, Vin	41
Steward, Samuel	91
Stewart, Rachel Ellen	88
Strador, Emily	54
Stukanox	9
Swanton, John	19, 42

—T—

Tate, Nancy	53
Thacker, Caroline	66

Thacker, Elizabeth	54
Thacker, Ellen	66
Thacker, Frances	66
Thacker, Hardy	66
Thacker, Henry	66
Thacker, Isaac	51, 55, 57, 59, 62, 66, 67, 69, 73
Thacker, Jacob	66
Thacker, Mariah	78
Thacker, Nathaniel	66
Thomas, Col. A.	90
Thomas, Martha M. E.	72, 76
Thomas, Mary J.	62
Tomker, Mr.	83
Totten, David L.	70, 74
Totten, S. M.	72
Totten, Sarah R.	75, 78
Trolinger, J. L.	48, 49
Troxler, A. R.	48, 67, 70, 73
Troxler, Albert W.	48
Troxler, Alex M.	71, 74
Troxler, Catherine	72, 75, 78
Troxler, Cornelia Ann	65, 69, 71, 75, 77
Troxler, Elizabeth J.	72, 76, 68
Troxler, G. R.	67, 70, 73
Troxler, I. R.	70, 74
Troxler, Isaac R.	48
Troxler, R. F.	48
Troxler, Sally E.	69, 71, 75, 77
Troxler, Sally Emily	65
Tuscarora	03, 08, 09
Tutelo	03, 09

—V—

Vanstory, Mary	71, 75, 77
Vanstory, Mary J.	68
Vaughn, Harriet	66
Vaughn, Martha	66
Vaughn, Tempy	66, 78

—W—

Waddleton, Cama	66
Wade, Fannie B.	72, 75, 78
Waggoner, Rebekah J.	62
Walker	55
Walker, Emily	54, 56, 59
Walker, Rachel	53, 57, 59, 61
Walker, William	52, 55

Ward, H. Trawick	41, 42	Whorton, William W.	52, 55, 58
Waselkov, Gregory A.	41	Willis, R. H.	48
Wateree	9	Wilson, H. H.	41, 42
Watlington, Cama	66	Wilson, Jack H., Jr.	31, 41, 42
Watson, Celestia V.	65, 71, 75, 77	Wittkofski, J. Mark	42
Watson, Celestia V. Rankin	62	Woollen, J. T.	70, 74
Watson, H. L. P.	67, 70, 74	Woollen, Nancy A.	71
Watson, Mary	78	Wollen, Nancy J.	75, 77
Watson, Rosetta	78	Woollen, Nancy J. Dilworth	68
Watt	85	Work, Alfred	60
Weatherby, Dorothy B.	54	Work, Caroline	53, 57, 59, 61, 64, 68, 72, 75, 78
Weatherby, Elizabeth	54, 56, 59, 61, 64, 68, 71, 75, 77	Work, E. J.	69
Weatherby, Emiline	66, 76	Work, Harriet	69
Weatherby, Emily	62, 64	Work, Jalian	53, 57, 59, 61
Weatherby, Martin B.	51, 55, 58, 60, 63, 67, 69, 73	Work, Mary	54, 56, 58, 61, 64
Weatherby, Sarah	66	Work, Mary F.	59, 61
Weatherby, Sary	76	Work, Nancy E.	69, 72, 75
Webb, Melissa	78	Work, Nancy J.	77
Wharton, Harriet	65	Work, William M. D.	52, 55, 58, 60
Wharton, J.	65	Work, Wm. M.	63
Wharton, Mary	78	Wright, Brazilla G.	51, 55, 58, 60, 62, 67, 69
Wharton, W. H. G.	70	Wright, Donna Jo	79, 89-92
Wharton, W. H. P.	74	Wright, Elizabeth	54, 56, 59, 61, 64, 68
Wharton, William W.	60	Wright, Elizabeth R.	71, 74, 77
Whitsett, Ada	66	Wright, Jane	53, 56, 58, 61, 64, 68, 71
Whitsett, Chesson	78	Wright, Josiah T.	51, 55, 58, 60
Whitsett, Dick	66	Wright, Milton	78
Whitsett, William	66	Wright, P. R.	52, 55, 58, 60
Whitter, Mary E.	71, 75, 77	Wright, William D.	60, 63
Whittington, Lowzetta	72	Wynick, Sarah	72
Whorton	55		
Whorton, Eunice	76		
Whorton, Harriet	76		
Whorton, J.	76		
Whorton, Jesse	51, 55, 58, 60, 62		

—Y—

Young, Elisabeth 78

The Rockingham County Historical Society, Inc.

Officers

President	Charles D. Rodenbough, Madison
Vice-President	George A. Atkins, Eden
Recording Secretary	Mrs. Jerri Griffin, Madison
Corresponding Secretary	Michael Perdue, Wentworth
Treasurer	Wayne Parleir, Eden

Directors

Lindley S. Butler	Wentworth
Bob W. Carter	Reidsville
Mrs. Charlotte Cate	Reidsville
Mrs. Lillian Coleman	Reidsville
Mrs. Robbin G. Dodson	Stoneville
Don W. Hoover	High Point
Mrs. Barbara Joyce	Madison
James R. Meador	Reidsville
Mrs. Lib Meador	Reidsville
Mrs. Peggy Osborne	Eden
Mrs. Bettie Pearson	Reidsville
Mrs. Lucy Rankin	Reidsville
V. Siler Rothrock	Reidsville
Mrs. Zelma Scott	Stoneville
Mrs. Sarah Setliff	Reidsville
Rich Seybert	Ruffin
Jamie C. Smith	Stoneville
Mrs. Donna Stowe	Mayodan

P. O. Box 84

Wentworth, North Carolina 27375

Forwarding and Return

Postage Guaranteed

ADDRESS CORRECTION REQUESTED

NC Collection, UNC Library
Wilson Library, C. B. 3930
Chapel Hill, NC 27599
1991 no

Non-Profit Organization
BULK RATE
U. S. POSTAGE
PAID
PERMIT NO. 2
WENTWORTH, N. C.

HECKMAN
BINDERY INC.



DEC 92



N. MANCHESTER,
INDIANA 46962

